

A TURKISH GRAMMAR.

E06879

PRINTED BY E. J. BRILL IN LEYDEN.

A TURKISH GRAMMAR

CONTAINING ALSO

DIALOGUES AND TERMS CONNECTED WITH THE ARMY, NAVY,
MILITARY DRILL, DIPLOMATIC AND SOCIAL LIFE.

BY THE

Rev. ANTON TIEN, Ph. D., M. R. A. S.

Formerly Oriental Secretary and Interpreter on Lord Raglan's Staff in the
Crimean Campaign: Reviser of the Arabic Prayer-book; Author of
"The Levant Interpreter", "Manual of Colloquial Arabic" etc.

LONDON
SAMPSON LOW, MARSTON & COMPANY
Limited

PUBLISHERS TO THE INDIA OFFICE.

St. Dunstan's House

FETTER LANE, FLEET STREET, E.C.
1896.

DEDICATED
TO THE OFFICERS OF
HER MAJESTY'S ARMY AND NAVY,
IN REMEMBRANCE OF
OLD CRIMEAN DAYS,
BY
THE AUTHOR.

AUTHOR'S NOTE.

The Author desires to express his warm appreciation of the kindness and ability of his friend Mr. E. J. W. GIBB, who has helped him to pass this work through the press.

CONTENTS.

	Page
CHAP. I. The Turkish alphabet	1
» II. The pronunciation of the Turkish Letters. . .	3
» III. The division of the Turkish Letters. . . .	15
The pronunciation of the Arabic article . .	16
The Turkish laws of euphony	17
» IV. The vowel points حركات <i>hareket</i> , lit. : move- ment, pl. حركات <i>harekyāt</i>	18
» V. The three Arabic vowels mentioned in the fourth chapter ,	20
» VI. Etymology	21
» VII. First declension.	23
Second declension.	27
» VIII. Adjective صفت <i>sifat</i> , plur. صفات <i>sifāt</i> . . .	32
» IX. The numerals, أسماء العدد <i>esmā-ul-aded</i> . .	33
Distributive numbers	36
» X. Formation of Turkish words.	43
» XI. The relative adjective, اسم منسوب <i>ism-i</i> <i>mensüb</i>	44
» XII. Degrees of comparison.	48
Persian degrees of comparison.	52
Turkish diminutive nouns	55
» XIII. Persian diminutives	57
» XIV. The pronoun, ضمير <i>zamīr</i>	57

	Page
The demonstrative pronouns	63
The relative pronominal suffix کی <i>ki</i> . .	75
The relative pronoun کی <i>ki</i>	76
Interrogative pronouns.	80
Indefinite pronouns	83
Arabic plurals.	84
The Persian plurals	87
CHAP. XV. The verb, فعل <i>fi'l</i>	89
The negative verb, فعل نفی <i>fil'i nefy</i> . .	92
The impotential verb, ممکنسر <i>mumkinsiz</i> . .	92
The verb of possibility or ability ممکن <i>mumkin</i>	93
» XVI. Formations, or derivations of the Turkish verb.	98
» XVII. The formation of the tenses.	103
» XVIII. The substantive verb «to be»	106
» XIX. The verb »to have».	110
» XX. The verb to «have» conjugated both affirmatively and negatively.	114
» XXI. The verb اولمق «to be».	118
» XXII. Conjugation of the auxiliary passive verb اولنمق «to be».	124
» XXIII. The interrogative verb فعل استفهام <i>fil'i istifhām</i>	129
» XXIV. The formation and conjugation of compound verbs	138
» XXV. The conjugation of a regular active verb ending in مك <i>mek</i> , which will serve as a model for all verbs with the same termination	141
» XXVI. The conjugation of a regular passive verb	

	Page
ending in مك <i>mek</i> , which will serve as a model for all passive verbs with the same termination	151
CHAP. XXVII. The negative verbs	159
» XXVIII. The conjugation, affirmative and negative, of a regular verb ending in مق <i>maq</i> , which will serve as a model for all verbs ending in مق <i>maq</i>	164
» XXIX. The interrogative verb, فعل استفهام <i>fi'li istifhām</i>	177
» XXX. The complex categories of Turkish verbs.	187
» XXXI. Conjugation of the two auxiliary verbs ايتمك <i>etmek</i> and ايلمك <i>eylemek</i> , «to do».	198
» XXXII. The true Turkish conjugation of a regular verb combined with the three complex categories	202
» XXXIII. Of adverbs ظروف <i>Zurūf</i>	208
Adverbs of quality or manner	211
Adverbs of quantity	212
Adverbs of place	212
Adverbs of time ظرف زمان <i>zarf-i zemān</i> .	215
Adverbs of affirmation	220
Adverbs of negation	220
Adverbs of demonstration	221
Adverbs of order	221
Adverbs of interrogation	221
Adverbs of warning	222
Adverbs of refusal, or denial	222
» XXXIV. Turkish expletives	223
» XXXV. Prepositions, postpositions and particles.	225
Arabic prepositions	226

	Page
Persian prepositions	229
The particle <i>د</i> <i>de, da</i>	231
The postposition <i>له</i> <i>le</i> , or <i>ایله</i> <i>ile, ila</i>	234
The postposition <i>بـرله</i> <i>birla</i> , with, in, by	235
CHAP. XXXVI. Conjunctions.	252
The disjunctive conjunctions	257
» XXXVII. Interjections	258
» XXXVIII. Syntax	260
» XXXIX. The verb	270
» XL. On questions	275
» XLI. Verbal nouns	278
» XLII. The gerunds.	280
» XLIII. The verb «to have» conjugated with nouns <i>اسم ایله مالک اولمق فعلنک تصریفی</i> <i>ism ile malik olmaq fi'linin tasrifı .</i>	284
» XLIV. The verb «to have» conjugated inter- rogatively, <i>مالک اولمق فعلنک استفهام</i> <i>mālik olmaq fi'linin</i> <i>istifhām uzere, uzre, vejhi tasrifı . .</i>	287
» XLV. The verb «to have» conjugated nega- tively	289
» XLVI. The verb «to have» conjugated both negatively and interrogatively . . .	292
» XLVII. The verb «to be» conjugated with adjectives	294
» XLVIII. The verb «to be» conjugated both negatively and interrogatively with adjectives	296
» XLIX. Elementary phrases and easy dialogues.	298
» L. Conversation.	356
Literature	357

	Page
CHAP. LI. Turkish proverbs <i>امثال ضروب durubi emsāl</i>	365
» LII. Naval and military terms	374
» Diplomatic terms	378
» LIII. On military drill	389
» LIV. On exercises	401

CHAPTER I.

THE TURKISH ALPHABET.

the letters	Name.	Final.	Medial	Initial.	Isolated	Power.	Numerical value	Origin.
ا	èlif	ا	ا	ا	ا	ā ē i u	1	Arab. Turk.Pers.
ب	bé	ب	ب	ب	ب	b	2	do
پ	pé	پ	پ	پ	پ	p	2	Pers. Turk.
ت	té	ت	ت	ت	ت	t	400	Arab. Turk Pers.
ث	sé	ث	ث	ث	ث	s	500	Arab.
ج	jim	ج	ج	ج	ج	j	3	Arab. Turk.Pers.
چ	chim	چ	چ	چ	چ	ch	3	Pers. Turk.
ح	ha	ح	ح	ح	ح	h	8	Arab.
خ	khi	خ	خ	خ	خ	kh	600	Arab. Pers.Turk.
د	dal	د	د	د	د	d	4	Arab. Turk.Pers.
ذ	zal, zel	ذ	ذ	ذ	ذ	z	700	Arab.
ر	ri	ر	ر	ر	ر	r	200	Arab. Turk.Pers.
ز	zé	ز	ز	ز	ز	z	7	do
ژ	zhé	ژ	ژ	ژ	ژ	zh	7	Pers.
س	sin	س	س	س	س	s	60	Arab. Turk.Pers.
ش	shin	ش	ش	ش	ش	sh	300	do

Order of the letters	Name.	Final.	Medial.	Initial.	Isolated.	Power.	Numerical value.	Origin
17	sad	ص	ط	س	ص	s	90	Arab. Turk. Pers.
18	dad	ض	ظ	د	ض	z	800	Arab.
19	ti, ta	ط	ط	ط	ط	t, d	9	Arab. Turk. Pers.
20	zi, za	ظ	ظ	ظ	ظ	z	900	Arab.
21	‘ayn	ع	ع	ع	ع		70	do
22	ghayn	غ	غ	غ	غ	gh	1000	Arab. Turk. Pers.
23	fú	ف	ف	ف	ف	f	80	do
24	qaf	ق	ق	ق	ق	q	100	do
25	kief, kef	ك	ك	ك	ك	k	20	do
26	lam	ل	ل	ل	ل	l	30	Arab. Turk. Pers.
27	mim	م	م	م	م	m	40	do
28	nun	ن	ن	ن	ن	n	50	do
29	vav	و	و	و	و	v, w	6	do
30	hó	ه	ه	ه	ه	h	5	do
31	yé	ي	ي	ي	ي	y	10	do
32	lam-elif	لا	لا	لا	لا	la		do

لا *lam-elif* is simply a combination of ل *lam* and ا *elif*, pronounced *lū*.

§ 1. The twenty nine letters of the Arabic Alphabet when used to express numerals, are arranged in a form called اَبْجَد *‘abjéd*. This *‘abjéd* is arranged in eight conventional and meaningless words, as follow. اَبْجَد *‘abjéd*, هَوَز *hevwaz*, حَطِي *hutti*, كَلَمَن *keleman*, سَعْفَس *safas*, قَرَشَات *qarashat*, تَخَذ *sakhaz*, ضَغَلَا *dazaghila*.

The first nine in order represent the nine units.

ط	ب	ا	ج	د	ه	و	ز	ح
9	8	7	6	5	4	3	2	1

§ 2. The second nine stand for the tens.

ی ک ل م ن س ع ف ص
90; 80, 70, 60, 50, 40, 30, 20, 10,

The third nine stand for the hundreds.

ق ر ش ت ث خ ذ ص ظ
900, 800, 700, 600, 500, 400, 300, 200, 100,

غ stands for 1000, and the last لا, though always enumerated, has no value of its own, but counts as 2 letters ل 30, and ا 1, i. e. 31.

All the letters of the Arabic Alphabet are included in the Turkish, but are pronounced in Turkish more softly and melodiously than in Arabic.

The English equivalents of the Turkish Alphabet are approximately as follows.

CHAPTER II.

THE PRONUNCIATION OF THE TURKISH LETTERS.

The ا has no sound of its own. In Arabic words, where it amounts to a consonant it is usually called *هَمْزَة* *hemze* and is variously pronounced *a*, *e*, *i*, *o*, *u*, as:

اِدم *adam*, man.

اِت *at*, horse. اِت *et* meat, اِدَب *edeb*, manners, gentlemanly behaviour — اِصْرِمَق *isirmaq*. to bite.

اِنْجِيَر *injir*, fig., اِيرَاق *iraq*, distant — اَوْق *oq*, arrow.

اَوْزَم *uzum*, grapes, اُمِيْد *umid*, hope.

In Turkish, Persian, or Foreign words, the ا *elif*, is always a vowel, when it is the initial letter of a Persian word, it may be either short or long; when ا is followed by و *waw* it takes the sound of *o* as in *so*; of *u* as in 'rule'; of *u* as in the French *tu*; or of *eu* as in French; thus:

اورمان *orman*, forest — اوزاق *uzaq*, far — اولمك *eulmek*, to die.

ب is pronounced as *b* in English — باقمق *baqmaq*, to see — بلبل *bulbul*, nightingale — بر *bir*, one — ثبوت *subūt*, steadfastness — حرب *harb*, war, battle — it is occasionally anomalously pronounced *p* — طوب *top*, cannon — ابتدا *ip-tidā*, commencement — اثبات *ispāt*, the action of confirming, proving — كلوب *gelip*, (gerund) coming — اولوب *olup*, (gerund), being.

پ *pé*, is a Persian letter and, wherever placed, is equivalent to the English *p*, پدر *peder*, Father — پاشا *pasha*, the highest title in the civil or military service of the Turks — ايپ *ip*, cord, string, rope — پرمق *parmaq*, finger — پياده *piyādé*, infantry — پنجره *penjéré*, window.

ت *te*, is always pronounced like the English *t*.
توفنك *tufenk tufek*, musket — سوت *sut*, milk — سرت *sert*, strong, pungent — تره *téré*, cress, fresh — تاج *tāj*, crown. — This letter is sometimes changed before a vowel into د *dal*, in declensions and conjugations, and before grammatical suffixes; as — درت *deurt*, four.

دردنجى *deurdunju, deurdunji*, fourth.

ث *sé*, is pronounced in Turkish and Persian, like our *s* sharp. — This letter occurs only in Arabic words. — In classical Arabic it is pronounced like *th* in this, ثلث *thulth*, a third, but in colloquial Arabic like *t*, as تلت *telt*, a third — اثر *eter*, a trace.

ج *jim*, is exactly equivalent to the English *j* — جان *jān*, the soul, the life.

جانم *jānim*, my soul, my life, my dear.

جنس *jins*, kind, sort.

جوز *jevz, jeviz*, walnut.

Sometimes چ takes the sharp sound of چ when preceded by a consonant.

چ *chim*, is pronounced as *ch* in church, thus:
ایلچی, ایلچی *elchi*, Ambassador.

چاق *qach*, how many, how much.

اچماق *achmaq*, to open.

چشمه *cheshme*, fountain.

چوربا *chorba*, soup.

ح *ha*, this is an Arabic letter. It has the sound of the English *h* in her, horse:

حمام *hammām*, bath.

احمق *ahmaq*, stupid.

حرم *harem*, harem.

حال *hāl*, state, condition.

حرارت *harāret*, heat.

خ *khi*. This is an Arabic letter with a strong guttural sound which has no equivalent in English. The nearest approach to it is that of *ch* in the Scotch word *loch*, or in the German *ich*, *hoch* etc.: it is generally transliterated by *kh*: in Turkish it is often pronounced like simple *h*.

خوش *khosh*, agreeable.

خیر *khayr*, good, no.

خفیف *khafīf*, light.

خانم *khanim*, Turkish lady.

خشنود *khoshnud*, content.

د *dal*, is pronounced like the English *d*:

دال *dal*, branch, twig.

دره *dere*, valley.

دشمن *dushman*, enemy.

دوه *dere*, camel.

د *dal*, at the beginning or end of syllables sometimes takes the sound of ت *t*:

کاغذ *kyaghat*, paper.

درلو *turlu*, sort, kind, manner.

دلکی *tilki*, Fox.

گتدی *gitti*, he went.

صاتدی *satti*, he sold.

ذ *zel, zal*, This is an arabic letter pronounced as *z* in Turkish.

ذوق *zevq*, pleasure, amusement, fun.

ذمت *zimmet*, duty, debt.

ذهن *zihn*, mind, memory, intellect.

اخذ *akhz*, a taking.

ر *ri, re*, is pronounced like the English *r*: but is always fully sounded wherever it occurs in a word.

گیرمک *girmek*, to enter.

رأفت *re'fet*, kindness, clemency.

ویرمک *vermek*, to give.

رحمت *rahmet*, mercy.

کور *gyeur*, see, look.

ز *zé*, this is an arabic letter, and has always the sound of *z*.

زمان *zemān, zamān*, time.

زمرد *zumurrud, zumrud*, emerald.

زنگین *zengin*, rich.

زیارت *ziyāret*, visit.

زیتون *zeytun, zeytin*, olive.

ز *zahmet*, trouble.

ژ *zhe*, this is a Persian letter found only in Persian and French words, it is pronounced like the French letter *j* in «jour». — It is of rare occurrence:

ژیوه *zhīve*, mercury, quicksilver.

اتاماجور *etamajhor* = ارکان حرب *erkyāni-harb*, staff, (for *état major*).

س *sin*, this is an Arabic letter and is pronounced like the English sharp *s*, and is followed in all words by a soft vowel. It must never be pronounced like *s* as in 'pleasure', or is 'these', but always sharply as in 'yes':

سومك *sevmek*, to love.

ساعت *sā'at*, hour, watch, time, piece.

سلامت *selūmet*, safety.

سوز *seuz*, word, saying.

سلطان *sultān*, -sultan.

ش *shin*, is always sounded like the English *sh*.

بخشش *bakhshīsh*, a present in money.

بش *besħ*, five.

ایشش *ish*, work, business, service, occupation.

شان *shān*, honour.

شهر *shehir*, city, town, lunar month.

شراب *sherāb*, *sharāb*, wine.

ص *sad*, this is an Arabic letter and is pronounced in Turkish as sharp *s*. It indicates a hard vowel:

صormaق *sormaq*, to ask.

صبر *sabr*, patience.

صباح *sabāh*, morning, tomorrow.

صادق *sādiq*, true, truthful, faithful.

صوصیق *susmaq*, to be silent, to hold one's tongue.

صص *sus*, hold your tongue!

ض *dad*, this is a peculiarly hard Arabic letter, and is only used in Arabic words. In Turkish it is generally pronounced as *z*:

ضيافت *ziyāfet*, banquet, feast.

ضرر *zarar*, harm, damage, injury.

ضابط *zābit*, officer, magistrate.

راضی *rāzī*, content, satisfied, well pleased.

Sometimes it has the sound of *d*:

قاضی *qādi*, a judge.

ضال *dāl*, one who is in error.

ضجرت *dajret*, sorrow, chagrin.

ط *ti*, This is an arabic letter and is pronounced in Turkish as a hard *t* or *d*, as:

طاش *tash*, stone.

طوب, طوپ *top*, gun, cannon, ball, lump.

خط *khatt*, writing, handwriting, line, an autograph command of the sultan خط همايون *khatti-humāyūn* the Imperial autograph command.

طوتماق *tutmaq*, to hold, catch, lay hold of.

طورانماق, طاورانماق *davranmaq*, to start into a posture of defence or vigilance.

طاغ *dagh*, mountain.

طار *dar*, narrow.

طورماق *durmaq*, to stop, halt, stay, remain.

طوغری *doghru*, straight, upright, true, correct.

ظ *zi*, this letter is used in arabic words only, and is pronounced as *z*.

ظاهر *zāhir*, visible, apparent.

ظلم *zulm*, *zulum*, injustice, tyranny, oppression.

ظفر *zafer*, victory, success.

ظریف *zarīf*, elegant, witty.

حظ *hazz*, pleasure, enjoyment.

ع *‘ayn*, This letter, which is used in Arabic words only, has no equivalent in any of the European languages. Its Arabic pronunciation is extremely difficult. The Arabs give to it a very strong guttural sound, but the Turks soften

it to a hiatus. Its correct pronounciation can only be learnt from a native. In the Roman character its place is indicated by an apostrophe; thus:

- علم *ilm*, *ilim*, knowledge, science.
 علت *illet*, cause, malady, illness.
 عمومی *umūmī*, universal, general.
 عزیز *azīz*, dear, beloved.
 عزیمت *azīmet*, departure.
 اعتبار *itibār*, esteem.
 عافیت *āfiyyet*, health.

غ *ghayn*, This is an Arabic letter and is pronounced in three ways. The Arabs give it the sound of a hard nasalized guttural *g*. It is generally represented by *gh*, thus:

- اغلامق *aghlamaq*, to cry.
 اغاج *aghaj*, tree.
 مغازه *maghaza*, shop, magazine.

In Turkish, when initial it is pronounced, as a hard *g*, thus:

- غفلت *gaflet*, negligence, carelessness.
 مغفور *magfūr*, whose sins are pardoned.

When medial or final, it is pronounced very softly and sounds much like the letter *w*, thus:

- صوغوق *soghug*, sowug, cold.
 صوغان *soghan* sowan, onion.
 طاغوق *tawuq*, fowl.

ف *fē*, sounds exactly like the English *f*, thus:

- لفظ *lafz*, word.
 فرق *farq*, difference.
 افندی *Efendi*, Mr., a gentleman, a Master, Sir, Prince of the blood.

فيل *fil*, elephant.

خليفة *khakife*, Calif.

ق *qaf*, — is a hard palatal Arabic letter, and corresponds to the English *q* thus:

قرآن *qurān*, the Qurān.

قِرْق *qirg*, forty.

قِيز *qiz*, girl, maiden, virgin.

ق changes into غ in declensions and conjugations

ك *kaf*, *kef*, — This letter presents more difficulties in reading than any other of the Alphabet. When it is used as the Arabic ك it always sounds like the English *k*, as:

كتاب *kitāb*, book.

حَرَكَة *haraket*, motion, movement, conduct.

اَكْمَكْ, اَتْمَكْ *ekmek*, bread.

When it is used as the Persian گ it has sometimes but not always an additional little stroke to distinguish it, and sounds like *g* in 'get' 'go', as:

گُل *gyul*, a rose.

گِلْمَكْ *gelmek*, to come.

گِیْتْمَكْ *gitmek*, to go.

When medial or final it is often softened into the English *y*:

اَکِرْ *eyer*, if, saddle.

دِلْ دِلْ *diyil*, not, not only.

اَکْلَنْمَكْ *eylenmek*, to amuse one self.

دِگْنَكْ *deynek*, stick.

بَگْ *Bey*, Prince, Lord, Sir.

مَکْرْ *meyer*, unless, and still, and yet.

In the provinces and in central Asia the گ in these and similar words is still pronounced hard, as — *Beg*, *meger*, etc.: In some words the ك *kaf*, *kef*, is pronounced like the

Spanish *ñ* and the English 'ng', in Constantinople this sound is generally softened to a simple 'n':

دڭز *deñiz*, sea.

تڭرى *tañri*, vulgar, *tari*, God.

كوكل *gyeunul*, heart.

صڭره *soñra*, *sora*, bye and bye, afterwards, after.

In this last case the ڭ is called *sūghir kef*, deaf *kef*, because it conveys a stifled nasal sound. It is pronounced as *ñ* nasal in the French word, Monsieur. It is the sign of the genitive case, and second person singular. — Sometimes it is distinguished by three dots, but these dots are very rarely used by the Turks either in print or MS. thus:

کتابڭ *kitābin*, of the book.

بابانڭ *babanin*, of the father.

ڭرنداشڭ *gardashin*, thy brother.

ل *lām*, is pronounced like the English *l*, in all words, as:

ڭال *dal*, branch, twig.

ڭليڭ *qilij*, sword.

الڭف *almaq*, to take.

لڭوم *luzūm*, necessity.

لڭكن *lakin*, but.

Sometimes this is pronounced as (and mistaken for) *n* when it is preceded by the letter (ڭ) as:

انڭر *onnar* for *onlar*, they.

ڭونڭر *gyunner* for *gyunler*, days.

م *mim*, is equivalent to the English *m* as:

مڭل *māl*, riches, property.

مڭلكت *memleket*, country, town.

مڭكرم *mukrim*, kind, courteous, affable.

مڭكتوب *mektuō*, letter.

ن *nun*, is equivalent to the English *n*, as:

نه *ne*, what.

نیل *nīl*, indigo, the river Nile.

نور *nūr*, light, radiance.

If ن *n*, is followed by the letter ب *b*, it is pronounced like *m*, thus:

استانبول *istambol*, Constantinople.

تنبیه *tembīh*, a giving orders, a public notice, injunction, proclamation.

انبار *ambar*, granary, storehouse, gun deck in man of war, hold of a ship.

تنبل *tembel*, lazy.

و *waw*, *vow*, this is an Arabic letter and is sometimes a consonant, and sometimes a vowel. When a consonant it has either the sound of *v* or *w* or a combination of those sounds; thus:

وارمق *varmaq*, to arrive, to reach.

واردیر *wardir*, exists, is, are, there is, there are.

جوار *jivwār*, vicinity, neighbourhood.

اول *evvel*, first, before.

When a vowel in Arabic or Persian words, it always has the sound of *n*, as:

لزوم *luzūm*, necessity.

ممنونیت *memnūniyyet*, pleasure, satisfaction.

ممنوع *memnū*, forbidden.

In some Persian words which have been adopted into Turkish it takes the sound of *o* as:

دوستانه *dostūne*, friendly.

خوش *khosh*, agreeable.

ه *he*, this is an Arabic letter, sometimes a vowel and sometimes a consonant. When it is a consonant it has the soft sound of the English 'he', as:

همان *hemān*, *hemēn*, only, just, hardly.

هنر *huner*, art, talent, ability.

When it occurs at the end of words, it is pronounced generally, but not always, as *a* or *e*, thus:

قرا *qara*, black.

میوه *meyve*, fruit.

جمله *jumle*, all.

In some Persian words, when preceded by a long vowel, the *ه* has the value of *h*, thus:

شاه *shāh*, king.

راه *rāh*, road.

اندوه *endūh*, sorrow.

Many Turkish gerunds, optatives, imperatives, and verbal nouns of the third person end in this vowel *ه*, as:

سویله (verbal noun) *sevilme*, the action of being loved.

سولنجه (gerund) *sevilinje*, on being loved.

سوله (optative) *sevile*, that he may be loved.

ایده *ide*, that he may do.

گوره *gyeure*, that he may see.

گیده *gide*, that he may go.

The Turks call this letter *ه* *he* ایکی کوزلو *iki gyeuzlu* 'two eyed' on account of its sometimes having two dots, thus *ه*. This form occurs at the end of Arabic words, and is changed in Turkish into *ت*, as:

دولت for دولة *devlet*, Government, Empire, state, kingdom, prosperity, felicity.

غیرت for غيرة *gayret*, zeal.

ی *ye*, this Arabic letter may be either a consonant or vowel. When it is a consonant, whether initial, medial, or final, it has the sound of the English *y*, thus:

یوز *yuz*, one hundred.

يُورَك *yurek*, heart.

يَنَاق *yanag*, cheek.

بُوبَا *boya*, point, dye.

بُوبِلَه *buyle*, thus, so.

بُوبِنُوز *boynuz*, horn.

سَرَاي *sarāy*, palace.

هَر شَي *her shey*, every thing.

چُوق شَي *choq shey*, wonderful!

When *ی* is a vowel, it is never initial, but is always at the beginning of a word preceded by the letter *ل*, as:

اِيْدِي *idi*, he was.

اِيْكَنَه *igne*, needle. When medial, it is always long, in Arabic and Persian words; as:

اَمِيْر *emir*, Prince, Commander, chief.

بِيْدَار *bīdār*, awake, vigilant. When the letter *ی* occurs at the end of a word it is a short vowel; as:

اَرِي *ari*, bee.

قَارِي *qari*, woman, wife.

اَوِي *evi*, his house; the house, acc.

اَلْچِي *alchi*, plaster of Paris.

The etter «*ی*» at the end of some Arabic words is pronounced like *a*, it often has the *ل* written over it, and loses its dots, as:

مُوسَى *mūsa*, Moses.

عِيسَى *īsa*, Jesus.

حَق تَعَالَى *haqq-ta'āla*, God, the most high God. When *ی* is isolated, or as at the end of a word it is often written without the dots.

The letters *ل* *elif*, and *ه* *he*, are interchangeable in Turkish words and derivations, and are sometimes omitted without any rule being assignable, thus:

ایتممک *itmemeek*, not to do, make.

The orthography of Arabic and Persian words is fixed, and admits of no variation; but a few Persian words admit of abbreviation by the omission of a vowel, as:

شه *sheh*, for شاه *shāh*.

پادشه *pādsheh*, for پادشاه *pādishāh*.

شاهنشاه *shāhinsheh*, for شاهنشاه *shāhinskhāh*.

شهنشه *shehinsheh*, for شهنشاه *shehinskhāh*, king, emperor.

It is often found that in Turkish words the vowels و and ی are interchanged by different writers, at different times, in different places, and even at one place and time, by the same writer and in the selfsame document, this, as Sir James Redhouse says, is license or inadvertency as:

باشلی *bashli*, باشلو *bashlu*.

کلیر *gelir*, کلور *gelur*.

اری *ari*, ارد *aru*, and so on, words differently written, but in reality the same.

CHAPTER III.

THE DIVISION OF THE TURKISH LETTERS.

All the letters of the Turkish Alphabet are consonants, the four following و، ی، ا، ه however sometimes act as vowels. There are hard and soft letters. The hard, are:

ق، غ، ع، ظ، ط، ص، ص، خ، ح
qaf ghayn, ayn zi ti dad sad khi ha

The soft letters are:

ا، ب، ت، ث، ج، د، ذ، ر، ز، س، ش، ف
fe, shin, zin, ze, ri, zal, dal, jim, se, te, be, elif,

ك ل م ن و ي
ye, he, waw, vaw, vav, nun, mim, lam, kef, kaf.

Some European grammarians say that the soft letters are only six

ا ت ز س ه ك
 in number, viz. — *kaf, kef, he, sin, æ, te, elif*, — and, that the remaining letters are nutral.

The Alphabet is also divided into dotted *معجمه mu'jeme*, and undotted letters *مهمله muhmele*.

It is further divided into two classes, solar and lunar, the solar letters so called because the Arabic word *شمس shems* 'sun' begins with one of them, they are 14 in number, viz.

ث د ذ ر ز س ش ص ط ظ ل ن
nun, lam, zi, ti, dad, sad, shin, sin, ze, ri, zal, dal, se, te.

Lunar letters are so named, because the Arabic word *قمر qamar* 'moon', begins with one of them. These are also 14 in number:

ا ب ج ح خ ع غ ف ق ك م
mim, kaf, kef, qaf, fe, ghayn, ayn, khi, ha, jim, be, elif.
 ي ه و
ye, he, waw, vaw, vav.

THE PRONUNCIATION OF THE ARABIC ARTICLE.

When an Arabic word begins with a solar letter and has the Arabic article *ال el* 'the' before it, the *ل lam* of the article is dropped in pronunciation, and its suppression is compensated by pronouncing the solar letter as double. This is indicated by placing *teshdid* (ˀ) over it, *هارون هارون* *hārūn er-reshīd* — *بعد السلام ba'd es-selām*, after salutation. — But when a lunar letter follows *ال el*, the

ل of the article is pronounced, and *teshdid* (ـ) is not required as الامير *el-emir*, the Prince, الاخير *el-akhir*, the last.

THE TURKISH LAWS OF EUPHONY.

§ 1. The orthography of Arabic and Persian words is fixed; it is only in Turkish words and foreign words used in Turkish, that the rules relating to hard and soft letters are operative. The chief point in the beautiful system of Turkish euphony, is that according as a hard or soft sound predominates in a Turkish word all the letters and sounds of any grammatical addition thereto (derivative, declensional, or conjugational) must be of the same class, that is, hard or soft:

كوزلك *gyuzluk*, spectacles, an eye-glass; root word كوز *gyuz* eye (soft) so, لك *luk* (with soft ك, not لف *luq* with hard ق).

گرمك *gezmek*, to walk about; root گز *gez* (soft), so مك *mek*.
قازماق *qazmaq*, to dig; root قاز *qaz* (hard), so مق *maq* with hard ق.

ژ ز ر ذ د ا

§ 2. The following seven letters *elif*, *dal*, *zel*, *ri*, *zi*, *zhi*,

و

waw, *vaw*, *vav*, are joined to their antecedent letters only, and never to the following letter, nor to one another:

اوزره *uzere*, upon, by, according to.

اوزم *uzum*, grape, grapes.

وار *var*, *vwar*, existing.

يوق *yog*, no, non-existent.

اوردو *ordu*, camp.

CHAPTER IV.

THE VOWEL POINTS حَرَكَت *hareket*, LIT.: MOVEMENT,
 PL.: حَرَكَات *harekyāt*.

The vowel points are rarely written in Turkish, except in devotional, and children's books. They are supposed to be known. We will treat of seven Arabic vowel points used by the Turks, which are the most important. They are the following.

(=) اوستون *ustun*.

(-) اسره *esere*.

(ۛ) اوترو اوتوري اوتري *uturu*.

(-) تشديد *teshdid*.

() مد *medd-elif*.

(°) همزه *hemze-elif*.

(°) جزم *jezm*.

(±) اوستون اوستون ايكى *iki-ustun*.

(±) اسره ايكى *iki-esere*.

(=) اوستون *ustun*, is a short diagonal stroke, from the right hand downwards towards the left which whenever placed over a hard consonant is to be pronounced as *a*:

حَ *ha*, in مَحَبَّت *mahabet*, love.

in يَپْراق *yapraq*, leaf.

When the same vowel point is placed over a soft consonant it is pronounced as *ē*:

بَ *be* in مَحَبَّت *mahabet*, love.

أَمَل *emel*, desire, wish.

(-) اسره *esere*, placed under a hard consonant gives to it the sound of *z*, in girl:

خَ *khi*, but if it is placed under a soft con-

sonant it gives the sound of *z* in *did*:

ج *jim*.
إِسْتِقَامَت *istiqāmet*, rectitude, integrity, uprightness.
جَلِيل *jelīl*, grand, great.

These Arabic vowel points are sometimes doubled when used with the final letters of Arabic words and are then respectively pronounced (ـَ) an, en, (ـِ) in, (ـُ) un.

In this case the word is taken adverbially:

مَخْصُوصًا *makhṣūsan*, expressly, intentionally.
لُطْفًا *lutfā*, as a favour, as a kindness.
لُطْفًا وَكِرَمًا *lutfā ve keremen*, graciously and generously.

The Turks nearly always omit these double signs from the Arabic words they use.

(-) *teshdīd*, doubles the letter over which it is placed:

جَنَّت *jennet*, Paradise.

سِرٌّ *sirr*, secret.

حَدٌّ *hadd*, limit, boundary.

(-) *medd-elif*, is placed over the *ā* *elif* giving it a long sound.

The Arabs employ this sign to obviate the somewhat cumbrous use of two elifs, as:

أَوَّ *āv*, the chase.

أَتَّ *āt*, horse.

أَيَّ *āy*, moon, mouth.

(ء) *hemze-elif*, expresses a soft, or hiatus, and is placed over, under, or by the side of *ā* *elif*; thus:

مَأْمُور *me'mūr*, an official.

When it is placed over the *ي* *ye*, it has no sound; the *ي* then loses its two dots, thus:

دَائِمًا *dā'imā*, always.

دَائِر *dā'ir*, concerning, about.

When it is placed at the end of a word ending in a vowel, the (ء) *hemze* is pronounced like *i* thus:

كلام نتیجہ *netîje-i-kelām*, in short.

كلام خلاصہ *khulāsa-i-kelām*, in fine, to sum up all.

When the (ء) *hemze* is placed over the و *waw waw*, it has no sound, thus:

سؤال *su'āl*, question, an asking.

مؤمنین *mū'minīn*, the faithful, true believers.

(٥) *jezm*, indicate that the letter over which it is placed has no vowel immediately following:

يَوْمَ الدِّينِ *yevmu-d-dīn*,

يَوْمَ الْقِيَامِ *yevmu-l-qiyām*,

The day of judgment.

يَوْمَ الْحِسَابِ *yevmu-l-hisāb*,

يَوْمَ السُّؤَالِ *yevmu-s-su'āl*,

CHAPTER V.

THE THREE ARABIC VOWELS MENTIONED IN THE FOURTH CHAPTER.

اوستون *ustun*.

اسره *esere*.

اوتورو *uturu*.

Are not sufficient to express or represent all the vowels used in Turkish, they afford no means of distinguishing between the hard and soft vowels. The hard vowels are:

a قانامق *qanamaq*, to bleed.

قناد *qanad*, a wing.

i قرل *qizil*, red; this is nearly the English *i* in 'girl', 'fir', 'sir', etc.

- o قول *gol*, arm, a patrol, as:
 قرةقول *qaraqol*,
 قرةغول *qaraghol*, } guard of several soldiers or
 قراول *qaraol*, } policemen.
 u قوشانماق *qushatmaq*, to surround, to wind round the waist.
 قوشاق *qushaq*, sash, shawl or belt worn round the waist.
 قوش *qush*, bird.

The soft vowels are:

- e كل *gel*, come (imperative).
 كلمك *gelmek*, to come, to arrive.
 i ايكى *iki*, two.
 ايكندى *ikindi*, prayer time in the middle of the afternoon.
 u as in the French word 'recul', recoil.
 گولگه *gyulge*, shadow.
 گولشمك *gyuleshmek*, to wrestle.
 گوزل *gyuzel*, pretty, nice.
 گولمك *gyulmek*, to laugh, to smile.
 eu as in the French word 'feuille', leaf, thus:
 كوپه *kyupe*, *keupe*, ear-ring.
 كوپرى *kyupru*, *keupru*, bridge.
 كپك *kyupek*, *keupek*, dog.

The last two sounds have no equivalent in English; each of these classes of vowels should always accompany its own class of consonants.

CHAPTER VI.

ETYMOLOGY.

The noun.

There is no definite article in Turkish. An indefinite *bir* *bir*, a, an, one, is sometimes employed, but the Arabic ar-

ticle ال *el* is used in Arabic phrases introduced into Turkish, thus:

ضياء الشمس *ziyā'u-sh-shems*, the light of the sun.

دابة الارض *dābbetu-l-arz*, the beast of the earth.

There is no gender in Turkish. Beings of different sexes have separate appellations, thus:

ادم *adam*, man.

اغلان *oghlan*, boy.

اركة *erkek*, male.

قارى *qari*, woman.

والده *vālide*, انا *ana*, mother.

If the female of an animal has not a special name, such as:

اينك *inek*, cow.

قسراق *qisraq*, mare: the sex is shown by prefixing the word, ديشى *dishi* 'she', thus:

قويون ديشى *dishi-qoyun*, ewe.

كبك ديشى *dishi-geyik*, hind, etc.

When the noun relates to human beings ديشى *dishi* is not used; the word قيز *qiz*, 'girl' or قارى *qari*, 'woman' taking its place; thus:

اشجى قارى *qari-ashji*, woman-cook.

خدمتجى قيز *qiz-khizmetji*, maid-servant.

Turkish nouns have two numbers, مفرد *mufred*, singular, and جمع *jem*, plural. Properly speaking there is no declension, as the noun never changes, but suffixes or prepositions (by some called postpositions) six in number are added to the noun whether singular or plural. The plural is always formed by adding the syllable لَر *lar* to the end of words the dominant sound of which is hard, and لِر *ler* to those where it is soft:

hard	{	قَرِنْدَاشلَر qarindashlar, qardashlar, brothers.
		يَازَر yazar, he writes, يَازَرلَر yazarlar, they write.
soft	{	پَدَر peder, father, پَدَرلَر pederler, fathers.
		گِیدَر gider, he goes, گِیدَرلَر giderler, they go.

The six variations of case are named:

مُجَرَّد *mujerred*, nominative.

اِضَافَه *izāfe*, genitive.

مِفْعُولُ الْيَه *mef'ul ileyh*, dative.

مِفْعُولُ فِيْهِ *mef'ul fih*, locative.

مِفْعُولُ بِهِ *mef'ul bih*, accusative.

مِفْعُولُ مِنْهُ *mef'ul minh*, ablative.

The vocative in Turkish is the nominative expressed either by the tone of the voice, or by placing an interjection before it, as:

اَو *av*, or اَوِ اَي *ey av*, O chase!

CHAPTER VII

FIRST DECLENSION.

Words which end with a consonant, and the dominant syllable of which is hard.

Singular: مُفْرَد *mufred*.

nom. قَان *qan*, blood.

gen. قَان - ك *qan-in*, of the blood.

dat. قَان - ا *qan-a*, to the blood.

acc. قَان - ي *qan-i*, the blood.

loc. قَان - د *qan-da*, in, at, on the blood.

abl. قَان - دَن *qan-dan*, from the blood.

Plural: جَمْع *jem*.

nom. قَان - لَر *qan-lar*, bloods.

- gen. قان - لرك *qan-lar-in*, of bloods.
 dat. قان - لره *qan-lar-a*, to bloods.
 acc. قان - لرى *qan-lar-i*, bloods.
 loc. قان - لره *qan-lar-da*, in, at, on bloods.
 abl. قان - لردن *qan-lar-dan*, from bloods.

Sing. مفرد *mufred*.

- nom. كتاب *kitāb*, book.
 gen. كتاب - ك *kitāb-in*, of the book.
 dat. كتاب - ك *kitāb-a*, to the book.
 acc. كتاب - ى *kitāb-i*, the book.
 loc. كتاب - ده *kitāb-da*, in, at, on the book.
 abl. كتاب - دن *kitāb-dan*, from the book.

Plur. جمع *jem*.

- nom. كتاب - لر *kitāb-lar*, books.
 gen. كتاب - لرك *kitāb-lar-in*, of the books.
 dat. كتاب - لره *kitāb-lar-a*, to the books.
 acc. كتاب - لرى *kitāb-lar-i*, the books.
 loc. كتاب - لره *kitāb-lar-da*, in, at, on the books.
 abl. كتاب - لردن *kitāb-lar-dan*, from the books.

Sing. مفرد *mufred*.

- nom. حمام *hammām*, hamam, bath.
 gen. حمام - ك *hammām-in*, » of the bath.
 dat. حمام - ك *hammām-a*, » to the bath.
 acc. حمام - ى *hammām-i*, » the bath.
 loc. حمام - ده *hammām-da*, » in, at, on the bath.
 abl. حمام - دن *hammām-dan*, » from the bath.

Plur. جمع *jem*.

- nom. حمام - لر *hammām-lar*, hamam-lar, baths.
 gen. حمام - لرك *hammām-lar-in*, » of the baths.

dat.	حمام - لَر	<i>hammām-lar-a, hamam-lar-a,</i>	to the baths.
acc.	حمام - لَرِی	<i>hammām-lar-i,</i>	» the baths.
loc.	حمام - لَرْد	<i>hammām-lar-da,</i>	» in, at, on the baths.
abl.	حمام - لَرْدَن	<i>hammām-lar-dan,</i>	» from the baths.

Sing. مغرد *mufred*.

nom.	اوق	<i>oq,</i>	arrow.
gen.	اوق - ك	<i>oq-un,</i>	of the arrow.
dat.	اوق - ا	<i>oq-a,</i>	to the arrow.
acc.	اوق - ی	<i>oq-u,</i>	the arrow
loc.	اوق - د	<i>oq da,</i>	in, at, on the arrow.
abl.	اوق - دَن	<i>oq-dan,</i>	from the arrow.

Plur. جمع *jem*.

nom.	اوق - لَر	<i>oq-lar,</i>	arrows.
gen.	اوق - لَرِك	<i>oq-lar-in,</i>	of the arrows.
dat.	اوق - لَرِی	<i>oq-lar-a,</i>	to the arrows.
acc.	اوق - لَرِی	<i>oq-lar-i,</i>	the arrows.
loc.	اوق - لَرْد	<i>oq-lar-da,</i>	in, at, on the arrows.
abl.	اوق - لَرْدَن	<i>oq-lar-dan,</i>	from the arrows.

Words which end with a consonant, and the last syllable of which is soft.

Sing. مغرد *mufred*.

nom.	مکتب	<i>mekteb,</i>	school.
gen.	مکتب - ك	<i>mekteb-in,</i>	of the school.
dat.	مکتب - ا	<i>mekteb-e,</i>	to the school.
acc.	مکتب - ی	<i>mekteb-i,</i>	the school.
loc.	مکتب - د	<i>mekteb-de,</i>	in, at, on the school.
abl.	مکتب - دَن	<i>mekteb-den,</i>	from the school.

Plur. جمع *jem*.

nom.	مکتب - لَر	<i>mekteb-ler,</i>	schools.
------	------------	--------------------	----------

- gen. مکتب - لړک *mekteb-ler-in*, of the schools.
 dat. مکتب - لړه *mekteb-ler-e*, to the schools.
 acc. مکتب - لړی *mekteb-ler-i*, the schools.
 loc. مکتب - لړده *mekteb-ler-de*, in, at, on the schools.
 abl. مکتب - لړدن *mekteb-ler-den*, from the schools.

Sing. مفرد *mufred*.

- nom. توتون, توتن *tutun*, tobacco.
 gen. توتون - ک *tutun-un*, of the tobacco.
 dat. توتون - ه *tutun-e*, to the tobacco.
 acc. توتون - ی *tutun-i*, the tobacco.
 loc. توتون - ده *tutun-de*, in, at, on the tobacco.
 abl. توتون - دن *tutun-den*, from the tobacco.

Plur. جمع *jem*.

- nom. توتون - لړ *tutun-ler*, tobaccos.
 gen. توتون - لړک *tutun-ler-in*, of the tobaccos.
 dat. توتون - لړه *tutun-ler-e*, to the tobaccos.
 acc. توتون - لړی *tutun-ler-i*, the tobaccos.
 loc. توتون - لړده *tutun-ler-de*, in, at, on the tobaccos.
 abl. توتون - لړدن *tutun-ler-den*, from the tobaccos.

Sing. مفرد *mufred*.

- nom. گل *gyul*, rose.
 gen. گل - ک *gyul-un*, of the rose.
 dat. گل - ه *gyul-e*, to the rose.
 acc. گل - ی *gyul-u*, the rose.
 loc. گل - ده *gyul-de*, in, at, on the rose.
 abl. گل - دن *gyul-den*, from the rose.

Plur. جمع *jem*.

- nom. گل - لړ *gyul-ler*, roses.

- gen. گل - لَرَك *gyul-ler-in*, of the roses.
 dat. گل - لَرِه *gyul-ler-e*, to the roses.
 acc. گل - لَرِی *gyul-ler-i*, the roses.
 loc. گل - لَرَدِه *gyul-ler-de*, in, at, on the roses.
 abl. گل - لَرَدَن *gyul-ler-den*, from the roses.

SECOND DECLENSION.

Nouns which end in a vowel.

These take ن in the genitive, and ی in the dative and accusative to support the vowel of the suffix, which is hard or soft according to the rules of euphony; examples of hard vowels.

Sing. مغَرِد *mufred*.

- nom. اَوَطَه *oda*, room.
 gen. اَوَطَه - نَك *oda-n-in*, of the room.
 dat. اَوَطَه - یِه *oda-y-a*, to the room.
 acc. اَوَطَه - یِی *oda-y-i*, the room.
 loc. اَوَطَه - دِه *oda-da*, in, at, on the room.
 abl. اَوَطَه - دَن *oda-dan*, from the room.

Plur. جَمَع *jem'*.

- nom. اَوَطَه - لَر *oda-lar*, rooms.
 gen. اَوَطَه - لَرَك *oda-lar-in*, of the rooms.
 dat. اَوَطَه - لَرِه *oda-lar-a*, to the rooms.
 acc. اَوَطَه - لَرِی *oda-lar-i*, the rooms.
 loc. اَوَطَه - لَرَدِه *oda-lar-da*, in, at, on the rooms.
 abl. اَوَطَه - لَرَدَن *oda-lar-dan*, from the rooms.

Sing. مغَرِد *mufred*.

- nom. اَلْمَا *elma*, apple.
 gen. اَلْمَا - نَك *elma-n-in*, of the apple.

- dat. **الما - يه** *elma-y-a*, to the apple.
 acc. **الما - يى** *elma-y-i*, the apple.
 loc. **الما - ده** *elma-da*, in, at, on the apple.
 abl. **الما - دن** *elma-dan*, from the apple.

Plur. جمع *jem*.

- nom. **الما - لر** *elma-lar*, apples.
 gen. **الما - لرك** *elma-lar-in*, of the apples.
 dat. **الما - لره** *elma-lar-a*, to the apples.
 acc. **الما - لرى** *elma-lar-i*, the apples.
 loc. **الما - لرده** *elma-lar-da*, in, at, on the apples.
 abl. **الما - لردن** *elma-lar-dan*, from the apples.

Sing. مفرد *mufred*.

- nom. **قورقو** *qorqu*, fear, fright.
 gen. **قورقو - نك** *qorqu-nun*, of the fear, fright.
 dat. **قورقو - يه** *qorqu-y-a*, to the fear, fright.
 acc. **قورقو - يى** *qorqu-y-u*, the fear, fright.
 loc. **قورقو - ده** *qorqu-da*, in, at, on the fear, fright.
 abl. **قورقو - دن** *qorqu-dan*, from the fear, fright.

Plur. جمع *jem*.

- nom. **قورقو - لر** *qorqu-lar*, fears, frights.
 gen. **قورقو - لرك** *qorqu-lar-in*, of the fears, frights.
 dat. **قورقو - لره** *qorqu-lar-a*, to the fears, frights.
 acc. **قورقو - لرى** *qorqu-lar-i*, the fears, frights.
 loc. **قورقو - لرده** *qorqu-lar-da*, in, at, on the fears, frights.
 abl. **قورقو - لردن** *qorqu-lar-dan*, from the fears, frights.

The noun **سو** *su*, water irregularly forms its genitive as **صوبك** *suyun*. This is almost the only exception, or irregularity in the language. The noun **قپو** *qapu*, 'door', or 'gate' is pronounced either *qapu*, or *qapi*, thus:

- اچ قپيى** *qapu-yu*, or *qapi-y-i*, *ach*, open the door.
قپا قپيى *qapu-yu*, or *qapi-y-i*, *qapa*, shut the door.

Nouns which end in a vowel and have the last syllable soft:

Sing. مفرد *mufred*.

- nom. کدی *kedî*, cat.
 gen. کدینک *kedî-n-in*, of the cat.
 dat. کدییه *kedî-y-e*, to the cat.
 acc. کدییی *kedî-y-i*, the cat.
 loc. کدیده *kedî-de*, in, at, on the cat.
 abl. کدیدن *kedî-den*, from the cat.

Plur. جمع *jem*.

- nom. کدی - لر *kedî-ler*, cats.
 gen. کدی - لرن *kedî-ler-in*, of the cats.
 dat. کدی - لره *kedî-ler-e*, to the cats.
 acc. کدی - لری *kedî-ler-i*, the cats.
 loc. کدی - لرده *kedî-ler-de*, in, at, on the cats.
 abl. کدی - لردن *kedî-ler-den*, from the cats.

Singulars ending in the letter *e* do not join that letter to the sign of the plural in writing, thus:

- sing. سرکه *sirke*, vinegar.
 plur. سرکه لر *sirke-ler*, vinegars.
 sing. ادا *ada*, island.
 plur. ادا لر *ada-lar*, islands.
 sing. پیاده *piyâde*, infantry soldier.
 plur. پیاده لر *piyâde-ler*, soldiers.
 sing. اسکله *iskemle*, chair.
 plur. اسکله لر *iskemle-ler*, chairs.
 sing. باغچه *baghcha*, garden.
 plur. باغچه لر *baghcha-lar*, gardens.
 sing. اقچه *aqcha*, money, coin, cash.
 plur. اقچه لر *aqcha-lar*, moneys, coins.
 sing. قهوه *qahve*, coffee.

plur. قهوه لَر *qahve-ler*, coffees.

sing. شیشه *shishe*, bottle.

plur. شیشه لَر *shishe-ler*, bottles.

sing. کیجه *geje*, night.

plur. کیجه لَر *geje-ler*, nights.

§ 1. ق *qaf*, change to غ *ghayn* in the genitive, dative, and accusative singular:

Sing. مفرد *mufred*.

nom. طاووق *tawuq*, fowl, hen.

gen. طاوغه *tawugh-un*, of the fowl, hen.

dat. طاوغه *tawugh-a*, to the fowl, hen.

acc. طاوغی *tawugh-u*, the fowl, hen.

Likewise euphony requires that all singulars, terminating in Arabic ك *kef*, should soften that letter into Turkish ی *y*, sound, in the gen., dat. and acc.:

Sing. مفرد *mufred*.

nom. اتمک, اکمک *ekmek*, bread.

gen. اکمک *ekmey-in*, of the bread.

dat. اکمه *ekmey-e*, to the bread.

acc. def. اکمی *ekmey-i*, the bread

This law of euphony holds good in the verbs that end with ی *y* and ک *k*.

These rules of euphony do not apply to Arabic and Persian substantives.

Monosyllabic words are exceptions to the above rules:

nom. طوق *toq*, full, satiated.

gen. طوق *toq-un* » »

nom. خلق *khalq*, people.

gen. خلفک *khalq-in*, of the people.

nom. حق *haqq*, truth.

gen. حقه *haqq-in*, of the truth.

حققر وار *haqqiniz var*, the truth, right, justice is on your side; you are right, طرى *toq*, is Turkish; خلق *khalq* and حق *haqq*, are Arabic.

§ 2. The following are some of the nouns that end in ق and ك.

طپراق *topraq*, earth, territory.

صیباق *sijaq*, heat, warmth.

طباق *tabaq*, plate.

قیمق *qaymaq*, cream.

باجق *bajaq*, leg, thigh.

ایاق *ayaq*, foot.

بالق *balıq*, fish.

فندق *findiq*, nut.

قاشق *qashiq*, spoon.

طغرولق *doghruluq*, uprightness.

یغمورلق *yaghmurluq*,

a cloak for rainy weather.

بورک *burek*, pastry.

دودک *duduk*, flute.

کورک *kyurek* oar.

یوزک *yuzuk*, ring.

چیلک *chilek*, strawberry.

بلازک *bilezik*, bracelet.

تفنگ *tufenk*, *tufek*, musket.

ارک *erik*, plum.

adjec- { بیوک *buyuk*, large.

ارکک *erkek*, male, man.

tives. { کوچک *kuchuk*, small.

اوردک *eurdek*, duck.

§ 3. Most Turkish nouns, not all, ending in ت *te*, soften this into د *dal* before a suffix beginning with a vowel:

Sing. مفرد *mufred*.

nom. قورت *qurt*, wolf

gen. قوردک *qurd-un*, of the wolf.

dat. قورده *qurd-a*, to the wolf.

acc. قوردی *qurd-u*, the wolf.

The ت is retained before a consonant, or in a separate word:

loc. قورنده *qurt-da*, in at, by, on the wolf.

abl. قورتدن *qurt-dan*, from the wolf.

Sing. مفرد *mufred*.

nom. ات *at*, horse.

gen. آنك *at-in*, of the horse.

dat. آندە *at-da*, to the horse.

acc. آنى *at-i*, the horse.

In such cases the *د* of the suffix takes the sound of the *ت* *te* of the root:

qurt-ta, qurt-tan, at-ta, at-tan.

CHAPTER VIII.

ADJECTIVE صفت *sifat*, PLUR. صفات *sifāt*.

The Turkish adjective is unchangeable, having neither gender, number, case, nor degrees of comparison; it always precedes the substantive it qualifies:

بيوك آدم *biyuk adam*, great man.

بيوك اداملار *biyuk adamlar*, great men.

گوزل قيز *gyuzel qiz*, handsome girl.

گوزل قيزلار *gyuzel qizlar*, handsome girls.

گوزل قارى *gyuzel qari*, handsome woman.

گوزل قاريلار *gyuzel qarilar*, handsome women.

ايو كتاب *iyi kitāb*, good book.

ايو كتابلار *iyi kitāblar*, good books.

بياض منديل *beyaz mendil*, white handkerchief.

بياض مندiller *beyaz mendiller*, white handkerchiefs.

اينجه كاغذ *inje kyaghet*, thin paper.

اينجه كاغذلار *inje kyaghetler*, thin papers.

گنج قيز *genj qiz*, young girl.

گنج قيزلار *genj qizlar*, young girls.

اجى سوز *aji suz*, bitter word.

اجى سوزلر *aji suzler*, bitter words.

قارا گۈزۈ *qara gyuz*, black eye.

گارا گوزلر *gara gyuzler*, black eyes.

گوزل بیاض اتلار *gyuzel beyaz atlar*, handsome white horses.

کچوک اینکلر *kuchuk inekler*, small cows.

After the numerals and other adjectives expressing plurality the substantive is in the singular:

ایکے دو بچے *iki oghlan*, two boys.

qach adam, how many men?

بش قىز *besk qiz*, five girls.

اۛۛ uch at, three horses.

چوڦ او *choq ev*, many houses.

التي نفري *alti nefer*, six soldiers.

Arabic and Persian adjectives used in Turkish are sometimes placed after their substantives an (=) *esere* being used to join the two together:

قرآن شریف *qurān-i-sherīf*, the sacred Quoran.

خط همايون *khatt i-humāyūn*, { the Imperial edict.
the handwriting of the

خط همايون, *khatt-i-humayūn*, { the handwriting of the Sultan.

اِرادَةُ شَاهَانِه *irade-i-shāhāne*, the Imperial edict.

مردان بزرگ *merdān-i-buzurg*, great men.

عملهای نیک *amelhā-yī-nik*, good works.

CHAPTER IX.

THE NUMERALS, أسماء العدد *esmā-ul-'aded*.

In Turkish there are 5 sorts of numerals: The cardinal, ordinal, distributive, fractional and indefinite. Arabic and Persian numerals cardinal and ordinal are also used in Turkish.

The simple cardinal numeral adjectives are:

١	بىر <i>bir</i> , one.	٢٠	يىگىرمى <i>yigirmi, yirmi</i> , twenty.
٢	ايكى <i>iki</i> , two.	٢١	يىگىرمى بىر <i>yigirmi, yirmi bir</i> , twenty one.
٣	ئۈچ <i>uch</i> , three.	٣٠	ئوتۇز <i>otuz</i> , thirty.
٤	دۆرت <i>deurt</i> , four.	٤٠	قېرغ <i>qirq</i> , forty.
٥	بەش <i>besk</i> , five.	٥٠	ئەللى <i>elli</i> , fifty.
٦	ئالتي <i>alti</i> , six.	٦٠	ئالتىمىش <i>altmish</i> , sixty.
٧	يەدى <i>yedi</i> , seven.	٧٠	يەتتىمىش <i>yettmish</i> , seventy.
٨	سەككىز <i>sekiz</i> , eight.	٨٠	سەككىسەن <i>seksen</i> , eighty.
٩	تۆگۈز <i>doquz</i> , nine.	٩٠	تۆگۈسان <i>doqsan</i> , ninety.
١٠	ئون <i>on</i> , ten.	١٠٠	يۈز <i>yuz</i> , a hundred.
١١	ئون بىر <i>on bir</i> , eleven.	١٠٠٠	بىن <i>bin</i> , a thousand.
١٢	ئون ئىككى <i>on iki</i> , twelve.		

The words *yuk*, a hundred thousand, and *milyon*, a million, are also used in Turkish, but they are not real numerals, they are names of aggregate, and require the numerals before them:

ئۈچ يۈك *uch yuk*, three hundred thousand.
 ئون مىليون *on milyon*, ten millions.

§ 1. When the Turks wish to express a multiple of *yuz bin*, a hundred thousand, if they do not use the words *milyon* and *yuk*, they employ the simple or compound number of such multiple, and then insert the word *kerre*, 'times' before the word *yuz bin*, a hundred thousand:

ئالتي كېرە يۈز بىن *alti kerre yuz bin*, six times one hundred thousand = 600,000.

بەش يۈز سەككىسەن دۆرت كېرە يۈز بىن *besk yuz seksen deurt kerre yuz bin*, five hundred eighty four times one thousand = 584,000.

§ 2. The digits from 1-10 with their compound numbers are written as in English from left to right:

1, 2 - ۲, 3 - ۳, 4 - ۴, 5 - ۵, 6 - ۶, 7 - ۷, 8 - ۸, 9 - ۹, 10 - ۱۰, 15 - ۱۵, 22 - ۲۲, 170 - ۱۷۰, 2209 - ۲۲۰۹, 8764 etc.

§ 3. Ordinal numbers are formed by adding to the cardinal numbers the particle *nji* and placing an *esere* under the consonant of the cardinal:

birinji, first. *utuzunju*, thirtieth.
onunju, tenth. *yuzunju*, hundredth.

Numerals ending with the letter *y* when joined to the same termination suppress the *y*:

ikinji, instead of *iki inji*, second.
altinji, sixth. *yedinji*, seventh.
ellinji, fiftieth.

The cardinal number *deurt*, fourth, when joined to the same termination changes the final *te*, into *dal*, thus:

deurt, four, *deurdunju*, fourth.
deurdunju alay, the fourth Regiment.
deurdunju tabur, the fourth Battalion.
deurdunju buluk, the 4th Squadron (horse).
bin sekiz yuz doqsan besh senesi, one thousand eight hundred and ninety five 1895.

§ 4. The Turkish interrogative cardinal numeral *qach*, 'how many?', 'how much?' is used as a substantive when asking the time, the hour, or the price of any thing:

qach dediler, how many did they say?
sā'at qacha geldi? to how much has the hour come? i. e. what o'clock is it?

qacha satiyorsun, at how much art thou selling (it then)? i. e. how much is it?

ayin qachi dir, the how manyeth of the month is it? i. e. what is the day of the month?

§ 5. DISTRIBUTIVE NUMBERS.

In Turkish the distributive numbers are formed by adding , to the cardinals when they end in a consonant:

بیرر birer birer, one by one.

بیرر birer, one each, one a piece, one to each.

اوتوز otuzer, thirty each, thirty a piece.

شر sher, is added to the cardinal numbers which end in a vowel:

ایکیشر ikisher ikisher, two by two.

ایکیشر ikisher, two each, two a piece.

yedisher, seven a piece.

yiyirmisher, yirmisher, twenty each.

ellisher, fifty each, a piece.

ایکیشر yuz, two hundred each, a piece.

yedisher yuz otuz birer, seven hundred and thirty one each, 731 a piece.

دورت deurt, 'four', changes its final ت te into د dal:

دورت deurt, 'four', دوردر deurder, four a piece.

§ 6. There are two special adjectives and one substantive in Turkish to express 'half'. The adjective یارم yarim, and the substantive یاری yari, are used to express the half of a definite whole:

یارم sheftali, half a peach.

یارم elma, half an apple.

یارم hissa, half a portion.

آرمودن yarisi, the half of the pear.

حصه یاریسی hissânin yarisi, the half of the portion.

The other adjective بوجوق buchuq is never used alone, but always after some whole number:

اۋچ بوچۇق ارمۇد *uch buchug armud*, three pears and a half.
 دۈرت بوچۇق گۈن *deurt buchug gyun*, 4 days and a half.
 يەدى بوچۇق الاى *yedi buchug alay*, 7 Regiments and a half.
 اىكى بوچۇق طاۋىر *iki buchug tabur*, 2 Battalions and a half.
 چارىك *chāryek, cheyrek*, a quarter of an hour, a fourth part.

دۈرت چارىك كىچىدى *deurt cheyrek gechti*, $\frac{1}{4}$ past 4 o'clock.
 سەت اۋچە چارىك وار *sā'at uche cheyrek var*, a quarter to three o'clock, and so on.

§ 7. Fractional numbers in Turkish are very simple. The denominator is put in the locative, and is followed by the numerator.

اۋچە بىر *uchde bir*, in three (parts) one, i. e. $\frac{1}{3}$ one third.
 ايتىدە اىكى *altida iki*, in six (parts) two, i. e. $\frac{2}{6}$ two sixths.

§ 8. Arabic fractional numbers are used in Turkish up to ten. Except the word نصف *nisf*, a half, the half, they are all of the form of the pattern word فعل *ful*:

ثلث <i>suls, sulus</i> , a third.	سبع <i>subi</i> , a seventh.
ربع <i>rubi</i> , a fourth.	ثمان <i>sumn</i> , an eighth.
خمس <i>khums</i> , a fifth.	تسع <i>tusi</i> , a ninth.
سدس <i>suds</i> , a sixth.	عشر <i>ushr, ushur</i> , a tenth.

The dual of ثلث is ثلثان *sulsan*, two thirds.

For all the others a Turkish numerator is used:

اىكى خمس *iki khums*, $\frac{2}{5}$ two-fifths.
 اۋچ ربع *uch rubi*, $\frac{3}{4}$ three-fourths.
 بىش تسع *beshtusi*, $\frac{5}{9}$ five-ninths.

When a whole number and a fraction other than 'one half' has to be expressed, Turkish or Arabic fractions are used, the conjunction و *vav, vaw, wav*, 'and', or the preposition اىلە *ile*, 'with', being introduced between the whole and the fraction:

ایکے ایلہ بیر ربیع *iki ile bir rubi.* } Two and one fourth.
 ایکے و بیر ربیع *iki ve bir rubi.* }
 بےش ایلہ بیر سُدس *beş ile bir suds* } five and one sixth.
 بےش و بیر سُدس *beş ve bir suds* }

When the Turkish fraction is used, the numeral *bir*, one, in the genitive case is placed before the fraction:

سکڑ ایلہ بیرک بدبدہ اوجی *sekiz ile birin yedide uchu*, eight, and three-sevenths of one.

ایکے ایلہ بیرک التیدہ اوجی *iki ile birin altıda uchu*, two, and three-sixths of one.

§ 9. The Arabic cardinal numbers used in Turkish are:

Masculine.	Feminine.
1 واحد <i>wāhid.</i>	واحدة <i>wāhida.</i>
أحد <i>ahad.</i>	أحدى <i>ehda.</i>
2 اثنین <i>esnein.</i>	اثنین <i>esnateyn.</i>
اثنان <i>esnān.</i>	اثنان <i>esnātān.</i>
3 ثلاث <i>selās.</i>	ثلاثة <i>selase.</i>
4 أربع <i>erbaʿ.</i>	أربعة <i>erbāʿa.</i>
5 خمس <i>khamṣ.</i>	خمسة <i>khamṣe.</i>
6 ست <i>sitt.</i>	سبعة <i>sitte.</i>
7 سبع <i>sebi.</i>	سبعة <i>sebʿa.</i>
ثمانی <i>semāni.</i>	ثمانية <i>semāniye.</i>
ثمان <i>semān.</i>	
9 تسع <i>tesʿ.</i>	تسعة <i>tisʿa.</i>
10 عشر <i>ashr.</i>	عشرة <i>ashere.</i>

With masculine nouns.

11 أحد عشر *ahad, ashar.*

12 اثنا عشر *isnā, ashar.*

With feminine nouns.

أحدى عشرة *ihda, ashere*

اثنتا عشرة *isnatā ashere, etc.*

In the accusative case, common gender from twenty upwards:

20 عشرين *ishrīn*, objective or accusative case.

30 ثلاثين *selāsin.*

40	اربعون	<i>erbaʿn</i>	objective or accusative case.			
50	خمسين	<i>khamṣīn</i> ,	»	»	»	»
60	ستين	<i>sittīn</i> ,	»	»	»	»
70	سبعين	<i>sebʿīn</i> ,	»	»	»	»
80	ثمانين	<i>semānīn</i> ,	»	»	»	»
90	تسعين	<i>tisʿīn</i> ,	»	»	»	»
100	مئة, ميه	<i>miyya</i> ,	»	»	»	»
	مايه	<i>māye</i> ,	»	»	»	»
1000	الف	<i>elf</i> ,	»	»	»	»

In the nominative case, common gender, they have the following forms:

20 عشرون *ishrūn*.

30 ثلاثون *ṣalāṣūn*.

40 اربعون *erbaʿūn*, etc. etc.

In forming Arabic compound numerals the cardinal numbers take the conjunction , *wau* between each number commencing with the lower number:

سنة خمسة وتسعين وثمان مائة والف *sene-i khamse-u tisʿīn-u-semūn māye-u elf* 1895.

But in Turkish compound cardinals the larger always precedes the smaller number without the conjunction , *wau*:

bin sekiz yuz } The year one thousand
doqsan besh senesi } eight hundred and
ninety five.

In Persian the conjunction is used between each two numbers, the higher number being placed first:

هزار و هشتصد } 1895.
u neved-u penj

The Arabic ordinal numbers are:

Masculine.	Feminine.
1st اول <i>evvel</i> .	اولا or اولی <i>oula</i> .
2nd ثانى <i>sānī</i> .	ثانیة <i>sāniye</i> .
3rd ثالث <i>sālīs</i> .	ثالثة <i>sālise</i> .
4th رابع <i>rābi</i> .	رابعة <i>rābi'a</i> .
5th خامس <i>khāmis</i> .	خامسة <i>khāmise</i> .
6th سادس <i>sādis</i> .	سادسة <i>sādise</i> .
7th سابع <i>sābi</i> .	سابعة <i>sābi'a</i> .
8th ثامن <i>sāmin</i> .	ثامنة <i>sāmine</i> .
9th تاسع <i>tāsi</i> .	تاسعة <i>tāsi'a</i> .
10th عاشر <i>āshir</i> .	عاشرة <i>āshira</i> .
11th حادى عشر <i>hādī āshir</i> .	حادیة عشر <i>hādiyet āshre</i> .
12th ثانى عشر <i>sāni āshir</i> .	ثانیة عشر <i>sāniyet āshre</i> .
13th ثالث عشر <i>sālīs āshir</i> .	ثالثة عشر <i>sāliset āshre</i> .

And so on; the feminine being formed by doubling the *y* and adding to the masculine the letter *t*.

The Persian numeral adjectives or cardinal numbers, which are occasionally used in Turkish, are:

يك <i>yek</i> , 1.	پانزده <i>pānzdeh</i> , 15.
دو <i>du</i> , 2.	شانزده <i>shānzdeh</i> , 16.
سه <i>si</i> , 3.	هفده <i>heftdeh</i> , 17.
چهار <i>chihār</i> , 4.	هشتده <i>heshtdeh</i> }
پنج <i>penj</i> , 5.	هزده <i>hezdeh</i> } 18.
شش <i>shesh</i> , 6.	نوزده <i>nuvāzdeh</i> , 19.
هفت <i>heft</i> , 7.	بیست <i>bīst</i> , 20.
هشت <i>hesht</i> , 8.	بیست و يك <i>bīst-u-yek</i> , 21.
نه <i>nuh</i> , 9.	بیست و دو <i>bīst-u-du</i> , 22.
ده <i>deh</i> , 10.	سی <i>sī</i> , 30.
یازده <i>yāzdeh</i> , 11.	چهل <i>chihil</i> , 40.
دوازده <i>duvāsdeh</i> , 12.	پنجاه <i>penjāh</i> , 50.
سیزده <i>sīzdeh</i> , 13.	شصت <i>shast</i> , 60.
چهارده <i>chārdeh</i> 14.	هفتاد <i>heftād</i> , 70.

هشتاد <i>heshtād</i> , 80.	ششصد <i>sheshsad</i> , 600.
نود <i>noed</i> , 90.	هفتصد <i>heftsad</i> , 700.
صد <i>sad</i> , 100.	هشتصد <i>heshtsad</i> , 800.
دویست <i>duvīst</i> , 200.	نهدصد <i>nuhsad</i> , 900.
سیصد <i>sīsad</i> , 300.	هزار <i>hezār</i> , 1000.
چهارصد <i>chihārsad</i> , 400.	ده هزار <i>deh hezār</i> 10.000.
پانصد <i>pānsad</i> , 500.	لک <i>lek</i> , 100.000 etc.

In counting in games, Persian numbers are generally employed mixed with Turkish:

یک یک <i>yek yek</i> , 2 single aces.
ایکی بر <i>iki bir</i> , 2 and one.
سه یک <i>si yek</i> , 3 and one.
چهار یک <i>chihār yek</i> , 4 and one.
پنج ویک <i>penj-u-yek</i> , 5 and one.
شش ویک <i>shesh-u-yek</i> , 6 and one.
دو بار <i>du bārū</i> , twos.
سه بادو <i>si bā du</i> , 2 and 3.
چهار ودو <i>chihār-u-du</i> , 4 and 2.
پنج ودو <i>penj-u-du</i> , 5 and 2.
شش ودو <i>shesh-u-du</i> , 6 and 2.
دو سه <i>du si</i> , threes.
چهار وسه <i>chihār-u-seh</i> , 4 and 3.
پنج وسه <i>penj-u-si</i> , 5 and 3.
شش وسه <i>shesh-u-si</i> , 6 and 3.
دورت چهار <i>deurt chihār</i> , fours.
پنج چهار <i>penj chihār</i> , 5 and 4.
شش چهار <i>shesh chihār</i> , 6 and 4.
دو بش <i>au besh</i> , fives.
شش ویش <i>shesh-u-besh</i> , 6 and 5.
دو شش <i>du shesh</i> , sixes, etc.

Persian ordinal numbers are formed by adding the letter

م to the cardinal numbers — the word expressing the first of the ordinals is an exception — thus:

1st	نخستین	<i>nukhustān,</i>	first.
2nd	دوم دوم	<i>duyum,</i>	second.
3rd	سوم سوم سیوم	<i>suwum,</i> <i>suyum,</i> <i>siyum,</i>	third.
4th	چهارم چهارم	<i>chārum,</i> <i>chihārum,</i>	fourth.
5th	پنجم	<i>penjum,</i>	fifth.
6th	ششم	<i>sheshum,</i>	sixth.
7th	هفتم	<i>heftum,</i>	seventh.
8th	هشتم	<i>hesthum,</i>	eighth.
9th	نهم	<i>nuhum,</i>	ninth.
10th	دهم	<i>dehum,</i>	tenth.
11th	یازدهم	<i>yūzdehum,</i>	eleventh.
12th	دوازدهم	<i>duvāzdehum,</i>	twelvth, etc. etc.

In compound numbers the last member alone receives the suffix م as: *bist-u-yekum*, the twenty first and so on. The ordinal «second» and «third» may be

سوم دوم
سیم دوم

The rest follow the rules.

CHAPTER X.

FORMATION OF TURKISH WORDS.

اسم فاعل *ismi fā'il*, the noun substantive, or noun agent.

Compound nouns in the Turkish language have been chiefly adopted from the Arabic and Persian and are so numerous, and the methods of forming them so various, that study alone can introduce the learner to a knowledge of them.

We will only give some of the principal rules for the formation of Turkish words.

When the syllable *جی ji*, is added to a noun it denotes one whose trade or occupation is in connection therewith: انمک اکمک *ekmek*, bread.

اکمکچی *ekmek-ji*, baker, or اکمکچی *ekmek-çisi*.

میوهچی *meyve-ji*, fruiterer.

شکرچی *sheker-ji*, confectioner.

عربهچی *araba-ji*, coachman.

دوهچی *deve-ji*, camel driver.

ساعتچی *sā'at-ji*, watchmaker.

باصمہچی *basma-ji*, printer.

By adding *یچی iji* to the root of a verb a noun is formed indicating a person who performs the action expressed by the verb:

یازماق *yazmaq*, to write.

یازانچی *yaz-iji*, a writer, one who writes.

کسمک *kesmek*, to cut.

کسیماق *kes-iji*, a cutter, one who cuts.

سورماق *surmek*, to drive.

سورانچی *sur-uju*, a driver, one who drives.

sevmek, to love.

sev-iji, a lover, one who loves.

If the root of the verb end in the letter ت *te*, this letter is changed into د *dal* when the syllable یجی *iji* is added, as:

yirtmaq, to tear.

yird-iji, one who tears.

If the root of the verb end in a vowel, then another ی *y* must be added to the یجی *iji*:

oqu-maq, to read.

oqu-yuju, reader, one who reads.

CHAPTER XI.

THE RELATIVE ADJECTIVE, اسم منسوب *ism-i mensûb*.

The اسم منسوب *ism-i mensûb*, or 'noun possessive', is an adjective denoting possession, endowment, or relation of one object to another. It is formed by adding the terminations *lu*, *leu*, or لی *li* to a noun which then becomes an adjective:

fazilet-lu, Excellent, or eminent, (a title given to the *ulemâ*).

meveddet-lu, Friendly (person).

shevket-lu, Majestic (the title most specially assumed by and given to the Sultan).

qudret-lu, Puissant.

mahâbet-lu, Majestic, sublime, dread, awful.

kerâmet-lu, noble, great, wonder working.

azamet-lu, grand, Majestic.

In reading letters or petitions those terminations are

always pronounced, *lu*, but in conversation they follow the rules of euphony.

ادب لو *edeb-li*, good mannered, polite.

عقل لو *aqil-li*, wise, prudent, sensible.

قوت لو *quvvet-li*, powerful.

§ 1. When this termination لو *lu*, *leu*, or لي *li* is added to names of countries, or cities it forms an adjective noun denoting a native of that country or city:

استانبول لو *istambol-lu*, Constantinopolitan.

مصر لو *misir-li*, an Egyptian.

لندره لو *londra-li*, Londoner.

جزائر لو *jezūyir-li*, Algerian, of Algiers.

ارزروم لو *erzerum-lu*, of Erzerum.

§ 2. The Turks also use the Arabic words

اهل *ehl*,

ذات *zāt*,

صاحب *sāhib*,

ارباب *erbāb*,

ذو *zu*,

and also some Persian particles in the same sense, مند *mend* and دار *dār*.

اهل معرفت *ehli-ma'rifet*, expert.

صاحب عقل *sahib 'aql*, possessed of intelligence.

ذو ذنابه *zu-zunābe*, possessed of a tail (i. e. a comet).

ذات الجنب *zāt-ul-jenb*, vulg. *satiljam*, the possessor of the side, i. e. pleurisy.

ارباب منصب *erbābi mansīb*, who possess the chief seats, i. e. high dignitaries.

سعادت مند *sa'ādet-mend*, happy, fortunate.

هنر مند *huner-mend*, possessor of talent, talented.

دفتر دار *defter-dār*, minister of finance.

مهر دار *muhr-dār*, seal-bearer.

§ 3. Not only are adjectives formed from substantives,

but substantives can also be formed from adjectives by affixing *لىق* *liq* or *لىك* *lik*. An immense number of nouns are thus formed:

- لىك* *ekmekji-lik*, the trade of a baker.
لىك *arabaji-lik*, the trade of a coachmaker.
لىك *terziji-lik*, tailoring, the art of a tailor.
لىك *kitäbji-lik*, bookseller-business.
لىق *baqqalji-liq*, grocery-business.
لىك *shekerji-lik*, confectioner-business.
لىك *tufenkji-lik*, gunsmith-business.
لىك *chiftji-lik*, farming-business.
لىك *hekimji-lik*, medical profession.

§ 4 Sometimes this particle *لىق* *liq* or *لىك* *lik*, indicates the use, or destination of any enclosed space, where objects, or animals are kept together:

- لىق* *taouq-luq*, henhouse.
لىق *bagh-liq*, vineyard.
لىق *odun-luq*, a place where there is wood.
لىق *dagh-liq*, mountainous place.
لىك *meyshe-lik*, oak-forest, or plantation.
لىك *igne-lik*, needle-case.
لىك *deve-lik*, a zeriba of camels.

Again when the particle *لىق* or *لىك* is added to a noun it sometimes indicates the monetary value of a thing:

- اون غروشلق ات* *on ghurush-luq et*, moat for 10 piastres.
اوج غروشلق اوزوم *uch ghurush-luq uzum*, three piastres worth of grapes.
سكز غروشلق الما *sekiz ghurush-luq elma*, 8 piastres worth of apples.
بش شلینلق کیفیت در *besh shilin-liq keyfiyyet dir*, it is a matter of five shillings.

Again, by adding this particle **لى** to the infinitive of a verb, a verbal noun is produced:

ياتماقلىق *yatmaq-liq*, the act of going to bed, sleeping.

اوتورماقلىق *oturmaq-liq*, the act of sitting, sitting.

دورماقلىق *durmaq-liq*, the act of staying, staying.

The act of remaining, remaining.

سومكلىك *sevmek-lik*, the act of loving, loving.

گلمكلىك *gelmek-lik*, the act of coming, coming.

گتمكلىك *gitmek-lik*, the act of going, going.

Again, when this particle is added to the cardinal numbers, it indicates the value of the coins used in the Ottoman Empire:

دوگوزلىق *doguz-luq*, a piece of nine piastres.

اونلىق *on-luq*, a piece of ten piastres.

قورقلق *qirq-luq*, a piece of forty piastres.

اىكىلىك *iki-lik*, a piece of two piastres.

بىشلىك *besli-lik*, a piece of five piastres.

التىلىك *alti-lik*, a piece of six piastres.

§ 5. The noun-local, called by the Turks **اسم مكان** *ism-i mekyün*, name of place, denoting dwelling, habitation, dignity, quality, etc., is formed in various ways.

1st By the juxtaposition of two substantives:

طوپخانه *top-khane*, arsenal.

کتابخانه *kitab-khane*, *kutub-khane*, library, book-case.

2ndly by a participle, and a substantive:

دوراجاق يەر *durajaq yer*, halting place.

اويۇيۇچاق يەر *uyuyujacq yer*, a sleeping place.

يازاجاق يەر *yazajacq yer*, office, writing place etc. etc.

§ 6. The postposition **سىز** *siz, suz, seuz*, 'less', 'without' when affixed to a noun denotes privation: .

- دوست سز *dost-suz*, friendless, 'without a friend.'
 صوچه سز *such-suz*, faultless, without a fault.
 جان سز *jān-siz*, inanimate, without life.
 باره سز *para-siz*, penniless, without money.
 ایش سز *ish-siz*, without work, without business.
 حق سز *haqq-siz*, without right.
 میوه سز *meyve-siz*, fruitless, without fruit.
 او سز *ev-siz*, homeless, without a house.

§ 7. Nouns of mode or manner are obtained by affixing the letter س *shin* preceded by - *escre* to the root of a verb: *satmaq*, to sell, *صایس sat-ish*, a mode or manner of selling.

sevmek, to love, *سویس sev-ish*, a mode or manner of loving.

gelmek, to come, *گلش gul-ish*, the mode or manner of coming.

bilmek, to know, *بیش bil-ish*, a mode of knowing, or guessing.

CHAPTER XII.

DEGREES OF COMPARISON.

Comparative اسم بفصل *ism-i tafdil*.

The comparative in degree is formed by prefixing the adverb *daha*, more, to the positive:

- زنگین *zengin*, rich.
 • *daha zengin*, richer.
 • بویک *biyuk*, large.
 • *daha biyuk*, larger.
 • اوزون *uzun*, long.

دەرازدا *daha uzun*, longer.

كچىك *kuchuk*, small.

دەرازدا *daha kuchuk*, smaller.

To compare two things, the most qualified is placed first, in the nominative, then comes the less qualified, in the ablative, and then the adjective either with or without the *daha*.

شەكرىن تاتلو *sheker-den tatli*, sweeter than sugar.

سەندىن گۈزەل *sandan gyuzel*, handsomer than thou.

لەندىرە استانبولدىن چوڭ بۈيۈك *Londra Istamboldan choq biyuk*.
London (is) much larger than Constantinople.

مىسىر پارىسدىن كىچىك *misir parisdan kuchuk*, Cairo (is) smaller than Paris.

بەندىن ئالدى *benden evvel*, before me.

سەندىن سىڭىرە *sandan songra, sora*, after thee.

بۇ ئۇندىن دەرا بۈيۈك *bu ondan daha biyuk*, this (is) yet larger than that.

سەن ئۇندىن دەرا گۈزەل سەن *san ondan daha gyuzel sin*, thou art still handsomer than he.

§ 1. The superlative absolute is formed by placing one of the three following adverbs *ئەڭ en*, *بىك pek*, *چوڭ چوڭ choq*, or either of the following words *غايەت ghāyet*, *زىيادە ziyāde*, before the adjective, thus:

ئەڭ ياخشى *en iyi at*, the very good (best) horse.

ئەڭ ياخشىسى *en iyisi*, the very best of them.

بىك گۈزەل قىز *pek gyuzel qiz*, the very pretty girl.

بۇ يەمەك بىك فائىدەلى *bu yemek pek faideli dir*, this food is very wholesome.

choq iyi adam, the very good man.
 ghāyet zengin adam, the very rich man.
 ziyāde malli banq, the very rich bank.

§ 2. The superlative of comparison is formed by placing the noun in the genitive plural, and adding the third personal possessive suffix to the adjective.

genj qizlar-in gyuzeli, the prettiest of the young girls.

qarilar-in guzeli, the handsomest of the women.

jumle-den iyisi, the best of all.

The Turks form a kind of superlative by repeating the adjective, or substantive, or adverb, and thus giving emphasis to the sentence.

choq choq, much (and again) much.

turlu turlu, of various kinds, (and again) of various kinds of all sorts.

qat qat, in folds (and again in) folds: fold upon fold.

bitun bitun, quite (and again) quite.

diri diri, alive (and again) alive.

siq siq, often (and again) often.

mavi mavi, (for mavi,) light blue (and again) light blue.

sari sari, yellow (and again) yellow.

biyuk biyuk evler, large (and again) large houses, i. e. very large houses.

derin derin chaylar, deep (and again) deep rivers.

ev ev gezmek, to go from house to house, or to go to all the houses.

اتش باغیرماق atesh atesh baghirmag, to cry out fire! fire!

§ 3. There is in Turkish a curious and somewhat trivial idiomatic form of repetition which is used only in conversation, never in writing, it consists in prefixing *m* to the repeated word when this begins with a vowel, or changing the initial consonant into *m*, if the first letter be a consonant.

ات مات at mat, horses and such like.

کرمک مزمک gezmek mezmek, to walk about.

ایوماق مویوماق uyumag muyumag, to sleep.

گتمک میتمک gitmek mitmek, to go.

سومک مومک sevmek mevmek, to love.

اکمک مکمک ekmek mekmek, bread etc. such like or and so on.

سوت موت sut mut, milk and the like.

اچ ماج aj maj, hungry, hungry.

طوق موق toq moq, chock-full etc. etc.

§ 4. The Turks have another method of expressing an absolute superlative besides the above. They sometimes prefix to certain adjectives a syllable having no separate meaning, but intensifying the force of the adjective to which it is prefixed, thus:

اب اچیق ap achig, quite open, very open.

اپ اق ap aq, quite white, very white.

بم بیاض bem beyaz, quite white, very white.

بوس بوتون bus butun, entirely.

بم یشیل yem yeshil, very green.

طوس طوخرو dos doghru, quite straight.

طوب دولو top dolu, very full.

یم یش yem yesh, wet through, very wet.

دوم دوز dum duz, perfectly flat, smooth.

چپلاق *chir chiqlaq*, stark naked.

قاپ قرا *qap qara* } very, entirely black.
صیم سیاه *sim siyāh* }

قیزمزی *qip qirmızı*, quite, very red.

قوپ قوری *qup quru*, quite, very dry.

صوم صوغق *som soghuq*, very cold.

صاب ساری *sap sari*, quite, very yellow.

صیب سیق *sip sıqı*, very tight.

قاپ قالم *qap qalın*, very, quite thick.

ماس مای *mas mavi*, very, quite blue.

یاپ یالین *yap yalın*, quite alone.

بون بوش *bon bosh*, quite empty.

سام صافی *sam safı*, quite, very pure, clear.

§ 5. PERSIAN DEGREES OF COMPARISON.

The Persian adjectives used in Turkish, have three degrees of comparison just as in English.

The comparative degree is formed regularly by the syllable *ter*, and the superlative by adding the syllable *terin* to the positive, thus:

خوب *khüb*, fair.

خوبتر *khüb-ter*, fairer.

خوبترین *khüb-terin*, fairest.

The terminations *ter*, and *terin*, may be joined to the adjective, or written separately, at pleasure; thus in the above example, we might write:

خوبتر *khüb-ter*, and خوبترین *khüb-terin*.

In a few instances we meet with the termination *terin* of the superlative contracted into *in*, as:

برین *berin* for برترین *berterin*, highest, or uppermost, so

بهین *bihin* for بهترین *bihterin*, best.

Adjectives to which these syllables *تر* *ter* and *ترین* *terin* are added, precede the substantive they qualify.

بهترین وسائل نجات *bihterîn-i vesâ'il-i nejât*, the best of the means of salvation, or

بهین وسائل نجات *bihîn-i vesâ'il-i nejât*, the best means of salvation.

§ 6. Every Turkish adjective can also serve as an adverb, without any modification of form, and can qualify verbs as well as substantives.

گزل قیز *gyuzel qiz*, the pretty girl.

گزل قاری *gyuzel qari*, the pretty woman.

گزل سويلمک *gyuzel suweylemek*, to speak prettily.

Persian adjectives are used in the same way in Turkish phrases.

§ 7. Arabic adjectives like Arabic substantives, when used as adverbs, are placed in the accusative case, e. g.

فعلًا *fulan* by act.

جمالًا *jemālan*, } beautifully.
حسنًا *husnan*, }

§ 8. There are many kinds of Persian compound adjectives much used in Turkish, some are composed of two substantives, one, or both of which may be either Arabic or Persian.

آصف تدبیر *āsaf-tedbir*, like Asaph in counsel, i. e. wise.

شکر لب *sheker-leb*, sugar-lipped.

عدالت دستگاه *adālet-destgyāh*, (a very) loom of justice, i. e. just.

Others are composed of an adjective preceded by a substantive.

دل تشنه *dil-tishne*, heart thirsty, thirsty-hearted, i. e. ardently desirous.

Others again are of a substantive preceded by the syllable هم *hem*.

هم آشیانه *hem-āshyāne*, of the same nest.

همشهری *hem-shehrī*, of the same town, or city, a fellow citizen.

There are others consisting of a substantive followed by the syllable وش *vesh*, *lik*.

پری وش *perī-vesh*, fairy-like.

Or of a substantive followed by one of the syllables رنگ *reng*, فام *fām*, کون *gyūn*; all signifying colour.

سبز رنگ *sebz-reng*, green-coloured.

زمرد فام *zumurrud-fām*, emerald-coloured.

کون کنکم *gyūn*, wheat-coloured, dark-complexioned, brown.

Others consist of a substantive followed by one of the syllables کار *kyār*, گیار *gyar*, کر *ger*, نان *būn* or دار *dār*.

شیرین کار *shīrīn-kyār*, sweet mannered.

آفرید کار *āferīd-gyār*, creative, i. e. creator.

زر کر *zer-ger*, goldworker, goldsmith.

باغبان *bagh-ban*, garden-keeper, i. e. gardener.

مهر دار *muhr-dār*, seal-keeper.

§ 9. Names of places may be followed by the syllables دان *dān*, زار *zār*, سار *sār*, ستان *istan*, e. g.

قلمدان *qalem-dan*, pen-case.

گلزار *gyul-zār*, flower-garden, flowery-mead.

کوهسار *kyūh-sar*, mountainous district.

ترکستان *turk-istan*, Turkey.

عربستان *arab-istan*, Arabia.

هندستان *hind-istan*, India.

Others are expressed by two substantives the same, or different with the letter *elif* placed between them.

چاکاچاک *chāk-ā-chāk*, imitative of the sound of repeated blows with axe or sword.

سرپا *ser-ā-pa*, from head to foot.

Others insert ت *ta* or ت *te* instead of ل *elif*.

سرتاپا *ser-ta-pā*, from head to foot.

سرتسر *ser-te-ser*, from end to end, from beginning to end.

Others take the syllable آنه *āne*.

رو شبانه *shebāne-rūz*, a whole night and day, all night and all day, 24 hours, or several nights and days in succession.

A Persian preposition may occur between the two.

دست بردست *dest-ber-dest*, hand on hand, hands crossed.

سینه بسینه *sīne-be-sīne*, breast to breast.

Many other varieties occur especially those with the privitives بی *bī* without, and نا *na*, not.

بی ادب *bī-edeb*, without education, or manners.

نا بینا *nā-bīna*, not seeing, sightless, blind.

§ 10. THE TURKISH DIMINUTIVE NOUNS.

اسم تصغیر *ism i tasghīr*.

This is formed by suffixing the syllable جق *jiq*, to nouns whose last syllable is hard, and جك *jik* to those whose last syllable is soft.

صوغق *soghuc*, cold.

صوغجق *soghujuc*, a little cold.

چوجق *chojuc*, child.

چوججق *chojujuc*, little child.

قاریجق *qarijuc*, little woman.

قاریججق *qarijaghiz*, dear little woman.

از *az*, a little, ازجق *azijuc*, very little.

کتاب *kitāb*, book.

کتابچہ *kitābfīq*, little book.

ال *el*, hand.

الچک *el-jik*, little hand.

If the nouns end in ی or ک, these letters are suppressed before the syllables چق and ک.

اتک *etek*, the skirt, hem.

اتچک *etejik*, little skirt, hem.

کوپک *keupek*, dog.

کوپچک *keupejik*, little dog.

By adding the letter ز *ze*, to these diminutives, a term of great endearment is formed used by all classes, not by children only: as our nursery vocabulary, mammy, granny, aunty, doggy etc.

دوستناچیز *dostjaghiz*, dear little friend.

قیزچیز *qizjughiz*, dear little girl.

قوزوجیز *quzujaghiz*, dear little lamb.

چوچوجیز *chojughiz*, dear little child.

§ 11. When the syllable جه *ja, je*, is added to the names of nations it expresses the language of the country named.

انگلیز *ingliz*, English.

انگلیزجه *ingliz-je*, the English language.

ترکجه *turk-je*, the Turkish language.

عربجه *arab-ja*, the Arabic language etc.

When this syllable جه *je, ja*, is added to the adjective instead of حو or جک it expresses a diminution in degree.

الچاقجه *alchaq-ja*, rather low.

ایوچه *iyi-je*, somewhat better.

گوزلجه *gyuzel-je*, pretty well.

When the same syllable جه *je, ja*, is added to substantives or adjectives, it expresses the way of doing any thing; it also expresses one's opinion.

- ادمجه *adam-ja*, in a manly way.
 قاريجه *gari-ja*, in a womanly way.
 اسكروججه *asker-ja*, in a soldierly way.
 بنجه *ben-je*, according to my opinion, according to my way.
 سانجه *san-je*, according to thy opinion, according to thy way.
 سزجه *siz-je*, according to your opinion, according to your way.
 انلرجه *anlar-ja*, according to their opinion, according to their way and so on.
-

CHAPTER XIII.

The Persian diminutives end in ـه *cha*, *che*, and in ـك preceded by an (=) *ustun* vowel.

- پا *pa*, پاحه *pacha*.
 كنيز *keniz*, a girl.
 كنيزك *kenizek*, a little girl, maid, maiden, maidservant.
-

CHAPTER XIV.

THE PRONOUN, ضمير *zamir*.

There are six kinds of pronouns in Turkish.

The personal pronoun.

The demonstrative pronoun.

The relative pronoun.

The interrogative pronoun.

The indefinite pronoun.

The possessive pronoun.

§ 1. The personal pronoun in Turkish has no distinction of gender.

Sing.

ben. I.

sen, thou.

o, he, she, it. In writing, for the third person singular *ol*, is very often used instead of *o*.

Plur.

biz, we.

siz, you.

onlar, they.

Instead of *ben*, *sen*, the Turks sometimes use the plural *biz*, *bizler*, *siz*, *sizler*, this mode of plural cannot be expressed in English.

§ 2. The personal pronouns are declined in the same way as the nouns substantives.

Sing.

nom. ben, I.

gen. benim, of me, my.

dat. bana, to me.

loc. bende, in, at, on me.

acc. bini, me.

abl. benden, from me.

Plur.

nom. biz, bizler, we.

gen. bizim, bizlerin, of us, our.

dat. bize, bizlere, to us.

loc. bizde, bizlerde, in, at, on us.

acc. bizi, bizleri, us.

abl. bizden, bizlerden, from us.

Second person.

Sing.

nom.	سَن	san, thou.
gen.	سَنِك	sanin, of thee, thy.
dat.	سَكَا	sana, to thee.
loc.	سَنَدَا	sanda, in, at, on thee.
acc.	سَنِي	sani, thee.
abl.	سَنَدَن	sandan, from thee.

Plur.

nom.	سِز	siz, سِزَلَر sizler, you.
gen.	سِزِك	sizin, سِزَلَرِك sizlerin, of you.
dat.	سِزَه	size, سِزَلَرَه sizlere, to you.
loc.	سِزَدَه	sizde, سِزَلَرَدَه sizlerde, in, at, on you.
acc.	سِزِي	sizi, سِزَلَرِي sizleri, you.
abl.	سِزَدَن	sizden, سِزَلَرَدَن sizlerden, from you.

Third person.

Sing.

nom.	اَو	o, ol, he, she, it.
gen.	اَنِك	anin, onun, of him, his, her, it, its.
dat.	اَكَا	ana, to him, to her, to it.
loc.	اَنَدَا	anda, onda, in, at, on him, her, it.
acc.	اَنِي	ani, him, her, it.
abl.	اَنَدَن	andan, from him, her, it.

Plur.

nom.	اَنَلَر	anlar, onlar, they.
gen.	اَنَلَرِك	anlarin, onlarin, of them, their.
dat.	اَنَلَرَه	anlara, onlara, to them.
loc.	اَنَلَرَدَه	anlarda, onlarda, in, at, on them.
acc.	اَنَلَرِي	anlari, onlari, them.
abl.	اَنَلَرَدَن	anlardan, onlardan, from them.

Two of the above have, it will be noticed special genitives, *benim* *benim*, of me, my; and *bizim* *bizim*, of us, our.

§ 3. When either of the prepositions *ile* *ile*, with, and *ichun* *ichun* for, is used with a personal pronoun, this must be put in the genitive case, except the third person plural. Thus:

benim ichun *benim ichun*, for me.

anin, onun ichun *anin, onun ichun*, for him, her, it.

sizin-ile *sizin-ile*, with you.

anlar, onlar-ile *anlar, onlar-ile*, with you.

§ 4. The genitive of the above pronoun is not used unless to emphasize and corroborate the possessive pronoun of the same number and person.

benim babam *benim babam*, my father.

benim kitābım *benim kitābım*, my book.

sizin paramız *sizin paramız*, your money.

anların, onların *anların, onların*

evleri, their houses.

Not some one
else's.

§ 5. Sometimes instead of the singular *ben* *ben*, *sen* *sen*, the Turks, out of politeness, use the plural, *biz* *biz*, *siz* *siz*, *bizler* *bizler*, *sizler* *sizler*, both in conversation, and in writing.

sizlere *sizlere*, to you.

tarafınıza *tarafınıza*, to your side.

varışımızda *varışımızda*, on the arrival of our letter.

Eastern Potentates however always use the singular, both in speaking and in writing.

ferman-ı-shahānem müjebince *ferman-ı-shahānem müjebince*, conformably to my Imperial Firman.

bab-i-humayūnum *bab-i-humayūnum*, my Sublime Porte.

khatt-i-humayūnum *khatt-i-humayūnum*, my Imperial edict.

It is not necessary in Turkish to use the personal pre-

noun before the verb either in conversation or in writing, e. g.

سویچلرم *sueçylerim*, I speak.

گلرسن *gelişsin*, thou comest.

سور *sever*, he, or she loves.

طوتاریز *tutariz*, we (will) hold.

بوزارسنیز *bozarsınız*, you (will) efface.

بولورلر *bulurlar*, they (will) find.

§ 6. *کندو* or *کندی* *kendi*, 'self', is a substantive pronoun. When possessive pronouns are affixed to this word it is declined, thus:

Sing.

کندم *kendim*, myself.

کندک *kendin*, thyself.

کندسی *kendisi*, himself, herself, itself.

Plur.

کندومیز *kendımız*, ourselves.

کندونیز *kendınız*, yourselves.

کندولر } *kendiler* }
کندولری } *kendileri* } . Themselves.

Sing.

nom. کندوم *I* myself.

gen. کندومک *of* myself.

dat. کندومه *to* myself.

loc. کندومده *in, at, on* myself.

acc. کندومی *myself*.

abl. کندومدن *from* myself.

nom. کندوک *thou, thyself*, کندسی *he, she*

gen. کندیکک *of* thyself, کندسکک *of*

dat. کندیککه *to* thyself, کندسنه *to*

} himself,
} herself.

loc.	کندیکنه in, at, on thyself, کندیسنه in, at, on	himself, herself, itself
acc.	کندیکی thyself, کندیسی	
abl.	کندیکندن from thyself, کندیسندن from,	

Plur.

nom.	کندومز	we	ourselves.	
gen.	کندومزک	of	ourselves.	
dat.	کندومزه	to	ourselves.	
loc.	کندومزه	in, at, on	ourselves.	
acc.	کندومزی		ourselves.	
abl.	کندومزدن	from	ourselves.	
nom.	کندیکر	you		} yourselves.
gen.	کندیکرک	of	you	
dat.	کندیکره	to	you	
loc.	کندیکره	in, at, on	you	
acc.	کندیکزی	you		
abl.	کندیکردن	from	you	
nom.	کندولر کندولری	they		} themselves.
gen.	کندولرک	of	them	
dat.	کندولره	to	them	
loc.	کندولره	in, at, on	them	
acc.	کندولری	they		
abl.	کندولردن	from	them	

When کندی *kendi*, is used as an adjective, it represents the English word «own» and is unchangeable.

کندی اونى بنا ایتدى *kendi evini bina etdi*, he built his own house.

کندی ساعت *kendi saatim*, my own watch.

کندم یاپدم *kendim yaptım*, or کندی یاپدم *kendi yaptım*, I did it myself.

کندی اوم *kendi evim*, my own house.

کندی پارامله ساتین الیم *kendi paramile satın aldım*, I
bought it with my own money.

کندی آتینی ساتدی *kendi ātini sattı*, he sold his own
horse.

کندیم انا سويلدم *kendim ana suweyledim*, I myself
told him.

کندولرله سويلشدی *kendilerile suweyleşdi*, he spoke
with them themselves.

او اچکسی کندی کیسیدن ویدی *o aqchayı kendi keysedən verdi*,
he gave (paid) that money from
his own purse.

§ 7. THE DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

Turkish demonstrative pronouns are used both as substantives and as adjectives; when as substantives they are declined in the usual way. They are as follows.

بو *bu*, this.

شو *şu*, that or this.

او *o*, or اول *ol*, that.

اوبیر *o-bir* or
اولبیر *olbir*, } the other.

بو او *bu ev*, this house.

بو اولر *bu evler*, these houses.

بو آدم *bu adam*, this man.

بو ادملر *bu adamlar*, these men.

او بیر آت *o bir at*, that other horse.

اولر اتلر *olbir atlar*, those other horses.

شو آدم *şu adam*, this man there.

شو ادملر *şu adamlar*, these men there.

ایشبو *işbu*, this, is an indeclinable demonstrative pronoun and is occasionally used at the beginning of a sentence.

أشبو ماه محرم *ishbu māh-i-Muharrem*, this current month of Muharrem (the name of the first month of the Mohammedan year).

بو *bu*, and شو *shu*, when used as substantives are declined thus:

Sing.

- nom. بو *bu*, this.
 gen. بونك *bunun*, of this.
 dat. بوكا *buna*, to this.
 loc. بونده *bunda*, in, at, on, with this.
 acc. بونی *bunu*, this.
 abl. بوندن *bundan*, from this.

Plur.

- nom. بونلر *bunlar*, these.
 gen. بونلرك *bunlarin*, of these.
 dat. بونلره *bunlara*, to these.
 loc. بونلرده *bunlarda*, in, at, on, with these.
 acc. بونلری *bunlari*, these.
 abl. بونلردن *bunlardan*, from these.

Sing.

سول *sol* is used only in writing, never in conversation.

- nom. شول *shol*, شو *shu*, this.
 gen. شونك *shunun*, of this.
 dat. شوکا *shuna*, to this.
 loc. شونده *shunda*, in, at, on, with this.
 acc. شونی *shunu*, this.
 abl. شوندن *shundan*, from this.

Plur.

- nom. شونلر *shunlar*, these.
 gen. شونلرك *shunlarin*, of these.

dat. شۇنلارە *shunlara*, to these.

loc. شۇنلاردا *shunlarda*, in, at, on, with these.

acc. شۇنلاری *shunlari*, these.

abl. شۇنلاردن *shunlardan*, from these.

If these demonstrative pronouns بو *bu*, and شو *shu*, are used with the preposition, ایچون *ichun*, for, or ایله *ila*, ile, with, they are, when in the singular number, placed in the genitive case:

بۇنىڭ ایچون انى كەتۈردىم *bunun ichun ani getirdim*, for this reason I brought him.

• شۇنىڭ ایله گىت *shunun ila git*, go with this one.

The letter ی *y* is affixed to the demonstrative pronoun اۇر *o-bir*, in order to convert it into a substantive, it then means, 'the other of them', 'the other one':

Sing.

nom. اۇر-ی *o-bir-i* the other one.

gen. اۇر-ىنىڭ *o-bir-i-nin*, of the other one.

dat. اۇر-ىگە *o-bir-i-ne*, to the other one.

loc. اۇر-ىدە *o-bir-i-nde*, in, at, on, with the other one.

acc. اۇر-ىنى *o-bir-ini*, the other one.

abl. اۇر-ىدىن *o-bir-inden*, from the other one.

Plur.

nom. اۇرلار *o-birler-i*, the other ones.

gen. اۇرلارنىڭ *o-birler-i-nin*, of the other ones.

dat. اۇرلارگە *o-birler-i-ne*, to the other ones.

loc. اۇرلاردا *o-birler-inde*, in, at, on, with the other ones.

acc. اۇرلارنى *o-birler-i-ni*, the other ones.

abl. اۇرلاردىن *o-birler-inden*, from the other ones.

	Sing.	Plur.
nom.	او <i>o</i> , اول <i>ol</i> , that.	انلر <i>anlar</i> , onlar, they.
gen.	اونك <i>onun</i> , of that.	انلرك <i>onlarin</i> , of them.
dat.	اكا <i>ana</i> , to that.	انلره <i>onlara</i> , to them.
loc.	انده <i>anda</i> , in, at, on, with that.	انلرده <i>onlarda</i> , in, at, on with them.
acc.	انى <i>ani</i> , that.	انلرى <i>onlari</i> , them.
abl.	اندن <i>andan</i> , from that.	انلردن <i>onlardan</i> , from them.

All the foregoing demonstrative pronouns are declinable when a noun is understood. But they are indeclinable when joined to a noun, i. e. when used as adjectives.

- او *o-ev*, that house.
 او قارى *o-qari*, that woman.
 او يول *o-yol*, that road.
 شۇ تۈفەنگە *shu tufenk*, *tufek*, that musket.
 بۇ ات *bu at*, this horse.
 او قىلىچ *o-qilij*, that sword.
 بۇ قارىنىڭ *bu-qarinin*, of this woman.
 شۇ ضابطىگە *shu-zābita*, to that officer, etc.

Examples:

- بۇنى بىگە *shunu bana ver*, give me this.
 بۇنىڭ ئادى نەدر *bunun adi ne dir*, what is the name of this?
 بۇنى نەدرلەر *buna ne derler*, what do they call this?
 بۇنى قالدۇر *qaldir shunu*, take away this.
 بىگە بىش قىيە *shundan bana besh qiyye* (oqq
et kes, cut for me five okkas of me
 from this.

§ 8. The suffixed possessive pronouns have no distinction of gender, and are added to the substantives they qualify they are the following:

م <i>im</i> , my.	یمز <i>imiz</i> , مز <i>miz</i> , our.
ك <i>n</i> , thy.	یکز <i>yniz</i> , نز <i>niz</i> , your.
ی <i>i</i> , his, her, its.	لری <i>lari</i> , لری <i>leri</i> , their.

If the word end in a vowel the suffix of the third person sing. ی *i* is changed into سی *si*.

If the word ends in قی *qaf*, this letter is changed to غ *ghayn* before the possessive; and if in ك *k*, it is softened to the *y* sound:

Sing.

First person: متکلم *mutekellim*.

nom.	دفترم <i>defter-im</i> , my note-book.
gen.	دفتریم <i>defter-imin</i> , of my note-book.
dat.	دفترمه <i>defter-ime</i> , to my note-book.
loc.	دفترمه <i>defter-imde</i> , in, at, on, with my note-book.
acc.	دفترمی <i>defter-imi</i> , my note-book.
abl.	دفترمدن <i>defter-imden</i> , from my note-book.

Second person: مخاطب *mukhāteb*.

Sing.

nom.	چاقمغک <i>chaqmaghin</i> , thy lock of the gun.
gen.	چاقمغک <i>chaqmaghinin</i> , of thy lock of the gun.
dat.	چاقمغکه <i>chaqmaghina</i> , to thy lock of the gun.
loc.	چاقمغکه <i>chaqmaghinda</i> , in, at, on, with thy lock of the gun.
acc.	چاقمغکی <i>chaqmaghini</i> , thy lock of the gun.
abl.	چاقمغکدن <i>chaqmaghindan</i> , from thy lock of the gun.

Third person: غائب *gha'ib*.

Sing.

nom.	بوغازی <i>boghazi</i> , his throat.
gen.	بوغازینک <i>boghazinin</i> , of his throat.
dat.	بوغازینه <i>boghazina</i> , to his throat.

- loc. بوغازینده *boghazında*, in, at, on, with his throat.
 acc. بوغازینی *boghazını*, his throat.
 abl. بوغازیندن *boghazından*, from his throat.

Sing.

- nom. خانه‌سی *khāne-si*, his house.
 gen. خانه‌سینک *khāne-sinin*, of his house.
 dat. خانه‌سینه *khāne-sina*, to his house.
 loc. خانه‌سینده *khāne-sinde*, in, at, on, with his house.
 acc. خانه‌سینی *khāne-sini*, his house.
 abl. خانه‌سیندن *khāne-sindan*, from his house.

Plur.

First person.

- nom. بالطه‌میز *balta-miz*, our axe.
 gen. بالطه‌میزک *balta-mizin*, of our axe.
 dat. بالطه‌میزه *balta-miza*, to our axe.
 loc. بالطه‌میزده *balta-mizda*, in, at, on, with our axe.
 acc. بالطه‌میزی *balta-mizi*, our axe.
 abl. بالطه‌میزدن *balta-mizdan*, from our axe.

Plur.

Second person.

- nom. اینکیز *iney-iniz*, your cow.
 gen. اینکیزک *iney-inizin*, of your cow.
 dat. اینکیزه *iney-inize*, to your cow.
 loc. اینکیزده *iney-inizde*, in, at, on, with your cow.
 acc. اینکیزی *iney-inizi*, your cow.
 abl. اینکیزدن *iney-inizden*, from your cow.

Plur.

Third person.

- nom. طراقلری *taraq-lari*, their comb; rake.

- gen. طراقلرینه *taraq-larinin*, of their comb, etc.
 dat. طراقلرینه *taraq-larina*, to their comb, etc.
 loc. طراقلرینده *taraq-larinda*, in, at, on, with their comb, etc.
 acc. طراقلرینی *taraq-larini*, their comb, etc.
 abl. طراقلریندن *taraq-larindan*, from their comb, etc.

The plural is declined in the same way as the singular, the particle *lar* or *ler*, (which is the sign of the plural) being placed between the noun and the affix:

- دفترلریم *defter-ler-im*, my note-books.
 سونگولری *sungu-ler-i*, his, her bayonets.
 برادرلری *birāder-ler-i*, his, her, its brothers.
 همشیره‌لریمیز *hemshire-ler-imiz*, our sisters.
 سورولریکز *suru-ler-iniz*, your flocks.

When the noun ends in a vowel, the termination of the third person singular changes to *سی* *si*, his, her, its.

Further examples of words with possessive suffixes..

- قلپاق *galpaq*, a cap.
 قلپاغیم *galpaghim*, my cap.
 کؤک *gunul*, a heart.
 کؤکلک *gunulun*, thy heart.
 قان *qan*, blood.
 قانی *qani*, his, her, its blood.
 انا *ana*, mother.
 اناسی *ana-si*, his, her, its mother.
 اوردو *ordu*, army.
 اوردوسی *ordu-su*, his, her, its army.
 دوه *deve*, camel.
 دوه‌سی *deve-si*, his, her, its camel.
 یالی *yali*, a waterside (summer) house.
 یالیسی *yali-si*, his, her, its waterside (summer) house.
 بیراق *bayraq*, standard.

بیراغمز bayragh-imiz, our standard.

هفته hafta, week.

هفته‌کر hafta-niz, your week.

حضرت hazret, Excellency.

حضرت‌لی hazret-ler-i, their Excellencies.

The following are examples of the declension of noun with pronoun suffixes.

First person.

Sing.

nom. اوغلم oghl-um, my son.

gen. اوغلمک oghl-umun, of my son.

dat. اوغلمه oghl-uma, to my son.

loc. اوغلمده oghl-umda, in, on, with my son.

acc. اوغلمی oghl-um-u, my son.

abl. اوغلمدن oghl-um-dan, from my son.

Plur.

nom. اومز ev-imiz, our house.

gen. اومرک ev-imizin, of our house.

dat. اومره ev-imizi, to our house.

loc. اومرده ev-imizde, in, at, on, with our house.

acc. اومری ev-imizi, our house.

abl. اومردن ev-imizden, from our house.

Second person.

Sing.

nom. دوستک dost-un, thy friend.

gen. دوستکک dost-unun, of thy friend.

dat. دوستکه dost-una, to thy friend.

loc. دوستکده dost-unda, in, at, on, with thy friend.

acc. دوستکی dost-unu, thy friend.

abl. دوستکدن dost-undan, from thy friend.

Plur.

nom.	قلاچكز	<i>qilij-iniz</i> , your sword.
gen.	قلاچكزك	<i>qilij-inizin</i> , of your sword.
dat.	قلاچكزه	<i>qilij-iniza</i> , to your sword.
loc.	قلاچكزده	<i>qilij-inizda</i> , in, at, on, with your sword.
acc.	قلاچكزي	<i>qilij-inizi</i> , your sword.
abl.	قلاچكزدن	<i>qilij-inizdan</i> , from your sword.

Third person.

Sing.

nom.	اڭاجي	<i>aghaj-i</i> , . . . his, her, their tree.
gen.	اڭاجينك	<i>aghaj-inin</i> , of » » » »
dat.	اڭاجينه	<i>aghaj-ina</i> , to » » » »
loc.	اڭاجينده	<i>aghaj-inda</i> , in, at, on, with his, her, their tree.
acc.	اڭاجيني	<i>aghaj-ini</i> , » » » »
abl.	اڭاجيندن	<i>aghaj-indan</i> , from » » » »

Plur.

nom.	اڭاجلري	<i>aghaj-lar-i</i> , . . . his, her, their trees.
gen.	اڭاجلرينك	<i>aghaj-lar-inin</i> , of » » » »
dat.	اڭاجلرينه	<i>aghaj-lar-ina</i> , to » » » »
loc.	اڭاجلرينده	<i>aghaj-lar-inda</i> , in, at, on, with his, her, their trees.
acc.	اڭاجلريني	<i>aghaj-lar-ini</i> , » » » »
abl.	اڭاجلريندن	<i>aghaj-lar-indan</i> , . . . from » » » »

Sing.

nom.	اناسي	<i>ana-si</i> , . . . his, her, their mother.
gen.	اناسينك	<i>ana-sinin</i> , of » » » »
dat.	اناسينه	<i>ana-sina</i> , to » » » »
loc.	اناسينده	<i>ana-sinda</i> , in, at, on, with his, her, their mother.
acc.	اناسيني	<i>ana-sini</i> , » » » »
abl.	اناسيندن	<i>ana-sindan</i> , from » » » »

The possessive terminations are also added to nouns when compound, or when preceded by adjectives.

Sing.

nom.	التون بوزكم	<i>altun yuzuyum</i> , . . . my gold ring.
gen.	التون بوزكمك	<i>altun yuzuyumun</i> , of » » »
dat.	التون بوزكمه	<i>altun yuzuyume</i> , to » » »
loc.	التون بوزكمده	<i>altun yuzuyumde</i> , in, at, on, with my gold ring.
acc.	التون بوزكمى	<i>altun yuzuyumu</i> , » » »
abl.	التون بوزكمندن	<i>altun yuzuyumden</i> , . from » » »

Plur.

nom.	التون بوزكمز	<i>altun yuzuyumuz</i> , . . . our gold ring.
gen.	التون بوزكمزك	<i>altun yuzuyumuzun</i> , of » » »
dat.	التون بوزكمزه	<i>altun yuzuyumuze</i> , to » » »
loc.	التون بوزكمزده	<i>altun yuzuyumuzde</i> , in, at, on, with our gold ring.
acc.	التون بوزكمزى	<i>altun yuzuyumuzu</i> , » » »
abl.	التون بوزكمزندن	<i>altun yuzuyumuzden</i> , . from » » »

Sing.

nom.	كموش ساعتى	<i>gyumush saat-im</i> , my silver watch.
gen.	كموش ساعتىك	<i>gyumush saat-in</i> , of » » »
dat.	كموش ساعتىه	<i>gyumush saat-ime</i> , to » » »
loc.	كموش ساعتىده	<i>gyumush saat-imde</i> , in, at, on, with my silver watch.
acc.	كموش ساعتىمى	<i>gyumush saat-imi</i> , . . . my silver watch.
abl.	كموش ساعتىمدن	<i>gyumush saat-imden</i> , from » » »

Plur.

nom.	كموش ساعتىمىز	<i>gyumush saat-imiz</i> , our silver watch.
gen.	كموش ساعتىمىزك	<i>gyumush saat-imizin</i> , of » » »
dat.	كموش ساعتىمىزه	<i>gyumush saat-imize</i> , to » » »
loc.	كموش ساعتىمىزده	<i>gyumush saat-imizde</i> , in, at, on, with our silver watch.

acc. کومش ساعتی *gyumush sā'at-imizi*, . . . our silver watch.
 abl. کومش ساعتیدن *gyumush sā'at-mizden*, from » » »

The word *سو* *su*, water, takes the letter *ی* (never *ن* or *س*) before all suffixes beginning with a vowel:

Sing.

nom. *سویم* *su-yum*, my water.
 gen. *سوبک* *su-yun*, thy water.
 dat. *صیبی* *su-yu*, his water.

§ 9. The Persian relative pronoun and conjunction *که* *ki*, is sometimes used as a relative pronoun:

اودر *o dur ki gyurdum*, it is he whom I saw.
 اول کشی که اوندان آقچه آلدیم *ol kishi ki ondan aqcha aldim*,
 that person from whom I re-
 ceived the money.

This way of speaking or writing is however considered vulgar and foreign.

§ 10. THE RELATIVE PRONOMINAL SUFFIX *کی* *ki*.

There is, properly speaking, no relative pronoun in Turkish. The avoidance of the use of the relative pronoun is the great distinction between Turkish, and the Arian and Semitic languages. The numerous active and passive participles of the Turkish verb obviate the necessity of a relative:

کلان آدم *gelen adam*, the man who comes, the coming man.

حاغران بودر *chaghiran bu dir*, it is this one who calls.
 سدیکم دوست *sevdiyim dost*, the friend whom I love.

کلان آلا *gelen alay*, the regiment that comes, that is coming, or the coming regiment.

- چاغران صابط *chaghiran zābit*, the officer who calls
or who is calling, or the calling officer.
- سویلیان دوستنر *suweyleyen dostunuz*, your speaking
friend, your friend who speaks.
- اوپجه الدیغم کیمنه *aqcha aldighim kimse*, the person
from whom I received the money.
- یازدیغم کتاب *yazdighim kitab*, the book which I
wrote or have written.
- صاندیغیز آت *sattighiniz at*, the horse which you
have sold, or sell.
- بیدکلری گمی *bindikleri gemi*, the ship in which
they embarked.
- صاينون الدیغی او *satun aldighi ev*, the house which
he bought.
- سلام ووردیگمز صابطلر *selam verdıymız zābitlar*, the officers
whom we saluted.
- اوکهدیگمز درسلر *ugrendıymız dersler*, the lessons which
you have learnt.
- کیدیگم اوی کوردکمی *gıttıyım evi gurdunmu*, have you seen
the house I went to?
- کوردیگم دشمن *gurdıyım dushman*, the enemy whom
I saw.
- اعلایان حوجق *aghlayan chojuq*, the crying child,
the child who cries.
- کسان قلیج *keseñ qılıj*, the cutting sword, the
sword that cuts, etc. etc.

This subject will be more fully treated under the active
and passive participles.

§ 11. THE RELATIVE PRONOUN کی *ki*.

کی *ki* is of Tartar origin and has no parallel in English.

Possessive pronouns in the genitive case when followed by کی *ki*, acquire an idea of particularization.

This combination becomes substantive, and indicates that which belongs to the substantive, or pronoun:

بنمکی *benim-ki*, that which is mine.

سنمکی *sanin-ki*, that which is thine.

اونمکی *onun-ki*, that which is his, hers.

دوست *dost*, the friend.

دوستک *dostun*, of the friend.

دوستمکی *dostun-ki*, the one which belongs to the friend.

برادر *birāder*, the brother.

برادرم *birāderin*, of the brother.

برادرمکی *birāderin-ki*, the one which belongs to the brother.

But if the substantive is in the locative it indicates that which exists in the object named:

انامدہ کی محبت *anamda-ki mahabbet*, the love, that exists or that is in the possession of my mother, which my mother has.

اناسندہ کی مرحمت *anasinda-ki, merhamet*, the pity, or mercy, that exists, that is in the possession of his mother, which his mother has.

When this relative pronominal suffix کی *ki*, gives the idea of particularization only, it expresses «own», «very own»:

بنمکی *benim-ki*, mine, my own, very own.

سنمکی *sanin-ki*, thine, thy » » »

انمکی *onun-ki*, his, his own, his very own, hers, her own, her very own.

ہمیںمکی *bizim-ki*, ours, our own, our very own.

سزیمکی *sizin-ki*, yours, your own, your very own.

انلرمکی *onların-ki*, theirs, their own, their very own.

ہونمکی *bunun-ki*, his, hers, own, very own, belongs to this.

شونكى *shunun-ki*, his, hers, own, very own, belongs to that.

بونلركى *bunlarin-ki*, } to those, belongs to theirs, their
شونلركى *shunlarin-ki*, } own.

كى *ki*, is sometimes used in combination with a noun of time, or place. It never changes its pronunciation in accordance with the rules of euphony:

بو گونكى امر *bu gyun-ki emir*, today's orders
بو صاباھكى يemek *bu sabah-ki yemek*, this morning's food.
يوقارىكى *yugari-ki*, the one aloft.
اشاغىكى *ashaghi-ki*, the one below.
اليروكى *ileru-ki*, the one before.
گيروكى *geru-ki*, the one behind, etc. etc.

Sometimes the locative preposition' is used with a noun of place:

يوقارىداكى *yugarıda-ki*, that which is aloft.
گيرىداكى *gerıda-ki*, that which is behind.
اشاغىداكى *ashagıda-ki*, that which is below etc. etc.

When the pronoun is used as a substantive it is regularly declined like a substantive:

Sing.

nom. بىمكى *benim-ki*, mine.
gen. بىمكىن *benim-kinin*, of mine.
dat. بىمكىنە *benim-kine*, to mine.
loc. بىمكىندە *benim-kinde*, in, at, on, with mine.
acc. بىمكىنى *benim-kini*, mine.
abl. بىمكىندىن *benim-kindən*, from mine.

Plur.

nom. بىمكىلر *benim-kiler*, mine, my own possessions.
gen. بىمكىلرک *benim-ki-lerin*, of mine, of my own possessions.

- dat. بنمکیلر *benim-ki-lere*, to mine, to my possessions.
 loc. بنمکیلرده *benim-ki-lerde*, in, at, on, with, by mine, my possessions.
 acc. بنمکیلری *benim-ki-leri*, mine, my own possessions.
 abl. بنمکیلردن *benim-ki-lerden*, from mine, from my own possessions.

Examples of the suffix کی *ki* with a demonstrative power:

- اوده کی قاری *evde ki qari*, the woman who is in the house.
 اشاغیده کی اوطه *ashaghida ki oda*, the room downstairs, the lower room.
 دلدہ کی سر *dilde ki sirr*, the secret which is in the heart.
 المده کی قلج *elimde ki qilij*, the sword which is in my hand:
 یوقریده کی پنجره *yuqarida ki penjere*, the window which is above.
 باندہ کی قلج *yanimda ki qilij*, the sword that is near me.
 کندونکی لره کلدی *kendinin-ki-lere geldi*, he came to his own.
 وکندونکی لر *ve kendinin-ki-ler*, and his very own.

It has also the power of particularization and appropriation when it is used without any preposition to specify any particular time:

- دکل لکن صباحی کون *bu gyun digil (diyil) lakin sabah-ki gyun*, not to-day, but the day which is to-morrow, i. e. to-morrow.
 اوبرکی کون می کلدک *o bir-ki gyun-mi, geldin*, was it the other day you came?
 بو کونکی خبر *bu gyun-ki khaber*, to-day's news.

دو کی مکتوب *dun-ki mektub*, yesterday's letter.
 بو گونکی گون *bu gyun-ki gyun*, to-day, this day, etc.

§ 12. INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS.

The interrogative pronoun *ne*, what? is also a substantive and it is declined:

Sing.

nom.	نه <i>ne</i> , what?
gen.	نه نك <i>nenin</i> , of what?
dat.	نه نيه <i>neye</i> , to what?
loc.	نه نه ده <i>nede</i> , in what?
acc.	نه نه يي <i>neyi</i> , what?
abl.	نه نه دن <i>neden</i> , from what?

Plur.

nom.	نه لر <i>neler</i> , what things?
gen.	نه لر ك <i>nelerin</i> , of what things?
dat.	نه لر ه <i>nelere</i> , to what things?
acc.	نه لر ي <i>neleri</i> , what things?
loc.	نه لر ده <i>nelerde</i> , by what things?
abl.	نه لر دن <i>nelerden</i> , from what things?

Examples:

نه وار <i>ne vvar</i> ,	what is the matter?
نه وار <i>ne vvar</i> }	what is there, what is there not? i. e.
نه يوق <i>ne yoq</i> }	what is the news?
نه نه ك <i>neye geldin</i> ,	{ why did you come?
	{ what are you come for?
نه استرسينز <i>ne istersiniz</i> ,	what do you want?
نه دي <i>adi ne dir</i> }	{ what is its name
	{ what do you call it } ?

نه دهرسين *ne dersin* } what do you say?
 نه دهرورسين *ne deyorsin* }
 نه قدر، نقدر *negodar, naqodar*, how much?
 نه ايچون *ne ichun* } why, wherefore?
 نه نيچون *nichun* }

When نه *ne*, is followed by a substantive it becomes an adjective and is indeclinable:

نه آدم دير *ne adam dir*, what man is it, is he?
 نه فايدہ چکدک *ne fāide chekkin*, what benefit did you derive?
 نه ممنون آدم *ne memnūn adam*, what a happy man!

When نه *ne*, takes the possessive terminations, the *s* is omitted in writing though it is retained in the pronunciation:

نه قدر، نقدر *negadar, naqadar*, how much?
 نه درلو *ne turlu*, what sort? these two phrases are either substantive or adjective.

§ 13. The interrogative pronoun *qanghi, hangi*. Which? is both substantive and adjective. When used as an adjective it precedes the substantive and is indeclinable:

نه غي صابط *hanghi zābit*, which officer?
 نه غي طابور *hanghi tabur*, which battalion?
 نه غي آدم *hanghi adam*, which man?
 نه غي قاري *hanghi qari*, which woman?

When it is joined to the possessive suffixes it becomes declinable:

نه غيسي *hanghisi*, which one of them?
 نه غيکتر *hanghiniz*, which one of you?
 بلمم نه غيسي *bilmem hanghisi dir*, I know not which of them it is?
 بلمز نه غيسي *bilmez hanghisi dir*, he knows not which of them it is?
 نه غيهمز *hanghimiz*, which one of us?
 نه غيهرکتر *hanghilariniz*, which ones of you?

کښایلی *hanghilarî*, which ones, or one of them?
 کښایسینې الورسکڼ *hanghisini alirsiniz*, which of them will you
 take?

نصل *nasl*.

§ 14. نصل *nasl* is an interrogative of quality, or
 manner, and means: How? in what way?
 what sort? what kind? however, how!.
 Sometimes it is an indefinite pronoun:

نصل سن *nasl sin* } how are you?
 نصل سکر *nasl siniz* }

نصل مترجم در *nasl muterjim dir*, what sort of a trans-
 lator is he?

نصل ترجمان در *nasl terjumân dir*, what kind of an In-
 terpreter is he?

بو نصل کبغیت در *bu nasl keyfiyyet dir*, what sort of a busi-
 ness is this?

§ 15. The words کیم *kim*, 'who', نه *ne*, 'what', ځنځی *hanghi*,
 'which', and نصل *nasl*, 'how', are also indefinite pronouns.
 They then take هر *her*, ever, before them:

هر کیم *her kim*, whoever.

هر نه *her ne*, whatever.

هر ځنځی *her hanghi*, whichever.

هر نصل *her nasl*, howsoever.

These take the expletive ايسه *ise* after them. This verbal
 inflection is very much used in Turkish composition, being
 often an expletive, but giving a peculiar force to the language.

هر کیم کلور ايسه *her kim gelir-isa*, whoever comes,
 whoever may come.

هر نه اولور ايسه اولورسون *her ne olur-isa-olsun*, whatever hap-
 pen, let it happen.

هرقنغی ایسه *her hanghi-isa*, whichever it may or should be.

نصل ایدر ایسه ایتسین *nas-leder-isa-etsin*, let him do in any way he can.

§ 16. When ایسه *isa*, is the third person singular of the present subjunctive of the defective verb ایمک *imek*, 'to be' and often has no exact verbal signification; but rather expresses 'as for', or 'as regards':

بو بربر ایسه *bu berber isa*, as for this barber.

بو نفر ایسه *bu nefer isa*, as for this private soldier.

بن ایسه *ben isa*, as for me.

سن ایسه *san isa*, as for (thee) you.

او ایسه *o isa*, as for him, her, it, etc. etc.

§ 17. INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

The indefinite pronouns هر *her*, each, every, یوق *yoq*, no, not, nothing, هیچ *hich*, none, no one, not any, nothing کیمسه *kimse*, some one; (with a negative) nobody.

کیمسه *kimesne*, no one, except هر *her*, every.

از *az*, few, little, بر از *bir az*, a little.

These indefinite pronouns, may be either adjectives or substantives.

هر کس *her kes*, every one.

هر کیمسه *her kimse*, any, any one.

هر کشی *her kishi*, each one.

بر شی یوق *bir shey yoq*, there (is) nothing.

کیمسه یوق *kimse yoq*, there (is) no one.

هیچ کلمدی *hich gelmedi* } no body, or no one

هیچ کیمسه کلمدی *hich kimse gelmedi* } has come.

هیچ بر شی یمدم *hich 'bir shey yemedim*. I have eaten nothing.

هیچ کیمسه یازمادی *hiç kimse yazmadi*, no one wrote, no body has written.

سپیده اکمک یوق *sepedde ekmek yoy*, there (is) no bread in the basket.

اومده کیمسه یوق *evimde kimse yoy*, there (is) no one, nobody, in my house.

هیچ بیر شی ایشتمدم *hiç bir şey işitmedim*. I have heard nothing at all.

هیچ بر وفنده کیمسه کورمشدر *allahı hiç bir waqqitta kimse geurmemiş dir*, no one has seen God at any time. Literally, God, at any one time, any one has not seen.

هیچ گتمدی *hiç gitmedi*, he did not go at all.

§ 18. The Turks usually insert a word meaning «piece» or «unit» between a numeral and the noun it qualifies.

Examples :

بیر پاره تکنه *bir para tekne*, one piece ship = a ship.

ایکی قطعه کتب *iki quta kitab*, two piece book = 2 books.

اوج دانه انجو *uch tane inji*, three grain pearl = three pearls.

§ 19. ARABIC PLURALS.

The Arabic plural has two great divisions called:

جمع سالم *jem-i salim*, sound, or regular plural, and
جمع مکسر *jem-i mukesser*, broken, or irregular plural. The regular plural is subdivided into two kinds.

جمع مذکر *jem-i muzekker*, «plural masculine». This is called sound or regular because the order of the letters singular is not changed in the plural; certain letters are affixed, namely *ون* *un*, in the nominative and *ین* *in* in the oblique case.

Masculine sing.

مؤمن *mū'min*, believer.

Plur.

مؤمنين *mū'min-īn*, believers, oblique case.

مؤمنون *mū'min-ūn*, » nominative case.

Sing.

عالم *ālim*, learned.

Plur.

عالمون *ālim-ūn*, learned, nominative.

عالمين *ālim-īn*, learned, oblique.

If the masculine noun end in the letter **ي** *yi*, that letter is changed into **و** in the plural:

Sing.

ساقى *sāqī*, a cupbearer.

Plur.

ساقون *sāqūn*, cupbearers.

The feminine regular plural of Arabic nouns is formed by adding the syllable **ات** *at* to the feminine singular:

Sing.

معلمة *mutellime*, teacher (*f*).

Plur.

معلمات *mutellimat*, teachers.

Sing.

مؤمنة *mū'mine*, a believer (*f*).

Plur.

مؤمنات *mū'mināt*, believers.

Sing.

حركة *hereke*, movement (f).

Plur.

حركات *herekyāt*, movements (f)

Sing.

عادة *āde*, custom (f).

Plur.

عادات *ādāt*, customs (f).

The irregular, or broken Arabic plural is so called because the order of the letters is not kept. This is disarranged:

- (1) by adding one or more letters at the beginning or end, or in the middle of the noun singular,
- (2) by omitting one or more letters from the singular, and
- (3) by changing the vowels only.

Example of the

(1) Sing.

رجل *rajol*, man.

Plur.

رجال *rijal*, men.

Example of the

(2) Sing.

رسول *resul*, an apostle, a messenger.

Plur.

رسل *rusul*, apostles, messengers.

Example of the

(3) Sing.

أسد *esed*, Lion.

Plur.

أسد *usud*, Lions.

The broken plurals, جمع مكسر *jem-i mukesser*, are also divided, thus ~

- (1) جمع العلة *jem' ul-qille*, «the diminutive» which is applied to numbers from 3 to 9 and
- (2) جمع الكثرة *jem' ul-kesre*, «the multiplicate» which denotes any number from 10 to infinity.

The first has four different forms.

- (1) *أفيلة* *efīla*, as *أردية* *ardiya*, «cloaks» from the sing. *ردا* *ridā*, a cloak.
- (2) *فيلة* *fīla*, as *فتية* *fitya*, «young men», from the sing. *فتى* *fata*, a young man.
- (3) *أفعل* *afīal*, as *أضلع* *adlū*, «ribs» from the sing *ضلع* *dil*, a rib.
- (4) *أفعال* *afīāl*, as *أظفار* *azfar*, «nails of the fingers» from the sing. *ظفر* *zifr* a nail of the finger.

§ 20. The broken plurals جمع المكسر *jem' ul-mukesser*, are so irregular and various that no rule would help the student. They must be learnt by practice:

sing. بيت <i>beyt</i> , a house.	plur. آبار <i>abyar</i> , wells.
plur. بيوت <i>buyūt</i> , houses.	sing. درب <i>derb</i> , a road.
sing. نار <i>nar</i> , a fire.	plur. دروب <i>durūb</i> , roads, streets.
plur. نيران <i>nīran</i> , fires.	sing. سيف <i>seyf</i> , sword.
sing. كتاب <i>kitāb</i> , a book.	plur. سيوف <i>suyūf</i> , swords.
plur. كتب <i>kutub</i> , books.	sing. ضيف <i>zayf</i> , a guest.
sing. سور <i>sūr</i> , a wall.	plur. ضيوف <i>ziyūf</i> , guests.
plur. أصوار <i>aswar</i> , walls.	sing. مركب <i>merkeb</i> , a ship.
sing. بئر <i>bīr</i> , a well.	plur. مراكب <i>merakib</i> , ships, etc.

It will be seen from the above examples that the irregular, or broken Arabic plurals used in Turkish are of numerous forms. They are not obtained by adding a letter or letters, vowel or consonant to the end of the singular, but by varying the vowel or vowels of the word and by adding letters, consonant or vowel, as the case may be, before, between, or after the letters of the singular.

§ 21. THE PERSIAN PLURALS.

The formation of the Persian plurals:

- (1) names of human beings, and of larger animals form their plural by adding the termination ان *ān* to the sing.

sing.	مرد	<i>mord</i> , a man.
plur.	مردان	<i>mordān</i> , men.
sing.	زن	<i>zen</i> , a woman.
plur.	زنان	<i>zenān</i> , women.
sing.	پادشاه	<i>pādishāh</i> , a king.
plur.	پادشاهان	<i>pādishahān</i> , kings.
sing.	کنیزک	<i>kenīzek</i> , a damsel.
plur.	کنیزکان	<i>kenīzekyan</i> , damsels.
sing.	دل فریب	<i>dil firīb</i> , an allurer of hearts.
plur.	دل فریبان	<i>dil firībān</i> , allurers of hearts.
sing.	اسب	<i>esp</i> , a horse.
plur.	اسبان	<i>espan</i> , horses.

(2) Names of lifeless things form their plural in Persian by adding *ها* *ha* to the singular, sometimes also *ان* *ān*:

sing.	در	<i>der</i> , a door.	plur.	روزها	<i>rūzhā</i> , days.
plur.	درها	<i>derhā</i> , doors.	sing.	مور	<i>mūr</i> , an ant.
sing.	روز	<i>rūz</i> , a day.	plur.	مورها	<i>mūrha</i> , ants.

(3) The names of all irrational animals may take this form also.

sing.	اسب	<i>esp</i> , a horse.	
plur.	اسبان	<i>espan</i> , horses.	
sing.	شتر	<i>shutur</i> , a camel.	
plur.	شتران	<i>shuturan</i> , etc.	} camels.
	شترها	<i>shuturha</i> .	
sing.	قلم	<i>qalam</i> , a pen.	
plur.	قلمها	<i>qalamhā</i> , pens.	
sing.	درخت	<i>dirakht</i> , a tree.	
plur.	درختها	<i>dirakhta</i>	} trees.
	درختان	<i>dirakhtan</i>	

When *ان* *an*, is added to a noun ending in the letter * *he*, this * *he*, is converted into *ك* *ge*.

sing.	فرشته	<i>firishte</i> , an angel.
plur.	فرشتگان	<i>firishtegān</i> , angels.

Sometimes the *he* is retained and the syllable **كان** added as a separate termination.

sing. **مرد** *murde*, dead. plur. **مردگان** *murdegān*, the dead.

When to such nouns the syllable **ها** *ha* is added, the final *he* disappears:

sing. **نامه** *nāma*, a book or a letter.

plur. **نامه‌ها** *namahā*, books or letters.

When the syllable **ان** *an* is added to nouns ending in *elif*, or *vau*, the letter **ی** *ye* must be inserted to avoid the hiatus:

sing. **دانا** *dana*, a sage.

plur. **دانان** *danayan*, sages.

sing. **پری‌رو** *perī rū*, fairy faced.

plur. **پری‌روان** *perī rūyan*, fairy faced ones.

CHAPTER XV.

THE VERB, **فعل** *ful*.

Turkish verbs are of two kinds:

1 simple.

2 composite.

All verbs of Turkish origin are simple.

The composites are formed by prefixing a noun, or adjective to one of the auxiliary verbs.

The following are the auxiliaries.

انتمک *etmek* } to do.
ایلمک *eylemek* }

اولمک *olmaq*, to be. } to do, to perform.
فعلک or **فعلک** *qılmaq* }

بیورمک *buyurmaq*, v. n. to exercise authority, act as master, give orders; to say, to do, any thing; used when speaking of or to a superior:

نه بيوردunuz, what did you say?

ايچرو بيورونۇز icheri buyurunuz, pray walk in.

بيورون buyurun, I beg you! do me the favour!

The infinitives of all Turkish verbs end either in **mek** or **maq**, according as the root is soft or hard:

سومك *sevmek*, to love. **اويومق** *uyumak*, to sleep.

كلمك *gelmek*, to come. **قالمق** *qalmak*, to rise, to get up.

Both are conjugated in the same way. The root is the second person singular of the imperative:

سومك *sevmek*, to love, infinitive.

سو *sev*, love thou, imperative.

قالمق *qalmak*, to rise, to get up, infinitive.

قالق *qalq*, rise thou, imperative.

The interpolation of one or more letters between the root of the verb and the infinitive termination gives to the verb totally different significations.

§ 1. The Passive verb (**فعل مجهول** *fi'li mejhul*) is formed by adding the letter **ل** *lam* to the root:

سولمك *sev-il-mek*, to be loved. When the root of a simple verb ends in a vowel, or in the letter **ل**, it forms its passive by adding **ن** instead of **ل**:

Infinitive **المق** *almaq*, to take.

Imperative **ال** *al*, take thou.

Passive **ال.ن.مق** *al-in-maq*, to be taken.

Infinitive **اوومق** *oqumak*, to read.

Imperative **اوو** *oqu*, read thou.

Passive **اوو.ن.مق** *oqu-n-maq*, to be read.

Infinitive **قومق** *qDMAK*, to put.

Imperative **قو** *qo*, put thou.

Passive **قو.ن.مق** *qo-n-maq*, to be put.

§ 2. The transitive or causative verb (فعل متعدی *fi'l-i muta'addi*) is formed by the insertion of the syllable در *dir* between the root and the termination:

سودر مک *sev-dir-mek*, to cause to love.

تپدر مک *tep-dir-mek*, to cause to kick.

طاپدر مق *tap-dir-maq*, to cause to worship.

When the root of the active verb has more than one syllable, and ends in ل *lam*, in ر *ri*, or in a vowel, its causative is formed by the insertion of ت *te* instead of در *dir*:

Infin. اوقومق *oqumaq*, to read.

اوقت مق *ogu-t-maq*, to cause to, or let read.

Infin. حاغرمق *chaghirmaq*, to call.

حاغرت مق *chaghir-t-maq*, to cause, make, or let call.

Infin. سويلمك *suweylemek*, to speak.

سويلت مك *suweyle-t-mek*, to cause, let, or make speak.

There are a few verbs ending in consonants which insert the letter ر *ri* instead of ت *te*:

اوجرمق *uchurmaq*, to cause, make, or let fly.

دوشرمك *dushurmek*, to cause, make, or let fall.

فاجرمق *qachirmaq*, to cause, make, or let flee or escape.

چيقرامق *chiqarmaq*, to cause, make, or let come, or bring out.

By the insertion of the letter ن *n*, the indeterminate form of the verb is formed. It is called فعل لازم *fi'l-i lāzim*:

سوينمك *sev-in-mek*, to love one's self, to please one's self.

باقينمق *baq-in-maq*, to look about, here and there, in a perplexed or confused manner.

صاقينمق *saq-in-maq*, to keep one's self free, safe; to get out of harm's way, to be careful.

روبە كينمك *rubā, urubā, giyin-mek*, to put clothes on one's self.

قاشنمق *qash-in-maq*, to scratch one's self.

قوشانمق *qilij qushan-maq*, to gird a sword on to one's

self (this is done by the Sultans and other Eastern potentates on accession, and is equivalent to the coronation of Christian kings).

روبندلریمی کیندیم *ruba, uruba larimi giyineyim*, let me put on my clothes.

عسکر روبندلریمی کیندیم *asker ruba, uruba larimi giyineyim*, let me put on my (military) uniform.

§ 3. The reciprocal verb, فعل مشارکت *fil-i mushāreket*, is formed by the insertion of the letter ش *shin*, between the root and the termination:

سوشمک *sev-ish-mek*, to love one another.

گوروشمک *gyur-ush-mek*, to see one another, and converse in a friendly way one with another.

بوروشمق *bozushmaq*, to quarrel one with another.

§ 4. THE NEGATIVE VERB, فعل نعی *fil-i nefy*.

The negative verb is formed by the insertion of the letter م between root and termination having the vowel (ـ) *ustun*.

باقمامق *bagmamaq*, not to see.

اتنمق *at-ma-maq*, not to throw.

یازمامق *yaz-ma-maq*, not to write.

سوممک *sev-me-mek*, not to love, etc.

§ 5. THE IMPOTENTIAL VERB, ممکنسز *munkinsiz*.

The impotential verb which expresses inability or impossibility is formed from the negative by adding to the root of the verb the letter ه *he*, or sometimes the letter ا *elif* before the letters م *me* or ما *mā* of the negative verb.

سوء ميک *seve-me-mek*, not to be able to love.

سويلي ميک *suweyle-ye-me-mek*, not to be able to speak.

ياز ميک *yaza-ma-maq*, not to be able to write.

الامق *al-a-mamaq*, not to be able to take, etc.

If the root of the verb is the letter ت *te*, this letter becomes د *dal*, in the impotential verb:

کيتمک *gitmek*, to go.

کيده ميک *gide-memek*, not to be able to go.

ايت مک *etmek*, to do.

ايد ميک *ede-me-mek*, not to be able to do.

§ 6. THE VERB OF POSSIBILITY OR ABILITY ممکن *mumkin*.

This is formed by the verb بلمک *bilmek*, to know, added to principal verb in the third person singular of the optative:

ايد بلمک *ede bilmek*, to be able to do (any thing).

ايد بيليريم *ede bilirim*, I can, am able, to do.

نازه بلمک *yaza bilmek*, to be able to write.

اكا نازه بيليرسينز *ana yaza bilirsiniz*, you can, or are able to write to him.

کله بلمک *gele bilmek*, to be able to come.

اومه کله بيليرسينز افنديم *evime gele bilirsiniz efendim*, you can come to my house, sir.

دوستکړه کده بيليرسينز *doştunuza gide bilirsiniz*, you can go to your friend.

انکله برابر کله بيليرسينز *aninile beraber gele bilirsiniz*, you can come alone with him, you are able to come with him, etc.

§ 7. Eight verbs (four active and four passive) are considered by Turkish grammarians to be the auxiliary verbs:

Active	{	أَيْتَمَكَ <i>itmek</i>	{	to do.
		أَيْلَمَكَ <i>eylemek</i>		
		فَيْلَمَكَ <i>qilmaq</i>		
		بُيُورِمَكَ <i>buyurmaq</i>		
Passive	{	أُولِمَكَ <i>olmaq</i>	{	to be done, to be made.
		أُولُنِمَكَ <i>olunmaq</i>		
		قِيلِمَكَ <i>qılınmaq</i>		
		بُيُورُلِمَكَ <i>buyurulmaq</i>		

When either an Arabic, Persian or Turkish noun or adjective is prefixed to them, the noun or adjective remains unchanged through all the moods and tenses:

حَاضِرْ أُنْثَمَكَ *hâzır etmek*, to prepare, to make ready.

رَاضِیْ أُنْثَمَكَ *râzı etmek*, to satisfy, to content.

حَاضِرْ أُولِمَكَ *hâzır olmaq*, to be ready, to be present.

In addition to the foregoing there are some other verbs that may be considered as auxiliaries:

يَأْكُلْ طَبَاكُ *dayaq yemek*, to receive a flogging.

يَمْنِیْ أُنْثَمَكَ *yemin etmek*,
أَنْدَ اِثْمَمَكَ *and ıchmek*, } to take an oath.

وَجُودُهُ كَلَمَكَ *vuvujuda gelmek*, to come into existence,
to be born.

اِلْتِیْفَاتُ اُنْثَمَكَ *iltıfat eylemek*,
اِلْتِیْفَاتُ اُنْثَمَكَ *iltıfat etmek*, } to take notice of, to
show attentions.

أُولُهُ یَلَمَكَ *ola bilmek*, to be possible.

اِیْیَلِکْ کُورَمَكَ *iyilik gyurmek*, to receive acts of kindness.

تَشْرِیْفْ بَیُورِمَكَ *teshrîf buyurmaq*, to visit, to confer honour.

§ 8. Impersonal verbs are expressed in Turkish either by the third person sing. of the passive aorist, or by the third person plur. of the active verb:

دِنَر *denir*,
دِنَر *»*,
دِنِرْلَر *derler*, } it is said.

§ 9. VERBS DERIVED FROM NOUNS AND ADJECTIVES.

There are many verbs in Turkish derived from nouns and adjectives formed by the addition of the following forms:

{ لَمَكْ <i>lemek.</i>	{ لَنْمَقْ <i>lanmaq.</i>
{ لَمَقْ <i>lamaq.</i>	{ لَشْمَكْ <i>leshmek.</i>
	{ لَشْمَقْ <i>lashmaq.</i>

- كَيْجِه *geyje*, the night.
 كَيْجَهْلَمَكْ *geyjelemek*, to become night.
 اَرْزُو *arzu*, wish, desire.
 اَرْزُولَمَقْ *arzulamaq*, to wish, to desire.
 شُبْهَه *shuphe*, doubt, suspicion.
 شُبْهَهْلَنْمَكْ *shuphelenmek*, to become suspicious.
 اِخْتِيَارْ *ikhtiyar*, old, aged.
 اِخْتِيَارْلَنْمَكْ *ikhtiyarlanmaq*, to become old, aged.
 طُوز *tuz*, salt.
 طُوزْلَنْمَقْ *tuzlanmaq*, to become salted.
 اَوْ *ev*, a house.
 اَوْلَمَكْ *evlenmek*, to set up a house, to marry.
 كُوزُلْ *gyuzel*, pretty.
 كُوزُلْلَنْمَكْ *gyuzellenmek*, to become pretty.
 دَرِيْنْ *derin*, deep.
 دَرِيْنْلَنْمَكْ *derinlenmek*, to become deep.
 دُوسْتْ *dost*, a friend.
 دُوسْتَلَشْمَقْ *dostlashmaq*, to become friends with one another.
 اَزْ *az*, little in quantity, few in number.
 اَزَالَمَقْ *azalmaq*, to become lower, less.
 كُچُوكْ *kuchuk*, small.
 كُچُوكْلَمْكْ *kuchulmek*, to become small.
 اَغْرِیْ *egri*, bent, crooked, slanting.
 اَغْرِیْلَمْكْ *egrilmek*, to become bent, etc.

- اینجه *inje*, thin (in solidity).
 اینجلمک *injelenmek*, to grow, become thin.
 چوق *choq*, much, many, great.
 چوغالمق *choghalmag*, to increase, become many.
 طوغری *doghru*, straight.
 طوغرولتمق *doghrultmaq*, to straighten.
 سرت *sert*, strong, pungent, violent, vehement.
 سرتلمک *sertlemek*, to become strong.
 کنج *genj*, young.
 کنجلمک *genjelmek*, to grow young.
 کور *kyur*, blind, blunt.
 کورلنمک *kyurlenmek*, to become blind, or blunt, etc.

§ 10. To express idiomatically the repetition and continuation of the action implied by the verb, the Turks employ the following verbs.

- کلمک *gelmek*, to come.
 کورمک *gyurmek*, to see.
 دانمق *yatmaq*, to lie down, to go, to sleep.
 طورمق *durmaq*, to stay, to remain, to stop, to halt.
 اولنه کلمک *ola gelmek* } to be often.
 اولنه کورمک *ola gyurmek* } to be repeatedly.
 دنه کلمک *deye gelmek*, } to be often saying.
 دنه کورمک *deye gyurmek*, }
 انده کورمک *ede gyurmek*, to be in the habit of doing.
 کیدوب یاتور *gidub yatur*, he is constantly going.
 واروب کلمک *varub gelmek*, to frequent.
 یازوب طورمق *yazup durmaq*, to be always writing.
 ییوب طورورسن *yeyup durursin*, you are (thou art) always eating.
 یاتوب طورور *yatup durur*, he is always lying down.
 یازر یاتیم *sabahadek yazar yatarim*. I will keep
 on writing until tomorrow morning.

بۇتۇن گۈن سوغاقتا گەزەر يۈرۈر *butun gyun soqaqda gazer yurur*,
he is walking all day long in the street.

§ 11. Verbs denoting beginning of an action are expressed as follows:

اولماق *olmaq*, to be, to become.
باشلاماق *bashlamaq*, to commence, to begin.

Examples:

اخشام اوليور *akhsham (aksham) oliyor*, it is getting late,
(lit.) evening it becomes.

قارانلىق اوليور *qaranliq oliyor*, it is getting dark, (lit.)
darkness it is becoming.

قوشلق وقتى *qushluq vaqti* } the time of birds, i. e. the
early morning.

يازماغە باشلدى *yazmagha bashladi*, he began to write, (lit.)
to write he began.

قالقماغە باشليورلر *qalqmagha bashligorler*, they are beginning to
get up, (lit.) to get up they are beginning.

سومكە باشلدىم *sevmeye bashladim*. I began to love.

گولمە باشلدى *gyulmeye bashladi*, he began to laugh.

يىمكە باشلادىلار *yemeye bashladilar*, they began to eat.

§ 12. The following expressions are idiomatic:

قەرنم اچدىر *qarnim ajdir*, { I am hungry, (lit.) my
قەرنم اچدىر *qarnim achdir*, { stomach is hungry.
اشتەھام وار *ishtiham var*, I have an appetite, (lit.)
my appetite (is) existent.

اچلىق جىيەرىم كىباب ايلدى *ajliq jiyerim kebab eyledi*, I am
dying with hunger, (lit.) hunger my liver
has roasted.

گۈنۈلۈم ىستەر *gyunulim ister*, I wish, (lit.) my heart desires.
جان وگۈنۈلدىن *jān-u-gyunulden*, willingly, with all one's
heart and soul, (lit.) soul and heart from.

کوکلسز	<i>gyunulus</i> , meek, lowly of heart, (lit.) heartless.
کوکل بولاتنیسی	<i>gyunul-bulantisi</i> , sickness, nausea, (lit.) the heart turbidness.
کوکلی اولماق	<i>gyunulu-olmaq</i> , to have a desire, to have an inclination, to have a heart, (lit.) his heart to be.
کوکلنی یاپماق	<i>gyunulunu-yapmaq</i> , to persuade (one) to obtain his consent (lit.) the heart of him to make.
کولباسدی	<i>kyulbasdi</i> , a steak or chop grilled, (lit.) ashes pressed it.
صوسوزم	<i>susuzum</i> , I am thirsty, (lit.) water without I am.
طریق اتمق	<i>dayaq atmaq</i> , to flog, (lit.) a thrashing, beating to throw.
طریق یمک	<i>dayaq yemek</i> , to be beaten, (lit.) a thrashing, beating to eat.
ضرر یوق	<i>zarar yoq!</i> (interj.) never mind! no matter, (lit.) harm, damage there is not.
ضرب سکه	<i>darbi-sikke</i> , the coining of money, (lit.) striking of coin.

CHAPTER XVI.

FORMATIONS, OR DERIVATIONS OF THE TURKISH VERB.

Some grammarians give 23 and others 25 formations or derivations of the Turkish verb, but according to the best authorities (Sir James Redhouse included) there are 36 which are divided into 12 determinate, 12 indeterminate, and 12 reciprocal. The original Turkish verb by regular derivation

forms itself into a system of 12 affirmative, 12 negative, and 12 impotential verbs. The following table contains the second person sing. of the imperative of each form of the verb.

ACTIVE.

CLASSES	Trans or Intrans Determinate.	Trans. or Intrans Indeterminate.	Intransitive Reciprocal.	
Affirmative.	Simple.	سو <i>sev</i> , love.	سوی <i>sevin</i> , love one's self.	سوی <i>sevis</i> , love one another.
	Causative. (Permissive).	سودر <i>sevdır</i> , make, or let love.	سودر <i>sevindır</i> , make love one's self.	سودر <i>sevisdir</i> , make one another love.
Negative.	Simple.	سوما <i>sevme</i> , love not.	سوما <i>sevinme</i> , love not one's self.	سوما <i>sevisme</i> , love not one another.
	Causative. (Permissive).	سودرما <i>sevdırme</i> , make, or let not love.	سودرما <i>sevindırme</i> , make not one's self love.	سودرما <i>sevisdirme</i> , make not one another love.
Impotential.	Simple.	سوما <i>sevme</i> , be unable to love.	سوما <i>sevinme</i> , be unable to love one's self.	سوما <i>sevisme</i> , be unable to love one another.
	Causative. (Permissive).	سودرما <i>sevdırme</i> , be unable to make love.	سودرما <i>sevindırme</i> , be unable to make one's self love.	سودرما <i>sevisdirme</i> , be unable to make one another love.

§ 3. This same form is that of a verbal noun.

يازمه *yaz-ma*, the act of writing.

ياپمه *yap-ma*, the act of making.

اوقومه *oku-ma* » » » reading.

بيلمه *bil-me*, » » » learning, knowledge.

گيتمه *git-me*, » » » going.

صاتمه *sat-ma*, » » » selling.

المه *al-ma*, » » » taking.

سومه *sev-me*, » » » loving.

ييمه *ye-me*, » » » drinking.

§ 4. By adding to the root the letter ش *shin*, which indicates, the mode or manner of the action, another verbal noun is formed:

گلش *gel-ish*, manner of coming, of arrival.

گيدش *gid-ish*, » » going.

گلدش *gyul-ush*, way of laughing, laughter, laugh.

باقش *bag-ish*, looking, look, gaze, glance.

اورش *wu-rush*, a blow, thump, knock.

صاتش *sat-ish*, a sale.

الیش ویش *al-ish, ver-ish*, taking and giving, i. e. commerce, buying, and selling:

المق *al-maq*, to buy.

الیش *al-ish*, a mode of taking, a purchase.

ویرمک *ver-mek* to give.

وییش *ver-ish*, a mode of giving, a gift.

بیلیمک *bil-mek*, to know.

بییش *bil-ish*, a mode of knowing or guessing.

§ 5. By adding to the infinitive (if it end with the letter ق *qaf*) the particle لِق *liq*, another verbal noun is formed:

اورمق *wur-maq*, to strike.

اورمقلق *wurmaq-liq*, the action of striking.

أَلَمَق *al-maq*, to take.

أَلَمَقْلَق *al-maq-liq*, the act of taking.

صَاتَمَق *sat-maq*, to sell.

صَاتَمَقْلَق *sat-maq-liq*, the act of selling.

§ 6. By adding the particle لِك *lik*, to the infinitive (if it end in the letter ك *kef*). The same verbal noun is formed in the case of soft verbs:

كُورَمَك *gyur-mek*, to see.

كُورَمَكْلِك *gyur-mek-lik*, the act of seeing.

سُومَك *sev-mek*, to love.

سُومَكْلِك *sev-mek-lik*, the act of loving.

بِيلِمَك *bil-mek*, to know.

بِيلِمَكْلِك *bil-mek-lik*, the act of knowing.

كُزَمَك *gez-mek*, to walk.

كُزَمَكْلِك *gez-mek-lik*, the act of walking.

CHAPTER XVII.

THE FORMATION OF THE TENSES.

It is from the root of the verb that the tenses are formed. By adding the letter ر *ri*, to the root, the indeclinable participle present is produced:

سُور *sev-er*, loving, he, she loves.

By adding the particle يَر *yor*, to the root the active participle present indeclinable is formed:

سُويَر *sev-iyor*, he, she, it is loving, etc.

By adding the particles جَق *jaq* or جَك *jek*, preceded by the letter ه *he*, the future participle is formed:

صَاتَهْجَق *sat-ajaq*, he, she, it shall, or will sell.

أَلَهْجَق *al-ajaq*, he, she, it shall, or will take.

يَاْزَهْجَق *yaz-ajaq*, he, she, it shall, or will write.

سوءجك *sev-ejek*, he, she, it shall, or will love.
 كلعجك *gel-ejek*, he, she, it shall, or will come.
 كيدءجك *gid-ejek*, he, she, it shall, or will go, etc.

§ 1. By adding to these participles the personal termination, the tenses and persons of all the verbs are formed:

Sing.

سوءورءم *sev-iyor-um*, I am loving.
 سوءورءسن *sev-iyor-sun*, thou art loving.
 سوءور *sev-iyor*, he, she, it is loving.

Plur.

سوءورءرز *sev-iyor-uz*, we are loving.
 سوءورءسكز *sev-iyor-sunuz*, you are loving.
 سوءورءلر *sev-iyor-lar*, they are loving.

By adding to the root the letter ان *an*, or ن *nun*, or the particle يءجى *iji*, the declinable present participle is formed:

سوءن قارى *sev-en qari*, the loving woman, the woman who loves, loved, or will love.

صاءان اءم *satan' adam*, } The selling man, the man who
 صاءاءجى اءم *sat-iji adam*, } sells, or will sell.
 اءان اءم *at-an adam*, } The throwing man, the man who
 اءاءجى اءم *at-iji adam*, } throws, threw, or will throw.

If the root end with a vowel sound (as is the case with all the negative and impotential verbs) the letter ى *ye* is placed before either the ن *nun*, or the particle ان *an*:

وءقءان اءم *oqu-yan adam*, the reading man, the man who reads, read or will read.

ءورءان الءى *yuruyan alay*, the marching regiment, the regiment that marches, marched, or will march.

سويلين صابط *suweyleyen zabit*, { The speaking officer, the
 سويليجي صابط *suweyleyiji zabit*, { officer who speaks, spoke,
 or will speak.

By adding the particle مش *mish* to the root of the verb, the past active participle is formed:

سومش *sev-mish adam*, a man who has loved.

By adding the particle دي *diq*, or دك *dik* to the root, the declinable active participle is formed with the affixes:

يازدي *yaz-diq*, who wrote, who has written.

كلك *gel-dik*, who came, who has come.

This form is not so much used as the past active participle: it is always used adjectively.

§ 2. There are many affirmative verbs the roots of which end in either the letter ش *shin*, or ح *chim*, which form their transitive or causative in ر *ir* instead of در *dir*:

شاشمق *shashmaq*, to be surprised, astonished, to be bewildered, confounded.

شاشيرمق *shash-ir-maq*, to confuse, bewilder.

قاجمق *qachmaq*, to run away, escape, desert.

قاجيرمق *qach-ir-maq*, to cause to make one escape, run away, desert.

كچمك *gechmek*, to pass over, to go through.

كچيرمك *gech-ir-mek*, to cause or make one go over, go through.

ايچمك *ichmek*, to drink.

ايچيرمك *ich-ir-mek*, to cause to drink.

اشمك *eshmek*, to scratch.

اشيرمك *esh-ir-mek*, to cause to scratch.

اشمق *ashmaq*, to carry, send, pass over, beyond.

اشيرمق *ash-ir-maq*, to cause or make carry, send, pass over, beyond.

تاشماق *tashmaq*, to overflow.

تاشيرماق *tash-ir-maq*, to cause to overflow.

Exceptions:

اچماق *achmaq*, to open.

اچدirmek *ach-dir-maq*, to cause to open.

ساجماق *sachmaq*, to scatter, to throw.

ساجدirmek *sach-dir-maq*, to cause to scatter.

There are several other exceptions; but the causative and transitive forms of these affirmative verbs ending in consonants must be learnt by practice, or from a good dictionary.

CHAPTER XVIII.

THE SUBSTANTIVE VERB «TO BE».

Properly speaking there is no verb in Turkish answering to the verb «to be» in English in all its moods and tenses; but the verb اولماق *ol-maq*, acts for the verb «to be» as it is both an auxiliary and an independent verb. The defective verb ايم *im*, يم *yim*, م *em* «I am» generally corresponds to the verb «to be». This defective verb and its few tenses are of much importance. It is not only used as an auxiliary, but distinguishes the persons and tenses of other verbs. Its tenses enter into the composition of all verbs; for without this auxiliary they can neither be conjugated nor ever become verbs at all.

Indicative.

Sing.

Present. *ايم im, يم yim, م im*, I am.
سين sin, سن sin, thou art.
در dir, he, she, it is.

Plur.

ايز iz, يز yiz, ز iz, we are.
سينز siniz, you are.
درلر dirlar, dirler, they are.

Sing.

Perfect. *دم dim, ايدم idim*, I was.
دك din, ايدك idin, thou wast.
ايدى idi, he, she, it was.

Plur.

دق diq, ايدك idik, we were.
ايدينز idiniz, you were.
ايديلر idilar, idiler, they were.

Conditional.

Sing.

Aorist. *ايسم isem*, If I be.
ايسن isen, if thou be.
ايسه ise, if he, she, it be.

Plur.

ايسك isek, if we be.
ايسنيز iseniz, if you be.
ايسلر iseler, if they be.

Past active participle.

ایمش *imish*, مش *mish*, who, or which was.

Sing.

مشم *mish-im*, } I was.
 ایمشم *imish-im*, }
 مشسن *mish-sin*, } thou wast.
 ایمشسن *imish-sin*, }
 مش (در) *mish (dir)*, } he, she was.
 ایمش (در) *imish (dir)*, }

Plur.

مشز *mish-iz*, } we were.
 ایمشز *imish-iz*, }
 مشسکز *mish-siniz*, } you were.
 ایمشسکز *imish-siniz*, }
 مشلر *mish-ler*, } they were.
 ایمشلر *imish-ler*, }

Verbal noun perfect:

ایدک *idik*, the fact of being or of having been.

Gerund.

کن *ken*, ایکن *iken*, while being.

§ 1. This defective verb ایم *im*, یم *yim*, م *im*, is made negative by prefixing the adverb دکل *diyil*, not, thus:

Indicative.

Sing.

Present. دکلیم *diyil-im*, I am not.

دکلسن *diyil-sin*, thou art not.

دکل (در) *diyil (dir)*, he, she is not.

Plur.

Present. دیکلر *diyil-iz*, we are not.

دیکلر سیکلر *diyil-siniz*, you are not.

دیکلر دیر، دیکلر دیرلر *diyil-dirler, diyil-lerdir*, they are not.

Sing.

Perfect. دیکل ایدم - دم *diyil-idim-dim*, I was not.

دیکل ایدک - دک *diyil-idin-din*, thou wast not.

دیکل ایدی - دیکل دی *diyil-idi*, he, she was not.

Plur.

دیکلر دیکل ایدک *diyil-idik*, we were not.

دیکلر دیکل ایدکیز *diyil-idiniz*, you, ye were not.

دیکلر دیکل ایدیلر *diyil-idiler, diyil-diler*, they were not.

Conditional.

Sing.

Aorist. دیکل ایسم *diyil-isem*, If I be not.

دیکل ایسک *diyil-isen*, If thou be not.

دیکل ایسه *diyil-ise*, If he, she be not.

Plur.

دیکلر ایسک *diyil-isek*, If we be not.

دیکلر ایسکیز *diyil-iseniz*, If ye, you be not.

دیکلر ایسلر *diyil-iseler*, If they be not.

Perfect.

Sing.

دیکل ایمیشم *diyil-imish-im*, I was not.

دیکل ایمیشسن *diyil-imish-sin*, thou wast not.

دیکل ایمیش (دیر) *diyil-imish (dir)*, he, she was not.

Plur.

ديكل ايمشز *diyil-imish-iz*, we were not, etc.

Verbal noun.

Perfect.

ديكل ايدك *diyil-idik*, the fact of not being or of not having been.

Participle.

ديكل ايكن *diyil-iken*, while not being.

CHAPTER XIX.

THE VERB «TO HAVE».

In Turkish there is no verb «to have», but the Turks make use of two adjectives, وار *var*, present, or existent, and يوق *yok*, absent, or non-existent, which in connection with the defective verb express the idea of «to have» and «not to have» respectively.

The verbal particle of affirmation در *dir*, is always added to these adjectives in writing, but not always in conversation. These adjectives with the verbal particle of affirmation joined to them, are erroneously designated verbs by some European grammarians. Exactly rendered, the construction would be.

وار در *var dir*, «he, she, it is present, or existent» = «there is».

يوق در *yok dir*, he, she, it is absent, or non-existent = there is not.

اتمك وار *ekmek var*, bread (is) existent; or there is some bread.

§ 1. By using with these an adjective, or a substantive in the locative case, they become special instead of general.

Examples :

اوييمده اتمك وار *evim-de ekmek var*, in my house bread is present = I have some bread in my house.

اليمده فرمان وار *elim-de fermān var*, in my hand the command, or Firman is present = I have the command, the Firman, in my hand.

يانيمده فلج وار *yanimda qilij var*, by my side a sword is present = I have a sword by my side.

اودومده قلم وار *odumda qalim var*, in my room a pen is present = I have a pen in my room.

دوستومده پاره وار *dostumda para var*, with my friend money is present = my friend has some money.

كيسيمده النونم يوق در *keysemde altun-um yogradur*, in my purse my gold is absent, wanting, non-existent = I have no gold in my purse.

اليمده تفنكم ورايدي *elimde tufenkim var idi*, my gun was present, existent, in my hand = I had my gun.

اويمده فلجم يوق ايدى *evimde qilijim yok idi*, in my house my sword was absent, wanting, non-existent = I had not my sword in my house, etc.

§ 2. The addition of the possessive suffixes gives the idea of possession, thus:

Examples:

- دوستم وار *dostum var*, my friend exists, i. e. I have a friend, or I have some friends.
- کاغذم وار (در) *kyaghatim var (dir)*, my paper exists, i. e. I have some paper.
- مِرکبک وار (در) *murekkebin var (dir)*, thy ink exists, i. e. thou hast some ink.
- قلمی وار (در) *qalami var (dir)*, his, her pen exists, i. e. he, she has a pen, or pens.
- اکمم بیوق (در) *ekmugim yoq (dur)*, my bread is non-existent, i. e. I have no bread.
- اتمز بیوق (در) *etimiz yoq (dir)*, our meat is non-existent, i. e. we have no meat.
- شکرکز بیوق (در) *shekıriniz yoq (dir)*, your sugar is non-existent, i. e. you have no sugar.
- صولری بیوق (در) *sulari yoq (dir)*, their water is non-existent, i. e. they have no water.
- پارہسی بیوق (در) *parasi yoq (dir)*, his, her money is non-existent, i. e. he, she has no money.
- قونولری وار (در) *qardashinin choq qoyunlari var (dir)*, many sheep belonging to thy brother are existent, i. e. thy brother has many sheep.
- بورجم بیوق (در) *benim sana borjum yoq (dir)*, debt of mine to thee is non-existent, i. e. I owe you nothing, etc.

§ 3. These two adjectives are never used alone in Turkish, but require to be joined either to the pronoun, to some verb, or to an adjective.

Examples :

- گوزل *gyuzel*, handsome.
 گوزل-سن *gyuzel-sin*, thou art handsome.
 خشنود *khoshnud*, contented, pleased.
 خشنودم *khoshnudum*, I am pleased, contented.
 ماحظوظ *mahzüz*, glad.
 (در) ماحظوظ *mahzüz (dir)*, he, she (is) glad.
 باختلو *bakhtli*, lucky, fortunate.
 باختلوز *bakhtli-yiz*, we are lucky, fortunate.
 مسرور *mesrür*, glad, joyful.
 مسرور-سکز *mesrür-siniz*, you are glad, joyful.
 غیرتلو *ghayretli*, zealous.
 غیرتلودر *ghayretli-dirler*, They (are) zealous, etc. So on through all the moods and tenses. The tenses that are wanting must be supplied from those of the verb *اولماق olmaq*, «to be» which is conjugated regularly. These adjectives *وار var* and *یوق yoq* followed by the verbal particle of affirmation can be used with nouns, pronouns, substantives or adjectives; the following are examples of each:
 پارام وار *param var*, my money exists, i. e. I have money, I have some money.
 کتابک یوق *kitabın yoq*, thy book (is) non-existent, i. e. thou hast no book.
 (در) وار کاغدم *kyaghid-im var (dir)*, I have paper.
 خشنودم *khoshnudum*, I am pleased, contented.
 حاضر-سن *hâzır-sin*, thou art ready, etc.

CHAPTER XX.

THE VERB «TO HAVE» CONJUGATED BOTH AFFIRMATIVELY
AND NEGATIVELY.

The following are some of the leading tenses of the English verb «to have» with the Turkish method of rendering, both affirmative and negative.

Indicative mood.

Present حال *hal*.

Sing. پارم وار *param var*, I have money.
پارن وار *paran var*, thou hast »
پارسی وار *parasi var*, he, she has »

Plur. پارمیز وار *paramiz var*, we have money.
پارنیز وار *paraniz var*, you have »
پارلاری وار *paralari var*, they have »

Perfect ماضی شهودی *mazi-i shuhudi*.

Sing. پارم وار ایدی *param var idi*, I had money.
پارن وار ایدی *paran var idi*, thou hadst »
پارسی وار ایدی *parasi var idi*, he, she had »

Plur. پارمیز وار ایدی *paramiz var idi*, we had money.
پارنیز وار ایدی *paraniz var idi*, you had »
پارلاری وار ایدی *paralari var idi*, they had »

§ 1. Dubitative Perfect ماضی نقلی *mazi-i naqli*.

Sing. پارم وار ایمش *param var imish*, I had money, I think.
پارن وار ایمش *paran var imish*, thou hadst » I think.
پارسی وار ایمش *parasi var imish*, he, she had » I think.

- Plur. پاره‌مز وار ایمش *paramiz var imish*, we had money, I think.
 پاره‌کز وار ایمش *paraniz var imish*, you » » I think.
 پاره‌لری وار ایمش *paralari var imish*, they » » I think.

Future مستقبل *mustaqbel*.

- Sing. پاره‌م اوله‌جق *param olajaq*, { I shall have money.
 پاره‌م اولور *param olur*, {
 پاره‌ک اوله‌جق *paran olajaq*, { thou shalt » »
 پاره‌ک اولور *paran olur*, {
 پاره‌سی اوله‌جق *parasi olajaq*, { he, she will » »
 پاره‌سی اولور *parasi olur*, {
 Plur. پاره‌مز اوله‌جق *paramiz olajaq*, { we will, shall have
 پاره‌مز اولور *paramiz olur*, { money.
 پاره‌کز اوله‌جق *paraniz olajaq*, { you will, shall have
 پاره‌کز اولور *paraniz olur*, { money.
 پاره‌لری اوله‌جق *paralari olajaq*, { they will, shall have
 پاره‌لری اولور *paralari olur*, { money.

§ 2. Conditional Aorist مضارع شرطی *muzāri-i shartī*.

- Sing. پاره‌م وار ایسه *param var isa*, if I have money, etc.
 Plur. پاره‌مز وار ایسه *paramiz var isa*, if we » » »

Conditional Past ماضی شهودی شرطی *mazī-i shuhūdī-i shartī*.

- Sing. پاره‌م وار ایسه ایدی *param var isa idi*, if I had money.
 Plur. پاره‌مز وار ایسه ایدی *paramiz var isa idi*, if we » » »

Optative Past حکانه فعل التزامی *hikyāye-i fīl-i iltzāmī*.

- Sing. داشکه پاره‌م اولیدی *kyashke, keshke, param olaydi*, O
 that I had money, I had had money.
 Plur. داشکه پاره‌مز اولیدی *kyashke, keshke, paramiz olaydi*, O
 that we had money, we had had money.

Imperative حاضر و غایب امر *emr-i hâzir ve ghâ'ib*.

- Sing. پارەك اولسون *paran olsun*, have thou money.
 پارەسی اولسون *parasi olsun*, let him, her, have money.
 Plur. پارەمز اولسون *paramiz olsun*, let us have »
 پارەکز اولسون *paraniz olsun*, have ye »
 پارەلری اولسون *paralari olsun*, let them have »

Gerund.

پارەم وار ایکن *param var iken*, while I had money.

§ 3. Indicative mood.

Negative منفی *menfî*.

Present حال *hâl*.

- Sing. پارەم یوق *param yoq*, I have no money.
 پارەك یوق *paran yoq*, thou hast no »
 پارەسی یوق *parasi yoq*, he, she, has no »
 Plur. پارەمز یوق *paramiz yoq*, we have no »
 پارەکز یوق *paraniz yoq*, you have no »
 پارەلری یوق *paralari yoq*, they have no »

Perfect ماضی شهودی *mazî-i shuhûdî*.

- Sing. پارەم بوغیدی ¹⁾ *param yoghudu*, I had no money.
 پارەك بوغیدی *paran yoghudu*, thou hadst no »
 پارەسی بوغیدی *parasi yoghudu*, he, she, had no »
 Plur. پارەمز بوغیدی *paramiz yoghudu*, we had no »
 پارەکز بوغیدی *paraniz yoghudu*, you had no »
 پارەلری بوغیدی *paralasi yoghudu*, they had no »

1) The ق *qaf*, changes into غ *ghain*, before the letters ی *ye*, & *he*, ك *kef*, and ا *shif*, for the sake of euphony.

Dubitative Perfect ماضی نقلی *māzī-i naqli*.

Sing. پارەم یوغمیش *param yoghumush*, I had no money I think.

Plur. پارەمز یوغمیش *paramiz yoghumush*, we had no money I think.

Future مستعبل *mustaqbel*.

Sing. پارەم اولمیه جقمش *param olmayajaqmish*, I shall or will have no money, I think.

پارەم اولمازمش *param olmazmish*.

Plur. پارەمز اولمیه جقمش *paramiz olmayajaqmish*, we shall or will have no money, I think.

پارەمز اولمازمش *paramiz olmazmish*.

Conditional Aorist مضارع شرطی *muzārī-i shartī*.

Sing. پارەم بوغ ایسه *param yoghusa*, if I have no money.

Plur. پارەمز بوغ ایسه *paramiz yoghusa*, if we " " "

Past ماضی شهودی شرطی *māzī-i shuhūdī-i shartī*.

Sing. پارەم بوغ ایسه ایدی *param yoghusa idi*, if I had no money.

Plur. پارەمز بوغ ایسه ایدی *paramiz yoghusa idi*, if we had no money.

Optative Past فعل التزامی *hikyāye-i fīl-i iltizāmī*.

Sing. داشکه پارەم اولیدی *kyeshke, keshke, param olaydi*,
O that I had money, O that I had had money.

Plur. داشکه پارەمز اولیدی *kyeshke, keshke, paramiz olaydi*,
O that we had money, O that we had had money.

Imperative امر حاضر و غایب *emri-hâzır ve ghâıyb.*

- Sing. پارەك اولسون *paran olsun*, have thou money.
 پارەسی اولسون *parasi olsun*, let him, her, have money.
 Plur. پارەمز اولسون *paramız olsun*, let us have money.
 پارەكز اولسون *paranız olsun*, have ye money.
 پارەلری اولسون *paraları olsun*, let them have money.

Gerund.

پارەم *param yoghiken*, while I have no money.

CHAPTER XXI.

THE VERB اۆنمق «to be».

The conjugation of the auxiliary verb اۆنمق *olmaq* «to be» with the Arabic participle حاضر *hazır*, «ready».

Compound verbs of this type are formed by prefixing any adjective to the verb اۆنمق *olmaq*, «to be or become», thus :

Indicative mood.

Present حال *hal*.

- Sing. حاضر اولیورم *hazır olıyör-im*, I am ready.
 حاضر اولیورسن *hazır olıyör-sın*, thou art ready.
 حاضر اولیور *hazır olıyör*, he, she, it, is »
 Plur. حاضر اولیوروز *hazır olıyör-ız*, we are »
 حاضر اولیورسکز *hazır olıyör-sınız*, you are »
 حاضر اولیورلر *hazır olıyör-lar*, they are. »

Imperfect حَكَايَةُ حَال hikāye-i-hāl.

Sing.	حاضر اوليوردم	<i>hāzır olıyordım</i>	} I was ready.
	حاضر اوليور ايدم	<i>hāzır olıyordım</i>	
	حاضر اوليور دك	<i>hāzır olıyordın</i>	} thou wast ready.
	حاضر اوليور ايدك	<i>hāzır olıyordın</i>	
	حاضر اوليور دى	<i>hāzır olıyordu</i>	} he, she, it, was ready.
	حاضر اوليور ايدى	<i>hāzır olıyordu</i>	
Plur.	حاضر اوليور دك	<i>hāzır olıyordık</i>	} we were ready.
	حاضر اوليور ايدك	<i>hāzır olıyordık</i>	
	حاضر اوليور دكوز	<i>hāzır olıyordınız</i>	} you were ready.
	حاضر اوليور ايدكوز	<i>hāzır olıyordınız</i>	
	حاضر اوليور ديلر	<i>hāzır olıyorlardı</i>	} they were ready.
	حاضر اوليور ايديلر	<i>hāzır olıyorlardı</i>	

Aorist فعل مضارع *fili muzariv*.

Sing.	حاضر اولورم	<i>hāzır olur-um</i> , I shall or will be ready.
	حاضر اولور سن	<i>hāzır olur-sun</i> , thou shalt or wilt be ready.
	حاضر اولور	<i>hāzır olur</i> , he, she, it, shall or will be ready.
Plur.	حاضر اولوروز	<i>hāzır olur-uz</i> , we shall or will be ready.
	حاضر اولور سنكوز	<i>hāzır olur-siniz</i> , you shall or will be ready.
	حاضر اولور لار	<i>hāzır olur-lar</i> , they shall or will be ready.

Past حَكَايَةُ مَضَارِع hikāye-i-muzariv.

Sing.	حاضر اولوردم	<i>hāzır olur-dım</i>	} I would be ready.
	حاضر اولور ايدم	<i>hāzır olur-idim</i>	
	حاضر اولور دك	<i>hāzır olur-dın</i>	} thou wouldst be ready.
	حاضر اولور ايدك	<i>hāzır olur-idin</i>	

	اولوردي حاضر <i>hāzır olur-du</i>	} he, she, it, would be ready.
	اولورايدي حاضر <i>hāzır olur-idi</i>	
Plur.	اولوردي حاضر <i>hāzır olur-duq</i>	} we would be ready.
	اولورايدي حاضر <i>hāzır olur-idiq</i>	
	اولوردي حاضر <i>hāzır olur-dunuz</i>	} you would be ready.
	اولورايدي حاضر <i>hāzır olur-idiniz</i>	
	اولوردي حاضر <i>hāzır olur-dılar</i>	} they would be ready.
	اولورايدي حاضر <i>hāzır olur-idılar</i>	

Perfect ماضى شهودى *mazī-i shuhūdī*.

Sing.	اولدم حاضر <i>hazır ol-dum</i> , I have been ready.		
	اوندا حاضر <i>hazır ol-dun</i> , thou hast	»	»
	اولدى حاضر <i>hazır ol-du</i> , he, she, has	»	»
Plur.	اولدق حاضر <i>hāzır ol-duq</i> , we have	»	»
	اوندا حاضر <i>hazır ol-dunuz</i> , you	»	»
	اولديلر حاضر <i>hazır ol-dular</i> , they	»	»

Pluperfect ماضى حكاية *hikaye-i-mazī-i shuhūdī*.

Sing.	اولدم ايدي حاضر <i>hazır ol-dum idi</i> , I had been ready.		
	اوندا ايدي حاضر <i>hazır ol-dun idi</i> , thou hadst	»	»
	اولدى ايدي حاضر <i>hazır ol-du idi</i> , he, she, had	»	»
Plur.	اولدق ايدي حاضر <i>hāzır ol-duq idi</i> , we	»	»
	اوندا ايدي حاضر <i>hāzır ol-dunuz idi</i> , you	»	»
	اولديلر ايدي حاضر <i>hazır ol-dular idi</i> , they	»	»

Future مستقبل *mustaqbel*.

Sing.	اولمچغم حاضر <i>hazır ol-ajaghim</i> , I shall or will be ready.	
	اولمچقسن حاضر <i>hāzır ol-ajagsin</i> , thou shalt or wilt be	»
	اولمچق حاضر <i>hāzır ol-ajaq</i> , he, she, shall or will be	» etc.

Future past مستقبل ماضى *mustaqbel mazī*.

Sing.	اولمچغدم حاضر <i>hazır olajaghdim</i> , I was about to be ready.	
	اولمچغدك حاضر <i>hāzır olajaghdin</i> , thou wast	» » » »
	اولمچغدق حاضر <i>hāzır olajaghdi</i> , he, she, was	» » » » etc.

Plur. حاضر اولمىجىدى *hāzir olajaghdıq*, we were about to be ready, etc.

Necessitative فعل وجوبى *fili vujūbī*.

Aorist مضارع *muzarī*.

Sing. حاضر اولمىيىم *hāzir olmalıyım*, I must, or ought to be ready.

حاضر اولمىيىسن *hāzir olmalısın*, thou » » » » »

حاضر اولمى *hāzir olmalı*, he, she » » » » »

Past حكاية فعل وجوبى *hikāye-i fili vujūbī*.

Sing. حاضر اولمىلایدىم *hāzir olmalı-idim*, I ought to have been ready, I was obliged to be ready.

حاضر اولمىلایدىك *hāzir olmalı-idin*, thou oughtest to have been ready, or thou wast obliged to be ready.

حاضر اولمىلایدى *hāzir olmalı-idi*, he, she, it, ought to have been ready, or was obliged to be ready, etc.

Optative فعل التزامى *fili iltizami*.

Aorist مضارع *muzarī*.

Sing. حاضر اولمىيم *hāzir olayım*, that I may be ready.

حاضر اولمىسن *hāzir olasıñ*, that thou mayest be »

حاضر اولمى *hāzir ola*, that he, she, it, may » » etc.

Past حكاية فعل التزامى *hikāye-i fili iltizami*.

Sing. حاضر اولمىيدىم *hāzir olaydım* { that I had been ready.

حاضر اولمىيدىم *hāzir »* { that I might have been »

Plur. حاضر اولمىيدىق *hāzir olaydıq* { that we had been ready.

حاضر اولمىيدىق *hāzir »* { that we might have been ready, etc.

Conditional فعل شرطی *filî shartî*.

Aorist مضارع شرطی *muzārî shartî*.

Sing. حاضر اولسم *hazir olsam*, If I be ready, were I, should I be ready, etc.

Plur. حاضر اولسق *hazir olsaq*, If we may, if we should be ready, were we, should we be ready, etc.

Past or perfect حكيه مضارع شرطی *hikyaye-i muzārî shartî*.

Sing. حاضر اولسيدم *hazir olsaydim*, { had I been ready, if
I had been ready, etc.

Plur. حاضر اولسيدق *hazir olsaydiq*, { had we been ready, if
we had been ready, etc.

Imperative امر حاضر وغائب *emri hazir ve ghayib*.

Sing. حاضر اول *hazir ol*, be thou ready, etc.

Plur. حاضر اولونم *hazir olalim*, let us be ready, etc.

Infinitive حاضر اولمق *hazir olmaq*.

Participle active اسم فاعل *ismi fa'il*.

Present حال *hal*.

حاضر اولان *hazir olan*, who, or which is, was, will be ready.

Aorist مضارع *muzārî*.

حاضر اولور *hazir olur*, who is, or will be ready.

Past ماضى *mazî*.

حاضر اولمش *hazir olmush*, who has been ready.

Future مستقبل *mustaqbil*.

حاضر اولاجق *hazir olajaq*.

• Verbal nouns اسم فعلی *ism-i fili*.

Present حال *hāl*.

حاضر اولمه *hāzir olma*, the act of being ready.

Perfect ماضی شهودی *mazi shuhudi*.

حاضر اولدق *hazir olduq*, the act of being, or having been ready.

Future مستعبل *mustaqbel*.

حاضر اولماق *hazir olajaq*, the act of being about to be, or to become, ready.

Gerunds.

حاضر اولوب *hazir olup*, is, was, will be ready and...

حاضر اولماق *hazir olaraq*, while being ready.

حاضر اولنجا	<i>hazir olunja</i> ,	{	on being ready, or, as soon
حاضر اولماق	<i>hazir olajaq</i> ,		as, becomes, became, will be-
			come ready.

حاضر اولماق *hazir ola-ola*, by continually being ready, by dint of being ready.

حاضر اولماق *hazir olmaghin*, by reason of being ready.

حاضر اولماق	{	<i>hazir olali</i> , ever since being ready.
حاضر اولماق		

CHAPTER XXII.

CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY PASSIVE VERB اولنىق «TO BE».

Conjugation of the auxiliary passive verb اولنىق *olunmaq*, «to be» with the Arabic participle, or noun of action, تصديق *tasdiq* confirmed. Such participle or noun of action is always placed before the verb, the act or state of being, and remains invariable throughout the moods, tenses and persons. The following are the first persons sing. and plur. of each tense.

. Infinitive.

تصديق اولنىق *tasdiq olunmaq*, to be confirmed.

Imperative.

Sing. تصديق اولن *tasdiq olun*, be thou confirmed.

Plur. تصديق اولنئيم *tasdiq olunalim*, let us be confirmed.

Indicative mood.

Present حال *hāl*.

Sing. تصديق اولنيورم *tasdiq oluniyorim*, I am being confirmed.

Plur. تصديق اولنيوروز *tasdiq oluniyoruz*, we are being confirmed.

Imperfect حكيه حال *hikaye-i-hal*.

Sing. تصديق اولنيور ايدم *tasdiq oluniyor idim*,
 تصديق اولنيوردیم *tasdiq oluniyordim*,
 } I was being confirmed.

Plur. تصديق اولنيورايدى *tasdiq oluniyor idi*, we were being confirmed.

Aorist مضارع *muzāriʿ*.

- Sing. تصدیق اولنورم *tasdiq olunurum*, { I am confirmed, or
shall be confirmed.
Plur. تصدیق اولنوروز *tasdiq olunuruz*, { we are confirmed, or
shall be confirmed.

Past حکایه مضارع *hikay-i-muzariʿ*.

- Sing. تصدیق اولنورایدیم *tasdiq olunuridim* { I was confirmed,
تصدیق اولنوردیم *tasdiq olunurdim* { or would have
been confirmed.
Plur. تصدیق اولنوردیق *tasdiq olunurdıq* { we were confir-
تصدیق اولنوردوق *tasdiq olunurduq* { med or would have
been confirmed.

Perfect ماضی شهودی *mazi shuhūdi*.

- Sing. تصدیق اولندیم *tasdiq olundım*, I was, or have been
confirmed.
Plur. تصدیق اولندیق *tasdiq olunduq* { we were, or have been
تصدیق اولندیق *tasdiq olundıq* } confirmed.

Pluperfect حکایه ماضی شهودی *hikaye-i mazi shuhūdi*.

- Sing. تصدیق اولندیم ایدی *tasdiq olundım idi*, I had
been confirmed.
Plur. تصدیق اولندیق ایدی *tasdiq olunduq idi*, we had
been confirmed.

Future مستقبل *mustaqbil*.

- Sing. تصدیق اولنوجغم *tasdiq olunajagħım*, I shall or will
be confirmed.
Plur. تصدیق اولنوجغز *tasdiq olunajagħız*, we shall, or will
be confirmed.

Past future حكاية مستقبل *hikāye-i-mustaqbel*.

Sing. تصدیق اولنه جغدم *tasdiq olunajagħdim*, I was about to be confirmed.

Plur. تصدیق اولنه جغدق *tasdiq olunajagħdiq*, we were about to be confirmed.

Necessitive mood فعل وجوبی *fi'li vujubi*.

Aorist مضارع *muzari'i*.

Sing. تصدیق اولنملویم *tasdiq olunmaliyim*, I must, or ought to be confirmed.

Plur. تصدیق اولنملویز *tasdiq olunmaliyiz*, we must, or ought to be confirmed.

Past or perfect حكاية فعل وجوبی *hikaye-i-fi'li vujubi*.

Sing. تصدیق اولنملوایدیم *tasdiq olunmali-idim*, I was obliged, or ought to have been confirmed.

Plur. تصدیق اولنملوایدق *tasdiq olunmali-idıq*, we were obliged, or ought to have been confirmed.

Optative فعل التزامی *fi'li iltizami*.

Aorist مضارع *muzari'i*.

Sing. تصدیق اولنمایدیم *tasdiq olunayim*, that I may be confirmed.

Plur. تصدیق اولنمایدیز *tasdiq olunayiz*, that we may be confirmed.

Past or perfect حكاية التزامی *hikaye-i-iltizami*.

Sing. تصدیق اولنمایدیم *tasdiq olunaydim*, that I might be, or might have been confirmed.

Plur. تصدیق اولنیدی *tasdiq olunaydiq*, that we might be,
or might have been confirmed.

Conditional فعل شرطی *fili sharti*.

Aorist مضارع *muzari sharti*.

Sing. تصدیق اولنسام *tasdiq olunsam*, if I be confirmed.

Plur. تصدیق اولنساغ *tasdiq olunsaq*, if we be confirmed.

Past or perfect حکایه شرطی *hikyaye-i sharti*.

Sing. تصدیق اولنسیدیم *tasdiq olunsaydim*, if I were, or if
تصدیق اولنسا ایدیم *tasdiq olunsa idim*, I had been confirmed.

Plur. تصدیق اولنسیدیغ *tasdiq olunsaydiq*, if we were, or
تصدیق اولنسا ایدیغ *tasdiq alunsa idiğ*, if we had been confirmed.

Active participle اسم فاعل *ism-i fā'il*.

Present حال *hāl*.

تصدیق اولنان *tasdiq olunan*, being confirmed, who, or which
is, was, or will be confirmed.

Aorist مضارع *muzari*.

تصدیق اولنور *tasdiq olunur*, the same as the present.

Past ماضی بعلى *mazi naqli*.

تصدیق اولنموش *tasdiq olunmush*, who, or which has been confirmed.

Perfect ماضی شهودی *mazi shuhudi*.

تصدیق اولندوق *tasdiq olunduq*, who, or which has been confirmed.

Future مستقبل *mustaqbel*.

تصدیق اولنهجق *tasdiq olunajaq*, who, or which will be confirmed.

Verbal nouns اسم فعله *ism-i fili*.

Present حال *hāl*.

تصدیق اولنمه *tasdiq olunma*, the act of being confirmed.

Perfect ماضی شهودی *mazi shuhudi*.

تصدیق اولندق *tasdiq olundug*, the act of being, or having been confirmed.

Future مستقبل *mustaqbel*.

تصدیق اولنهجق *tasdiq olunajaq*, the act of being about to be confirmed.

Gerunds.

تصدیق اولنوب *tasdiq olunup*, is, was, will be confirmed and . . .

تصدیق اولنهرق *tasdiq olunaraq*, while being confirmed.

تصدیق اولنجه *tasdiq olunja*, as soon as, or on being

تصدیق اولنیهجق *tasdiq olinijaq*, confirmed.

تصدیق اولنه اولنه *tasdiq oluna-oluna*, by continually having been, or by dint of being confirmed.

تصدیق اولنمغین *tasdiq olunmaghin*, by reason of being confirmed.

تصدیق اولنه نو *tasdiq | ever since, being, or having*

تصدیق اولنلی *olanali*, | been confirmed.

CHAPTER XXIII.

THE INTERROGATIVE VERB فعل استفهام *fili istifhām*.

The particle می *mi*, and interrogatives in general.

When an interrogative sentence does not contain one of the pronouns:

کیم <i>kim</i> , who?	نصل <i>nasl</i> , how?
قنغی <i>qanghi</i> , <i>hanghi</i> , which?	نه <i>ne</i> , what?
قاج <i>qach</i> , how much?	

the Turks introduce the particle می *mi* after the word on which the question depends. We have no equivalent to this particle in English, but it corresponds to the Latin word *an*, and the enclitic particle *ne*, also to the French *est-ce-que?* as the following examples will show. The interrogative particle is joined to that word in the sentence on which the question hangs.

جیقہ جقسن سمنی یارن بزملہ قریہ *sen-mi yarin bizim-ile qaraya chiqajaqsın*, Is it «thou» who art to land (go ashore) with us tomorrow?

جیقہ جقسن سن یارن می بزملہ قریہ *sen yarin mi bizim-ile qaraya chiqajaqsın*, Is it «tomorrow» thou art to land (go ashore) with us?

جیقہ جقسن سن یارن بزملہ می قریہ *sen yarin bizim-ile mi qaraya chiqajaqsın*, Is it with «us» thou art to land (go ashore) tomorrow?

جیقہ جقسن سن یارن بزملہ قریہ می *sen yarin bizim-ile qaraya mi chiqajaqsın*, Is it «on shore» thou art to land with us tomorrow?

چیقہ چقمیسین *sen yarin bizim-ile qarayaya chiqajaqmi-sin*, Art thou «going to land» with us tomorrow?

بو کمی لوندردن کلدیمی *bu gemi Londradan geldi-mi*, Has this ship «come» from London?

بو کمی لوندردن می کلدی *bu gemi Londradan mi geldi*, Is it «from London» this ship has come? .

بو کمیمی لوندردن کلدی *bu gemi-mi Londradan geldi*, Is it «this ship» that has come from London?

If any one of the interrogative pronouns is used in a sentence, the Turks dispense with the interrogative particle *mi*.

کیم کلدی *kim geldi*, who has come?

هغیسندن استرسکر *hanghisindan istersiniz*, from which of these do you wish?

قاجه ساترسین *qacha satarsin*, what do you sell it at?

نصل سین *nasl siniz*. How are you?

نه سويلدی *ne suweyledi*, what did he say?

بوکا نه درسکر *buna ne dersiniz*, what do you call this?

بو نه در *bu ne dir*, what is this?

بو مکتوب نیچین یازد *bu mektubu nichiin yazdin*, why did you write this letter.

§ 1. The following are a few useful sentences with the defective verb *im*, and the auxiliary verb *olmaq*, «to become» «to be». If committed to memory, they will be of great service to the student.

شاشمشم *shashmushim*, I am surprised.

خشنودم *khoshnudum*, I am pleased, contented.

خستہم *khastasin*, thou art ill, sick.

تنبلدر *tembeldir, tembeldir*, he, she, is lazy.

زنگیندر *zengindir*, he, she, is rich.

- عالمز *ālimiz*, we are learned.
 بختلويز *bakhtliyiz*, we are lucky, fortunate.
 يورغونسكز *yorghunsunuz*, you are tired, fatigued.
 غيرتلو ديرلر *ghayretli dirler*, they are zealous.
 حاضر ايدم *hāzir idim*, I was ready.
 حاضر اول *hazir ol*, be thou ready, attention!
 محكم ايدك *muhkem idin*, thou wert firm.
 مشغول ايدى *meshghul idi*, he, she, was busy.
 اهل عرض ايدك *ehli ʿirz idik*, we were honest.
 جومرد ايديكز *jumerd idiniz*, you were generous.
 بارهلمش ايديلر *yaralanmish idiler*, they were wounded.
 محظوظ اولمجم *mahzūz olajaghim*, I shall, or will be glad, pleased.
 قوتلو اولمچقس *quvvatli olajaqsın*, you will be strong.
 انصافلو اولمچق *insafli olajaq*, he, she, will be just.
 هنرلو اولمچغز *hunerli olajaghiz*, we shall be clever.
 فقير اولمچقلر *faqir olajaqlar*, they will be poor.
 بيوك اولموم *buyuk olurum*, I will be great.
 كوزل اولورسن *gyuzel olursun*, thou wilt be handsome.
 ضعيف اولور *zayıf olur*, he, she, will be weak.
 سخاوتلو اولورز *sakhavetli oluruz*, we shall be generous.
 مرحمتلو اولورسكز *merhametli olursunuz*, you will be merciful.
 عنايتلو اولورلر *inayetli olurlar*, they will be kind.

§ 2. The following sentences are negative.

- قارارسز دكل يم *qararsız değil im*, I am not undecided.
 خبر دكلسن *haber diyilsin*, thou art not well informed.
 مرحمتلو دكلدر *merhametli diyildir*, he, she, is not merciful.
 شبههلو دكلز *shubheli diyiliz*, we are not doubtful.
 معتدل دكلسكز *mustadil diyilsiniz*, you are not frugal, temperate.
 قوتلو دكل ايديلر *quvvatli değil idiler*, they were not strong.

- مکدر دکل ایدم *mukedder diyil idim*, I was not grieved.
 فائدہ لو دکل ایڈک *fāideli diyil idin*, thou wast not useful.
 مقید دکل ایڈی *muqayyed diyil idi*, he, she, was not attentive.
 الداتمیش دکل ایڈک *aldatmish diyil idik*, we were not deceived.
 اغر دکل ایڈیکر *aghir diyil idiniz*, you were not slow.
 چرکین دکل ایڈیلر *chirkin diyil idiler*, they were not ugly.
 عنادجی اولمه *cinadji olma*, do not be obstinate.
 جسور اولمیہ جقسین *jesur olmayajagsin*, thou wilt not be brave.
 مرحمتسز اولمیہ جقدر *merhametsiz olmayajaqdir*, he, she, will not be unmerciful.
 بوداله اولمه *budala olma*, do not be silly.
 ممنون اولمیہ جقسکز *memnün olmayajagsiniz*, you will not be pleased, glad.
 دارلمش اولمیہ جقلر *darilmish olmayajaqlar*, they will not be angry.
 قوتلو اولمام *qurvetli olamam*, I could not be strong.
 عدالتلو اولمازسین *adâletli olmazsin*, thou wouldest not be just.
 قیزغین اولماز(دیر) *qizghin olmaz(dir)*, he, she, should not be angry.
 سرت اولمایز *sert olmayiz*, we should not be hard.
 حقیقتلو اولمازسز *haqiqatli olmazsiz*, you would not be sincere.
 نزعاجی اولمازلر *nizâjî olmazlar*, they will not be quarrelsome.

§ 3. The following sentences are negative and interrogative.

تربیہ نو دکل مییم *terbiyyeli diyilmi-im*, am I not polite?

جسارتلو دکلیمیسین	<i>jesāretli diyilmisin</i> , art thou not brave?
جالشقان دکلیمیدر	<i>chalishqan diyilmidir</i> , is he, she, not industrious?
معذور دکلیمییز	<i>matzūr diyilmiyiz</i> , are we not excusable?
متعجب دکلیمیسینیز	<i>mutaʿajjib diyilmisiniz</i> , are you not astonished?
مسخره دکلیمیدر	<i>maskhara diyilmidir</i> , is he, she, not ridiculous?
کیفسز دکلیمیدم	<i>keyfsiz diyilmidim</i> , was I not unwell?
کور دکلیمیدک	<i>kyur diyilmidin</i> , wast thou not blind?
کیرلو دکلیمیدی	<i>kibirli diyilmidi</i> , was he, she, not proud?
منصف دکلمی ایدک	<i>munsif diyilmi-idik</i> , were we not just?
بصیرتلو دکلمی ایدیکز	<i>basiratli diyilmi-idiniz</i> , were you not discreet?
خسته دکلمی ایدک	<i>khusta diyilmi-idik</i> , were we not ill?
سقط اولمیه جقمییم	<i>saqat olmayajaqmiyim</i> , shall I not be damaged?
مکدر اولمیه جقسین	<i>mukeddir olmayajaqmisin</i> , wilt thou not be sad?
صادق اولمیه جقمی	<i>sadiq olmayajaqmi</i> , will he, she, not be faithful?
اقران اولمیه جقمییز	<i>aqrān olmayajamiyiz</i> , shall we not be equal?
بیوک اولمیه جقمیسینیز	<i>buyuk olmayajaqmisiniz</i> , shall you not be great?
حسود اولمیه جقلرمی	<i>hasud olmayajaqlarmi</i> , will they not be envious?
سوکولو اولمازمیدی	<i>sevgili olmazmi-idi</i> , would he, she, not have been amiable?

tives and adjectives along with *var* «present, or existent», and *yok* «absent, or non-existent». These may be followed by the verbal particle of affirmation *dir*, but this is generally omitted in conversation.

- اتم وار *atim var*, I have a horse.
 اوك وار *evin var*, thou hast a house.
 شرابی وار *sharābi var*, he, she, has wine.
 سلاحمز وار *silahimiz var*, we have arms.
 باروتکز وار *barutiniz var*, you have gun-powder.
 تفنگلری وار *tufenk(tufek)leri var*, they have guns.
 اوزمی وار ایدی *uzumi var idi*, he, she, had grapes.
 جوزمز وار ایدی *jevizimiz var idi*, we had walnuts.
 قوینلری وار ایدی *qoyunlari var idi*, they had sheep.
 پنیرلری وار ایدی *peynirleri var idi*, they had cheese.
 پارم اوله جق *param olajaq*, I shall have money.
 کبسه ک اوله جق *keysen olajaq*, thou shalt have a purse.
 اناختاری اوله جق *anakhtari olajaq*, he, she, shall have a key.
 حادرمز اوله جق *chadirimiz olajaq*, we shall have a tent.
 يتاغکز اوله جق *yataghiniz olajaq*, you shall have a bed.
 اورتیلری اوله جق *urtuluri olajaq*, they shall have a cover.
 بیر قوزم اولور ایدی *bir quzum olur idi*, I should have had a lamb.
 یونک اولور ایدی *yunum olur idi*, thou shouldest have had wool.
 پوستنکیسی اولور ایدی *postekisi olur idi*, he, she, should have had a fur skin.
 باغچه مز اولور ایدی *baghchamiz olur idi*, we should have had a garden.
 اغاجکز اولور ایدی *aghajiniz olur idi*, you should have had a tree.

يَمِيشْلَرِي اُولُر ايدِي *yemishleri olur idi*, they should have had fruit.

بِر كِتَابِي *bir kitābim yoq*, my book (is) absent (here) or non-existent (any where) i. e. I have not a book.

* بِر كَاغِدِك يوق *bir kyaghidin yoq*, etc. i. e. thou hast not any note-paper.

بِر قَلَمِي يوق *bir qalami yoq*, etc. i. e. he, she, has not a pen.

پَارَهْمَز يوق *paramiz yoq*, etc. i. e. we have no money.

اَتَكَز يوق *atiniz yoq*, etc. i. e. you have no horse.

چِرْمَهْلَرِي يوق *chizmeleri yoq*, etc. i. e. they have no boot.

بِر تَبَاغْهِم يوق *bir tabaghim yoq*, etc. i. e. I have not a plate.

بِر قَاشْغِيك يوق *bir qashighin yoq*, etc. i. e. thou hast not a spoon.

بِر بِچَاغِي يوق *bir bichaghi yoq*, etc. i. e. he, she, has no knife.

بِر قَاشْغِيهِم يوغِيدِي *bir qashighim yoghidi*, etc. i. e. I had not a spoon.

بِر چَاتَالِك يوغِيدِي *bir chatalin yoghidi*, etc. i. e. thou hadst not a fork.

اَلْمَكِي يوغِيدِي *ekmeyi yoghidi*, etc. i. e. he, she, had no bread.

مَالِمِز يوغِيدِي *malimiz yoghidi*, etc. i. e. we had no property.

دُشْمَنَكِز يوغِيدِي *dushmaniniz yoghidi*, etc. i. e. you had no enemy.

رُبَالَرِي يوغِيدِي *rubalari yoghidi*, etc. i. e. they had no clothes.

- بزدوستم اولمیه جق *bir dostum olmayajaq*, etc. i. e. I shall not have a friend.
- پاره اولمیه جق *paran olmayajaq*, etc. i. e. thou shalt not have money.
- بهری اولمیه جق *bir yeri olmayajaq*, etc. i. e. he, she, shall not have a place.
- اتمز اولمیه جق *etimiz olmayajaq*, etc. i. e. we shall have no meat.
- اکمکن اولمیه جق *ekmeyiniz olmayajaq*, etc. i. e. you shall have no bread.
- پیرنجلری اولمیه جق *pirinjlari olmayajaq*, etc. i. e. they shall have no rice, etc.

§ 5. Negatively and interrogatively.

- یوقمی بیر کتابم *yoqmi bir kitābim*, Is there non-existent a book of mine? i. e. have I not a book?
- یوقمی بیر ساعتک *yoqmi bir saatın*, etc. i. e. hast thou not a watch?
- یوقمی بیر قلجی *yoqmi bir qiliji*, etc. i. e. has he, she, not a sword?
- یوقمی بیر اومز *yoqmi bir evimiz*, etc. i. e. have we not a house?
- یوقمی بیر اوده کز *yoqmi bir odanız*, etc. i. e. have you not a room?
- یوقمی پاره نری *yoqmi paralari*, etc. i. e. have they no money?
- یوقمی دوستلرم *yoqmi dostlarım*, etc. i. e. have I not friends?
- یوقمی اتلرک *yoqmi atların*, etc. i. e. hast thou not horses?
- یوقمی دی بیر اوشاغی *yoqmi idi bir ushaghi*, etc. i. e. had he, she, not a servant?

- یوقمیدی بیر ستری مز *yoqmiidi bir setrimiz*, etc. i. e. had we not a coat?
- یوقمیدی بیر یلککز *yoqmiidi bir yeleyiniz*, etc. i. e. had you not a vest?
- یوقمیدی شالوارلری *yoqmiidi shalvarlari*, etc. i. e. had they not trousers?
- قوندردم اولمیه جقمی *qunduram olmayajaqmi*, etc. i. e. shall I not have a shoe?
- قساوتک اولمیه جقمی *qasāvetin olmayajaqmi*, etc. i. e. wilt thou not have grief?
- دشمنی اولمیه جقمی *dushmani olmayajaqmi*, etc. i. e. shall he, she, not have an enemy?
- غیرتمز اولمیه جقمی *ghayretimiz olmayajaqmi*, etc. i. e. will we not have zeal?
- اشتهاکز اولمیه جقمی *ishtihaiz olmayajaqmi*, etc. i. e. will you not have an appetite?
- ذوقلری اولمیه جقمی *zevqleri olmayajaqmi*, etc. i. e. will they not have pleasure?
- اقرابام اولمازمیدی *uqrahām olmazmiidi*, etc. i. e. should I not have had relatives?
- التونک اولمازمیدی *altunūn olmazmiidi*, etc. i. e. wouldst thou not have had gold?
- چورابی اولمازمیدی *chorabi olmazmiidi*, etc. i. e. should he not have had socks?
- شرابمز اولمازمیدی *sharabimiz, olmazmiidi*, etc. i. e. would we not have had wine?
- شکرکز اولمازمیدی *shekeriniz olmazmiidi*, etc. i. e. would you not have had sugar?
- فشکلری اولمازمیدی *fishekleri olmazmiidi*, etc. i. e. should they not have had cartridges?

CHAPTER XXIV.

THE FORMATION AND CONJUGATION OF COMPOUND VERBS.

The Turkish language is very rich in compound verbs, active and passive, transitive and intransitive. These are formed by prefixing to the auxiliary verb either an Arabic, Persian, Turkish or foreign adjective or substantive, the adjective or substantive remaining unchanged through all the moods, tenses and persons.

Active compound verbs are generally formed by an Arabic verbal noun, or noun of action, followed by one of the five active and four passive auxiliary verbs.

Active.

ایتمک *etmek*,
ایلمک *eylemek*,
قیلمک *qilmaq*, } these auxiliaries have the same meaning,
to do.

(ایتمک *etmek* is more frequently used than the 2nd and 3rd.)

اولمق *olmaq*, to be.

بیورمق *buyurmaq*, to deign to do, to be kind enough, or
good enough to do, to command.

Passive.

ایدلمک *edilmek*,

اولنمق *olunmaq*,

قلنمق *qilinmaq*,

بیورلمق *buyurulmaq*,¹

} to be made, to be done, thus:

ترک ایتmek *terk etmek*, to abandon.

حرکت ایتmek *hareket etmek*, to act.

تعجب ایتمک *ta'ajjub etmek*, to marvel.

صلح ایتمک *sagh etmek*, to cure, to heal.

حاضر ایتمک *hazir etmek*, to prepare, to get ready.

تشکر ایتمک *teshekkyur etmek*, to thank.

رجا ایتمک *rijā etmek*, to request.

خط ایتمک *hazz etmek*, to be pleased, to be glad.

حاضر اولمق *hazir olmaq*, to be present in person,
to be ready, to make one's self ready.

نماز قیلمق *namaz qilmaq*, to perform one's devotions.

تاقلان قیلمق *taqlaq qilmaq*, to tumble head over heels,
(this verb is not much used).

بیورمق *buyurmaq*, to deign to do, to be kind,
or good enough to do, to command, to
exercise authority, act as master, give
orders; to say, to do anything; used
when speaking of a superior, in fact it
is the Turkish verb of politeness.

بیورک *buyurun!* I beg of you! do me the favour!

ایحرو بیوردیکنز *icheri buyurunuz*, pray walk in, come in.

نه بیوردیکنز *ne buyurdunuz*, what did you say?

نه بیوردیلر *ne buyurdular*, what did they say?

بیورولمق *buyurulmaq*, to be commanded.

بیورلدی *buyuruldu*, «it is decreed» a mandate, or
decree; especially «a safe conduct» de-
livered to an individual about to travel
in Turkey.

اولمق *olmaq*, } to become, to be.

اولنمق *olunmaq*, }

حاضر اولمق *hazir olmaq*, to be present in person,
to be ready.

عمل اولنمق *amel olunmaq*, to be acted upon.

حمايت وصيانت اولنمق *himāyet u siyānet olunmaq*, to be protected and defended (from harm and oppression).

This auxiliary passive verb اولنمق *olunmaq*, which by itself does not admit of translation and to which there is nothing corresponding in English, is used as the passive of ايلمك *eylemek*.

§ 1. The following are examples of the verb ايتمك *etmek* «to do,» in the negative, impotential, dubitative, potential, and other forms.

امر ابتنامك *emr etmemek*, not to command.

امر ابدءمامك *emr idememek*, not to be able to command.

امر ايتمش *emr etmish*, it is said that he commanded.

امر ابدء بلمك *emr ide bilmek*, to be able to command.

امر ايدبويرمك *emr idivermek*, to command in an off-hand manner.

عداوت ايدشمك *adavet idishmek*, to hate mutually.

محبت ايدشمك *mahabbet idishmek*, } to love mutually.
عشق ايدشمك *ushq idishmek*, }

عداوت ايتدرمك *adavet ettirmek*, to cause, or let to hate.

محبت ايتدرمك *mahabbet ettirmek*, to cause to love.

عداوت ايدشدرمك *adavet idishdirmek*, to cause to hate mutually.

محبت ايدشدرمك *mahabbet idishdirmek*, to cause to love mutually.

§ 2. All Turkish affirmative verbs, active or passive transitive or intransitive, are conjugated in the same manner

(NOTE. There are only two infinitive terminations مک *mek*, and مق *maq*, as سومک *sevmek*, «to love,» and یازمق *yazmaq*, «to write,» wherever the Arabic ك *kef*, becomes Persian ک i.e. *g*, the letter ق *qaf*, is changed into غ *ghain*).

* The servile vowels and consonants are modified by the laws of euphony alone.

CHAPTER XXV.

THE CONJUGATION OF A REGULAR ACTIVE VERB ENDING IN مک *mek*, WHICH WILL SERVE AS A MODEL FOR ALL VERBS WITH THE SAME TERMINATION.

Infinitive mood مصدر *masdar*.

سومک *sevmek*, «to love».

Imperative امر *emr*, سو *sev*, «love thou,» is always the root of a Turkish verb.

Indicative mood.

Present حال *hāl*.

Sing.

سو یورم	<i>sev iyor-im</i> ¹⁾	I love, I am loving.	
سو یورسن	<i>sev iyor-sin</i> ,	thou lovest	»
سو یور	<i>sev iyor</i> ,	he, she, loves	»

Plur.

سو - یور - ز	<i>sev-iyor-iz</i> ,	we love, or we are loving.	
سو - یور - سکز	<i>sev-iyor-siniz</i> ,	you love, or	» »
سو - یور - لر	<i>sev-iyor-ler</i> ,	they	» » » »

1) Also pronounced *sev-iyor-um*, etc.

Imperfect حال حکایه hikāye-i hāl.

Sing.

سویور ایلم *sev-iyor-idim*¹⁾, I was loving.
 سویور ایڈک *sev-iyor-idin*, thou wast loving.
 سویور ایڈی *sev-iyor-idi*, he, she, was »

Plur.

سویور ایڈک *sev-iyor-idik*, we were loving.
 سویور ایڈیکر *sev-iyor-idiniz*, you were »
 سویور ایڈیلر *sev-iyor-udiler*, they » »

Aorist مضارع muzāri.

Sing.

سویورم *sev-er-im*, I love (habitually) I shall or will love.
 سوریسن *sev-er-sin*, thou lovest (habitually) thou shalt or wilt »
 سور *sev-er*, he, she, loves, shall or will love.

Plur.

سوریز *sev-er-iz*, we love, shall or will love.
 سورسینیز *sev-er-siniz*, you love » » » »
 سورلر *sev-er-ler*, they » » » » »

Past habitual حکایه مضارع hikāye-i-muzāri.

Sing.

سویور ایلم *sev-er-idim* } I used to love, I would love.
 سوردم *sev-er-dim* } I would have loved.
 سوریڈک *sev-er-idin* } thou usedst to love, wouldst love
 سورڈک *sev-er-din* } or wouldst have loved.
 سوریڈی *sev-er-idi* } he, she, used to love, would love
 سورڈی *sev-er-di* } or would have loved.

1) Or سویوردم *sev-iyor-dim*, etc

Plur.

سورایدك - sev-er-idik, we used to love, would love,
or would have loved.

سورایدیکز - sev-er-idiniz, you used to love, would love,
or would have loved.

سورایدیلر - sev-er-idiler, they used to love, would love,
or would have loved.

Past dubitative or narrative ماضی نقلی *mazi naqli*.

Sing.

سومشم sev-mish-im, I have loved, «I believe».

سومشسن sev-mish-sin, thou hast » »

سومش (در) sev-mish-(dir), he, she, has loved, «I believe».

Plur.

سومشز sev-mish-iz, we have loved, «I believe».

سومشسکز sev-mish-siniz, you have » »

سومشلر sev-mish-ler, they » » »

(NOTE. This tense is generally used in a dubitative manner.

When the particle مش *mish*, or ایش *imish*, is added to the tenses and persons of the indicative or necessitive moods it makes the statement doubtful).

کتورمشسن *getirmishsin*, thou hast brought, I think
or I believe.

ویرمشز *vermishiz*, we have given, I think, I believe.

سوملورمش sev-meli-ler-mish, they ought to love, «it
is said,» etc.

صاتون المش (در) *satun satin almish (dir)*, he, she, has bought,
I think, etc.

Perfect ماضی شهودی *māzi shuhūdi*.

Sing.

سودم sev-dim, I loved, did love, or have loved.

سودك *sev-din*, thou lovedst, didst love, or hast loved.
 سودى *sev-di*, he, she, loved, did love, or has loved.

Plur.

سودك *sev-dik*, we loved, did love, or have loved. .
 سوديكتر *sev-diniz*, you » » » » » »
 سوديلر *sev-diler*, they » » » » » »

Pluperfect dubitative ^عنقلی حکایه ماضی *hikyāye-i-māzi naqli*.

Sing.

سومشدم *sev-mish-dim*, } I had loved.
 سومش ایدم *sev-mish-idim*, }
 سومش دك *sev-mish-din*, } thou hadst loved.
 سومش ایدك *sev-mish-idin*, }
 سومش دى *sev-mish-di*, } he, she, had loved.
 سومش ایدی *sev-mish-idi*, }

Plur.

سومش دك *sev-mish-dik*, } we had loved.
 سومش ایدك *sev-mish-idik*, }
 سومش ديكتر *sev-mish-diniz*, } you had loved.
 سومش ایدكتر *sev-mish-idiniz*, }
 سومش ديلر *sev-mish-diler*, } they had loved.
 سومش ایديلر *sev-mish-idiler*, }

Pluperfect.

Sing.

سودم ایدی *sev-dim-idi*, } I had loved.
 سودیدم *sev-di-dim*, }
 سودك ایدی *sev-din-idi*, } thou hadst loved.
 سودیدك *sev-di-din*, }
 سودى ایدی *sev-di-idi*, } he, she, had loved.
 سودیدی *sev-di-di*, }

Plur.

سودك ايدى	<i>sev-dik-idi,</i>	{	we had loved.
سوديدك	<i>sev-di-dik,</i>		
سوديكز ايدى	<i>sev-diniz-idi,</i>	{	you had loved.
سوديدكز	<i>sev-didiniz,</i>		
سوديلر ايدى	<i>sov-diler-idi,</i>	{	they had loved.
سوديديلر	<i>sev-didi-ler,</i>		

Future مستقبل *mustaqbel.*

Sing.

سوءه جكم	<i>sev-ejc-yim,</i>	I shall or will love, am going to love, am about to love.
سوءه جكسن	<i>sev-ejek-sin,</i>	thou shalt or wilt love.
سوءه جك	<i>sev-ejek,</i>	he, she, shall or will love.

Plur.

سوءه جكز	<i>sev-eje-yiz,</i>	we shall or will love.
سوءه جكسكز	<i>sev-ejek-siniz,</i>	you shall or will love.
سوءه جكلر	<i>sev-ejek-ler,</i>	they shall or will love.

Past future حكاية مستقبل *hikyaye-i mustaqbel.*

Sing.

سوءه جك ايدم	<i>sev-ejek-idim;</i>	{	I was about to love.
سوءه جكدم	<i>sev-ejek-dim,</i>		
سوءه جك ايدك	<i>sev-ejek-idin,</i>	{	thou wast about to love.
سوءه جكدك	<i>sev-ejek-din,</i>		
سوءه جك ايدى	<i>sev-ejek-idi,</i>	{	he, she, was about to love.
سوءه جكدى	<i>sev-ejek-di,</i>		

Plur.

سوءه جك ايدك	<i>sev-ejek-idik,</i>	{	we were about to love.
سوءه جكدك	<i>sev-ejek-dik,</i>		

سهوچك ايدىكز *sev-ejek-idiniz*, } you were about to love.
 سهوچكدىكز *sev-ejek-diniz*, }
 سهوچكلرايدى *sev-ejek-idiler*, } they were about to love.
 سهوچكدلر *sev-ejek-diler*, }

Necessitative mood فعل وجوبى *fili vujûbi*.

Aorist مضارع *muzâri*.

Sing.

سوملويم *sev-meli-yim*, I must love, or ought to love.
 سوملوسين *sev-meli-sin*, thou must, or oughtest to love.
 سوملو(در) *sev-meli-(dir)*, he, she, must love, or ought to love.

Plur.

سوملوايز *sev-meli-iz*, we must love, or ought to love.
 سوملوسينز *sev-meli-siniz*, you must love, or ought to love.

سوملولر *sev-meli-ler*, } they must love, or ought to love.
 سومليدلر *sev-meli-dirler*, }

Past حكاية فعل وجوبى *hikyaye-i-fili vujûbi*.

Sing.

سوملى ايدىم *sev-meli-idim*, I must have loved, or ought to have loved.
 سوملى ايدىك *sev-meli-idin*, thou must have loved, or oughtest to have loved.
 سوملى ايدى *sev-meli-idi*, he, she, must have loved, or ought to have loved.

Plur.

سوملى ايدىك *sev-meli-idik*, we must have loved, or ought to have loved.

سوملی ای دیکنر *sev-meli-idiniz*, you must have loved,
or ought to have loved.

سوملو لرایدی *sev-meli-ler-idi*, } they must have loved, or ought
سوملی ای دیلر *sev-meli-idi-ler*, } to have loved.

Optative mood فعل التزامی *fili iltizāmi*.

Aorist مضارع *muzāri*.

Sing.

سوه ایم *sev-eyim*, } that I (may) love.
سوه ام *sev-em*, }
سوه سین *sev-esin*, that thou (mayest) love.
سوه *se-ve*, that he, she, (may) love.

Plur.

سوه لیم *sev-elim*, that we (may) love.
سوه سینیز *sev-esiniz*, that you » »
سوه لیر *sev-eler*, that they » »

Past حکایه فعل التزامی *hikyūye-i-fili iltizami*.

Sing.

سوه ای دیم *sev-e-idim*, O that I had loved, or had I loved.
سوه ای دیک *sev-e-idin*, O that thou hadst loved, or hadst thou
loved.
سوه ای دی *sev-e-idi*, O that he, she, had loved, or had he, she,
loved.

Plur.

سوه ای دیک *sev-e-idik*, O that we had loved, or had we loved.
سوه ای دیکیز *sev-e-idiniz*, O that you had loved, or had you
loved.
سوه ای دیلر *sev-e-idiler*, O that they had loved, or had they
loved.

Conditional mood.

Aorist مضارع شرطی *muzāri' sharti.*

Sing.

eyer, if. اگر	sev-er-isem,	} if I love.
	sev-er-sem,	
	sev-er-isen,	} if thou lovest.
	sev-er-sen,	
	sev-er-ise,	} if he, she, love.
	sev-er-se,	

Plur.

eyer, if. اگر	sev-er-isek,	} if we love.
	sev-er-sek,	
	sev-er-iseniz,	} if you love.
	sev-er-seniz,	
	sev-er-isciler,	} if they love.
	sev-er-seler,	

فعل التزامی شرطی *fı'lı iltizāmī-i sharti.*

Sing.

eyer, if. اگر	sev-sem,	if I love; if I were to love.
	sev-sen,	if thou love; if thou were to love.
	sev-se,	if he, she, love; if he, she, were to love.

Plur.

eyer, if. اگر	sev-sek,	if we love; if we were to love.
	sev-seniz,	if you love; if you were to love.
	sev-seler,	if they love; if they were to love.

Past ماضی سابق *māzi sūbiq.*

Sing.

kyash- ke, keshke, O that.	sev-mish-ola-idim,	if I had loved.
	sev-mish-ola-idin,	if thou had loved.
	sev-mish-ola-idi,	if he, she, had loved.

Plur.

O that I, would that. } *sev-mish-ola-idig*, if we had loved.
 O that I, would that. } *sev-mish-ola-idiniz*, if you had loved.
 O that I, would that. } *sev-mish-ola-idiler*, if they had loved.

Imperative mood *امر حاضر و غایب emr-i hāzir ve ghā'ib.*

Sing.

سو sev, love thou.

سومون sev-sin, let him, her, love.

Plur.

سودلم sev-e-lim, let us love.

سویکنز sev-i-niz, } love you, love ye.
سوک sev-in, }

سوسونلر sev-sin-ler, let them love.

Active participle *اسم فاعل ismi fā'il.*

Present *حال hāl.*

سوم sev-èn, loving, who loves, loved, or will love (declinable).

Aorist *مضارع muzāric.*

سور sev-er, loving, who loves, loved, or will love (indeclinable). This is not used because the preceding supplies its place.

Past *ماضی māzi.*

سودک sev-dik, who, or which has loved, (declinable).

سومش sev-mish, who, or which has loved, (indeclinable).

Future *مستقبل mustaqbel.*

سودجک sev-ejek, who, or which will love, (declinable).

Passive participle اسم مفعول *ismi mef'ul*.

Aorist مضارع *muzāri*.

سودك *sev-dik*, who, or which is or has been loved.
 سودهك *sev-ejek*, who, or which is to be loved.

Verbal nouns اسماء فعلی *esmā fili*.

Present حال *hāl*.

سومه *sev-me*, the act of loving.

Perfect ماضی *māzi*.

سودك *sev-dik*, the act of having loved.

Future مستقبل *mustaqbel*.

سودهك *sev-ejek*, the act of being about to love.

Gerunds.

سوروب *sev-ip*, loving, having loved.

سورهك *sev-erek*, while loving, continuing to love.

سوناجه *sev-inje*,
 سويجك *sev-ijek*, } as soon as loving, or on loving.

سوه سوه *sev-e sev-e*, by loving and loving, or continually loving.

سومگين *sev-megin*, by reason of loving.

سولهی *sev-eli*,
 سولهو *sev-elı*, } since loving.

CHAPTER XXVI.

THE CONJUGATION OF A REGULAR PASSIVE VERB ENDING
IN مک *mek*, WHICH WILL SERVE AS A MODEL FOR
ALL PASSIVE VERBS WITH THE SAME TER-
MINATION.

The passive verb فعل مجهول *fi'li mejhūl*.

Indicative mood.

Present حال *hāl*.

Sing.

سولیورم *sev-ilyor-im*, I am being loved.
سولیورسن *sev-ilyor-sin*, thou art being loved.
سولیور *sev-ilyor*, he, she, it, is » »

Plur.

سولیوریز *sev-ilyor-iz*, we are being loved.
سولیورسینیز *sev-ilyor-siniz*, you » » »
سولیورلر *sev-ilyor-ler*, they » » »

Imperfect حال حکله *hikyāye-i hāl*.

Sing.

سولیورایدیم *sev-ilyor-idim*, I was being loved.
سولیورایدین *sev-ilyor-idin*, thou wast being loved.
سولیورایدی *sev-ilyor-idi*, he, she, it, was being loved.

Plur.

سولیورایدیک *sev-iliyor-idik*, we were being loved.
سولیورایدینیز *sev-iliyor-idiniz*, you were » »
سولیورلرایدی *sev-iliyor-ler-idi*, they were being loved.

Aorist مضارع *muzâri*.

Sing.

سولورم *sev-ilir-im*, I am loved habitually, I shall be loved.
 سولورسن *sev-ilir-sin*, thou art, or wilt be loved.
 سولور *sev-ilir*, he, she, it, will be, or is »

Plur.

سولوروز *sev-ilir-iz*, we are, or shall be loved.
 سولورسينيز *sev-ilir-siniz*, you are, or will be loved.
 سولورلر *sev-ilir-ler*, they » » » » »

Past حكمة مضارع *hikyâye-i-muzârû*.

Sing.

سولورايديم *sev-ilir-idim*, I was, or would have been loved.
 سولورايدين *sev-ilir-idin*, thou wast, or wouldst have been loved.
 سولورايدي *sev-ilir-idi*, he, she, was, or would have been loved.

Plur.

سولورايديك *sev-ilir-idik*, we were, or would have been loved.
 سولورايدينيز *sev-ilir-idiniz*, you were, or would have been loved.
 سولورلرايدي *sev-ilir-ler-idi*, they were, or would have been loved.

Perfect ماضى شهودى *muzi 'shuhûdi*.

Sing.

سولديم *sev-il-dim*, I was, or have been loved.
 سولدين *sev-il-din*, thou wast, or thou hast been loved.
 سولدي *sev-il-di*, he, she, was or has been loved.

Plur.

سولڊك *sev-il-dik*, we were, or have been loved.
 سولڊيكنر *sev-il-diniz*, you were, or have been loved.
 سولڊيلر *sev-il-diler*, they » » » » »

Pluperfect حكاية ماضى شهودى *hikyaye mazi shuhūdi*.

Sing.

سولدم ايدى *sev-il-dim-idi*, I had been loved.
 سولدين ايدى *sev-il-din-idi*, thou hadst been loved.
 سولدي ايدى *sev-il-di-idi*, he, she, had » »

Plur.

سولڊك ايدى *sev-il-dik-idi*, we had been loved.
 سولڊيكنر ايدى *sev-il-diniz-idi*, you » » »
 سولڊيلر ايدى *sev-il-diler-idi*, they had been loved.

Future مستقبل *mustaqbel*.

Sing.

سوله جكم *sev-ileje-yim*, I shall be loved.
 سوله جكسين *sev-ilejek-sin*, thou will be loved.
 سوله جك *sev-ilejek*, he, she, will » »

Plur.

سوله جكنر *sev-ileje-yiz*, we shall be loved.
 سوله جكسينر *sev-ilejek-siniz*, you will be loved.
 سوله جكلر *sev-ilejek-ler*, they will » »

Past future حكاية مستقبل *hikyāye mustaqbel*.

Sing.

سوله جك ايدم *sev-ilejek-idim*, I was about to be loved.
 سوله جك ايدن *sev-ilejek-idin*, thou wast about to be loved.
 سوله جك ايدى *sev-ilejek-idi*, he, she, was about to be loved.

Plur.

سوله جك ايدك *sev-ilejek-idik*, we were about to be loved.
 سوله جك ايديكز *sev-ilejek-idiniz*, you were about to be loved.
 سوله جكلريدى *sev-ilejek-ler-idi*, they were about to be loved.

Necessitative فعل وجوبى *fili vujûbi*.

Aorist مضارع *muzâri*.

Sing.

سولملييم *sev-ilmeli-yim*, I must, or ought to be loved.
 سولمليسين *sev-ilmeli-sin*, thou must, or oughtest to be loved.
 سولملى (دِر) *sev-ilmeli (dir)*, he, she, must, or ought to be loved.
 سولملو *sev-ilmeli*,

Plur.

سولملييز *sev-ilmeli-yiz*, we must, or ought to be loved.
 سولمليسينز *sev-ilmeli-siniz*, you must, or ought to be loved.
 سولمليدِرلر *sev-ilmeli-dir-ler*, they must, or ought to be loved.
 سولملولردِر *sev-ilmeli-ler-dir*,

Perfect حكاية فعل وجوبى *hikyâye-i fili vujûbi*.

Sing.

سولملى ايديم *sev-ilmeli-idim*, I ought to have been, or must have been loved.
 سولملى ايدك *sev-ilmeli-idin*, thou oughtest to have been, or must have been loved.
 سولملى ايدى *sev-ilmeli-idi*, he, she, ought to have been, or must have been loved.

Plur.

- *
 سولملى ايدىك *sev-ilmeli-idik*, we ought to have been, or must have been loved.
 سولملى ايدىكىز *sev-ilmeli-idiniz*, you ought to have been, or must have been loved.
 سولملى ايدىلەر *sev-ilmeli-idi-ler*, they ought to have been, or must have been loved.

Optative فعل التزامى *fuli iltizami*.Aorist مضارع *muzārit*.

Sing.

- سوليم *sev-ile-yim*, that I may be loved.
 سوليسين *sev-ile-sin*, that thou mayest be loved.
 سوله *sev-ile*, that he, she, may be loved.

Plur.

- سولەنيز *sev-ile-yiz*,
 سولەلم *sev-ile-lim*, } that we may be loved.
 سولەسىنيز *sev-ile-siniz*, that you may be loved.
 سولەلەر *sev-ile-ler*, that they may be loved.

P a s t.

Sing.

- سولەيدىم *sev-ile-idim*, that I. might be, or might have been loved.
 سولەيدىك *sev-ile-idin*, that thou mightest be, or mightest have been loved.
 سولەيدى *sev-ile-idi*, that he, she, might be, or might have been loved.

Plur.

- سولەيدىك *sev-ile-idik*, that we might be, or might have been loved.

سوله ايدىكيز *sev-ile-idiniz*, that you might be, or might have been loved.

سوله ايديلر *sev-ile-idiler*, that they might be, or might have been loved.

Conditional فعل شرطى *fi'li sharti*.

Aorist مضارع *muzāri*.

Sing.

سولسم *sev-il-sem*, if I be loved.

سولسك *sev-il-sen*, if thou be loved.

سولسه *sev-il-se*, if he, she, be loved.

Plur.

سولسك *sev-il-sek*, if we be loved.

سولسكيز *sev-il-seniz*, if you be loved.

سولسلر *sev-il-ler*, if they be »

or

Sing.

eyer, if. { سولسم *sev-il-sem*, if I be loved.
سولسك *sev-il-sen*, if thou be loved.
سولسه *sev-il-se*, if he, she, be loved.

Plur.

سولسك *sev-il-sek*, if we be loved.

سولسكيز *sev-il-seniz*, if you be loved.

سولسلر *sev-il-ler*, if they be »

Perfect حكاية فعل التزامى شرطى *hikyāye-i fi'li iltizāmi-i sharti*.

Sing.

سولسيديم *sev-ilse-idim*, if I were, or had been loved.

سولسيديك *sev-ilse-idin*, if thou wert, or had been loved.

سولسيدي *sev-ilse-idi*, if he, she, were, or had » »

Plur.

سولسییدک	<i>sev-ilse-idik</i> , if we were, or had been loved.
سولسییدیکیز	<i>sev-ilse-idiniz</i> , if you » » » » »
سولسییدیلر	<i>sev-ilse-idiler</i> , if they » » » » »

or

Sing.

سولمیش ایسم	<i>sev-ilmish-isem</i> , if I were, or had been loved.
سولمیش ایسدک	<i>sev-ilmish-isen</i> , if thou wert, or » » »
سولمیش ایسه	<i>sev-ilmish-ise</i> , if he, she, were » » » »

Plur.

سولمیش ایسدک	<i>sev-ilmish-isek</i> , if we were, or had been loved.
سولمیش ایسدکیز	<i>sev-ilmish-iseniz</i> , if you » » » » »
سولمیش ایسدلر	<i>sev-ilmish-iseler</i> , if they » » » » »

Imperative امر حاضر و غایب *emr hāzır ve ghāyib*.

Sing.

سول	<i>sev-il</i> , be thou loved.
سولسون	<i>sev-il-sin</i> , let him, her, be loved.

Plur.

سولئلیم	<i>sev-ile-lim</i> , let us be loved.
سولکیز	<i>sev-il-iniz</i> , be you loved.
سولسونلر	<i>sev-il-sinler</i> , let them be loved.

Active participle اسم فاعل *ism-i fā'il*.

Present حال *hāl*.

سولان *sev-ilen*, being, who, or which is, was, or will be loved.

Aorist مضارع *mazārī*.

سولور، سولیلر *sev-ilir*, being, who, or which is, or will be loved.

Past ماضى *māzi*.

sevimish *sev-ilmish*, who, or which has been loved (indeclinable).

Perfect شهودى ماضى *māzi shuhūdi*.

sevidik *sev-ildik*, who, or which has been loved.

Future مستقبل *mustaqbel*.

seviyecek *sev-ilejek*, who, or which will be loved.

Passive participle اسم مفعول *ism-i mef'ul*.

Aorist مضارع *muzāri*.

sevidik *sev-ildik*, who, or which has been loved (declinable).

Future مستقبل *mustaqbel*.

seviyecek *sev-ilejek*, who, or which will be loved (declinable).

Verbal nouns اسم فعلى *ism-i fili*.

Present حال *hal*.

sevilmek *sev-ilme*, the act of being loved.

Perfect ماضى *māzi*.

sevidik *sev-ildik*, the act of having been loved.

Future مستقبل *mustaqbel*.

seviyecek *sev-ilejek*, the act of being about to be loved.

Gerunds.

sevilip *sev-ilip*, being, or having been loved.

sevilerek *sev-ilerek*, while being loved.

sevinince *sev-ilinje*, }
sevilince *sev-ilijek*, } on being loved, as soon as being loved.

سوله سوله *sev-ile-sev-ile*, by dint of continually being loved.

سولمکین *sev-ilmeyin*, by reason of being, or having been loved.

سوله لی *sev-ileli*,
سوله لور *sev-ileli*, } ever since being loved.

CHAPTER XXVII.

THE NEGATIVE VERBS.

The negative verb is formed by the insertion of the letter م *mim*, or the particle ما *ma*, or *me*, immediately after the root of the verb, and is conjugated regularly in the same way as the affirmative verb, except in the Aorist, and in the indeclinable participle present. These forms instead of ending with the letter ر *re* (as in affirmative verbs) terminate in مز pronounced *mez* or *maz* according as the infinitive ends in مك or مق *maq*.

ياز مق *yaz-maq*, to write.

ياز ما مق *yaz-ma-maq*, not to write.

قال مق *qal-maq*, to remain, stay, stop, rest.

قال ما مق *qal-ma-maq*, not to remain etc.

قپا مق *qapa-maq*, to cover.

قپا ما مق *qapa-ma-maq*, not to cover.

صایم مق *sai-maq*, to count.

صایم ما مق *sai-ma-maq*, not to count.

سومک *sev-mek*, to love.

سومک *sev-me-mek*, not to love.

کلمک *gel-mek*, to come.

کلمک *gel-me-mek*, not to come.

پشیرمک *pishir-mek*, to cook.

پیشرمک *pishir-me-mek*, not to cook.

یمک *ye-mek*, to eat.

ییمک *ye-me-mek*, not to eat.

ایچمک *ich-mek*, to drink.

ایچممک *ich-me-mek*, not to drink.

گتمک *git-mek*, to go.

گتممک *git-me-mek*, not to go.

بلمک *bil-mek*, to know.

بلممک *bil-me-mek*, not to know.

اوپمک *eup-mek*, to kiss.

اوپممک *eup-me-mek*, not to kiss, etc.

§ 1. Conjugation of a negative verb, the first person sing. and plur. in each tense is given.

سومک *sev-mek*, to love.

سوممک *sev-me-mek*, not to love.

Indicative present.

Sing. سومیورم *sev-me-yor-im*, I am not loving.

Plur. سومیورز *sev-me-yor-iz*, we are » »

Imperfect.

Sing. سومیورایدیم *sev-me-yor-idim*, I was not loving.

Plur. سومیورایدیک *sev-me-yor-idik*, we were » »

Aorist.

Sing. سومم *sev-mem*, I love not, or shall not love.

Plur. سومیز *sev-me-yiz*, we love not, or shall not love.

Past habitual.

Sing. سومزایدیم *sev-mez-idim*, I used not to love, I would not love, or would not have loved.

Plur. سومزایدیک *sev-mez-idik*, we used not to love, we would not love, or would not have loved.

Perfect.

- Sing. سومدم *sev-me-dim*, I did not, or have not loved.
 Plur. سومدك *sev-me-dik*, we did not, or have not loved.

Pluperfect.

- Sing. سوممشمدم *sev-me-mish-dim*,
 سومديدم *sev-me-di-dim*,
 سومدم ايدى *sev-me-dim-idi*, } I had not loved.
 Plur. سوممشمدك *sev-me-mish-dik*,
 سوممشم ايدك *sev-me-mish-idik* } we had not loved.

Future.

- Sing. سوميه جكم *sev-me-yeje-yim*, I shall or will not love.
 Plur. سوميه جكز *sev-me-yeje-yiz*, we » » » » »

Past future.

- Sing. سوميه جكدم *sev-me-yeje-y-idim*, I was not about to love.
 Plur. سوميه جكدك *sev-me-yeje-y-dik*, we were » » » » »

Necessitative.

Aorist.

- Sing. سومملييم, سومملونم *sev-me-meli-yim*, I must not, I ought not to love.
 Plur. سومملييز, سومملونز *sev-me-meli-y-iz*, we ought not to have loved.

Optative.

Aorist.

- Sing. سومملييم *sev-meye-y-im*, that I may not love.
 Plur. سوممليلم *sev-meye-lim*, that we » » »

Past.

Sing. سومیه ایدم *sev-meye-idim*, that I had not loved.

Plur. سومیه ایدک *sev-meye-idik*, that we » » »

Conditional.

Aorist.

if, eyer, هک	{	Sing. سومز ایسم <i>sev-mez-isem</i> ,	}	if I do not love.
		سومزسم <i>sev-mez-sem</i> ,		
	{	Plur. سومز ایدک <i>sev-mez-isek</i> ,	}	if we do not love.
		سومز سک <i>sev-mez-sek</i> ,		

Past.

Sing. سوممش اوله ایدم *sev-memish-ola-idim*, if I had not loved.

Plur. سوممش اوله ایدک *sev-memish-ola-idik*, if we » » »

Imperative.

Sing. سومه *sev-me*, love not thou.

Plur. سومیه لم *sev-meye-lim*, let us not love.

Active participle ¹).

Present.

(¹ سومین, سومیان *sev-meyen*, who, or which does not love,
has not loved, will not love.

Aorist.

سومز *sev-mez*, who, or which not loves habitually, or will
not love.

Past.

سوممش *sev-memish*, who, or which has not loved, (inde-
clinable).

1) Participles are also used as adjectives and substantives

Perfect.

سومدك *sev-me-dik*, who has not loved, (declinable with the affixes.

Future.

سوميديك *sev-meyejek*, who, or which will not love.

Passive participle.

Aorist.

سومدك *sev-me-dik*, who, or which is or has not been loved.

Future.

سوميديك *sev-meyejek*, who, or which will not be loved.

Verbal nouns.

Present.

سوميديك *sev-me-me*, the act of not loving.

Perfect.

سومدك *sev-me-dik*, the act of not having loved.

Future.

سوميديك *sev-meyejek*, the act of not being about to love.

Gerunds.

سوميديك *sev-meyip*, not loving, not having loved.

سوميديك *sev-meyerek*, while not having loved, not continuing to love.

سوميديك *sev-meyinje*, } as soon as not loving, or on not
 سوميديك *sev-meyjek*, } loving.

سوميديك *sev-meye sev-meye*, by not loving and loving,
 or by continually not loving.

سومکین *sev-megin*, by reason of not loving.
 سومیهلی، سومیهلی *sev-me-yeli*, ever since – because (has been)
 not loving.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

THE CONJUGATION, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE, OF A REGULAR
 VERB ENDING IN مق *maq*, WHICH WILL SERVE AS A
 MODEL FOR ALL VERBS ENDING IN مق *maq*.

Infinitive.

یازمق *yaz-maq*, to write.
 یازممق *yaz-ma-maq*, not to write.

Imperative.

یاز *yaz*, write thou, (this is the root of the verb).
 یازمه *yaz-ma*, write thou not.

Indicative mood.

Present.

Affirmative.

Sing. یازمورم *yaz-iyorum*, I am writing.
 یازمورسن *yaz-iyor-sin*, thou art »
 یازمور *yaz-iyor*, he, she, is »
 Plur. یازموریز *yaz-iyor-iz*, we are writing.
 یازمورسکز *yaz-iyor-siniz*, you are »
 یازمورلر *yaz-iyor-lar*, they are »

Negative.

Sing. یازمیورم *yaz-ma-yor-um*, I am not writing.
 یازمیورسن *yaz-ma-yor-sun*, thou art not writing.
 یازمیور *yaz-ma-yor*, he, she, is not »

- Plur. یاز میوزر *yaz-ma-yor-uz*, we are not writing.
 یاز میوزر سکز *yaz-ma-yor-siniz*, you are not »
 یاز میوزر لار *yaz-ma-yor-lar*, they » » »

Imperfect.

Affirmative.

- Sing. یاز میوز ایدم *yaz-iyor-udum*, } I was writing.
 یاز میوز دم *yaz-iyor-dum*, }
 یاز میوز دک *yaz-iyor-udun*, thou wast »
 یاز میوز دی *yaz-iyor-udu*, he, she, was writing.
 Plur. یاز میوز دق *yaz-iyor-uduq*, we were »
 یاز میوز دیکز *yaz-iyor-udunuz*, you were »
 یاز میوز دیلر *yaz-iyor-udular*, they » »

Negative.

- Sing. یاز میوز ایدم *yaz-ma-yor-udu*, } I was not writing. *
 یاز میوز دم *yaz-ma-yor-du*, }
 یاز میوز دیک *yaz-ma-yor-udun*, thou wast not writing.
 یاز میوز ایدی *yaz-ma-yor-udum*, he, she was not writing.
 یاز میوز دی *yaz-ma-yor-dum*,
 Plur. یاز میوز دق *yaz-ma-yor-uduq*, we were not
 یاز میوز دق *yaz-ma-yor-uduq*,
 یاز میوز ایدیکز *yaz-ma-yor-udunuz*, } you were not »
 یاز میوز دیکز *yaz-ma-yor-dunuz*, }
 یاز میوز ایدیلر *yaz-ma-yor-udular*, } they were not »
 یاز میوز دیلر *yaz-ma-yor-dular*, }

Affirmative.

Aorist.

- Sing. یاز ام *yaz-ar-im*, I write habitually, I shall or will write.
 یاز ام سین *yaz-ar-sin*.
 یاز ار *yaz-ar*.

- Plur. یازارز *yaz-ar-iz*, we write, shall or will write.
 یازارسن *yaz-ar-siniz*, you write, » » » »
 یازارلر *yaz-ar-lar*, they » » » » »

Negative.

- Sing. یازمام *yaz-ma-m*, I do not, shall not, would not write.
 یازماسن *yaz-maz-sin*, thou dost not, shalt » »
 یازماز *yaz-maz*, he, she, does not, or will » »
 Plur. یازمایز *yaz-ma-yiz*, we do not, or shall » »
 یازماسنیز *yaz-maz-siniz*, you do not, or will » »
 یازمالر *yaz-maz-lar*, they » » » » »

Past.

Affirmative.

- Sing. یازارایدم *yaz-ar-idim*, { I used to write, I would
 یازاردیم *yaz-ar-dim*, { have written.
 یازارایدک *yaz-ar-idin*, { thou usedst to write, or
 یازاردک *yaz-ar-din*, { wouldst have written.
 یازارایدی *yaz-ar-idi*, { he, she, used to write, or
 یازاردی *yaz-ar-di*, { would have written.
 Plur. یازارایدیق *yaz-ar-idiq*, { we used to write, or would
 یازاردیق *yaz-ar-diq*, { have written.
 یازارایدیکیز *yaz-ar-idiniz*, { you used to write, or would
 یازاردیکیز *yaz-ar-diniz*, { have written.
 یازارایدیلر *yaz-ar-idilar*, { they used to write, or would
 یازاردیلر *yaz-ar-dilar*, { have written.

Negative.

- Sing. یازمازایدم *yaz-maz-idim*, { I used not to write, or
 یازمازدیم *yaz-maz-dim*, { would not have written.
 یازمازایدک *yaz-maz-idin*, { thou usedst not to, or
 یازمازدک *yaz-maz-din*, { would not have written.

Sing.	يازماییدی <i>yaz-maz-idi</i> ,	} he, she, used not to, or would not have written.
	يازمادی <i>yaz-maz-di</i> ,	
Plur.	يازماییدق <i>yaz-maz-idiq</i> .	we used not to, or would
	يازمادیق <i>yaz-maz-diq</i> .	not have written.
	يازماییدیکیز <i>yaz-maz-idiniz</i> ,	you used not to, or would
	يازمادیکیز <i>yaz-maz-diniz</i> ,	not have written.
	يازماییدیلر <i>yaz-maz-idilar</i> ,	they used not to, or would
	يازمادیلر <i>yaz-maz-dilar</i> ,	not have written.

Perfect.

Affirmative.

Sing.	يازدم <i>yaz-dim</i> ,	I wrote, did write, or have written.
	يازدك <i>yaz-din</i> ,	thou wrotest, didst write, or » »
	(يازدی ¹ <i>yaz-di</i> ,	he, she, wrote, did write, or has »
Plur.	يازدیق <i>yaz-diq</i> ,	we wrote, did write, or have »
	يازدیکیز <i>yaz-diniz</i> ,	you » » » » » »
	يازدیلر <i>yaz-dilar</i> ,	they » » » » » »

Negative.

Sing.

يازمدم <i>yaz-ma-dim</i> ,	I did not write, I have not written.
يازمدك <i>yaz-ma-din</i> ,	thou didst not write, thou hast not »
يازمدی <i>yaz-ma-di</i> ,	he, she did not write, has not »

1) The Turks sometimes use the following idiom in conversation; this however is obsolescent.

يازدی دوشه *duşte yaz-di*, he, she, it, was on the point of falling, nearly fell.
 يازدی چيکه *chiqa yaz-di*, he, she, it, was on the point of going out, almost went out

يازدی سوه *seve yaz-di*, he, she, it, was on the point of loving, nearly loved, etc.

(In French they say: peu s'en fallût, qu'il ne tombât, qu'il ne sortît, qu'il n'aimât, etc.).

Plur.

یازمادی *yaz-ma-diq*, we did not write, we have not written.

یازمدیکیز *yaz-ma-diniz*, you did not write, you have not »

یازمدیلر *yaz-ma-dilar*, they did not write, they have not »

Perfect.

Affirmative.

Sing.

یازمیشم *yaz-mish-im*, I wrote, did write, or have written.

یازمیشسن *yaz-mish-sin*, thou wrotest, didst write, or have »

یازمیش (در) *yaz-mish (dir)*, he, she, wrote, did write, or has »

Plur.

یازمیشیز *yaz-mish-iz*, we wrote, did write, or have written.

یازمیشسکز *yaz-mish-siniz*, you wrote, did write, or have »

یازمیشلر *yaz-mish-lar*, they wrote, did write, or have »

Negative.

Sing.

یازمیشم *yaz-ma-mish-im*, I did not write, I have not written.

یازمیشسن *yaz-ma-mish-sin*, thou didst not write, or hast not »

یازمیش (در) *yaz-ma-mish (dir)*, he, she, did not write, or has not »

Plur.

یازمیشیز *yaz-ma-mish-iz*, we did not write, or have not written.

یازمیشسکز *yaz-ma-mish-siniz*, you did not write, or have not »

یازمیشلر *yaz-ma-mish-lar*, they did not write, or have not »

Pluperfect.

Affirmative.

Sing. یازدیمیدی *yaz-dim-idi*,

یازمیشیدیم *yaz-mish, idim*, I had written.

یازدیدیم *yaz-didim*,

Sing.	يازدك ايدى <i>yaz-din-idi,</i>	
	يازمش ايدك <i>yaz-mish-idin,</i>	thou hadst written.
	يازدديدك <i>yaz-didin,</i>	
	يازدى ايدى <i>yaz-di-idi,</i>	
	يازمش ايدى <i>yaz-mish-idi,</i>	he, she, had written.
Plur.	يازديدى <i>yaz-didi,</i>	
	يازدق ايدى <i>yaz-di-q-idi,</i>	
	يازمش ايدك <i>yaz-mish-idik,</i>	we had written.
	يازدديدك <i>yaz-didik,</i>	
	يازدى كز ايدى <i>yaz-diniz-idi,</i>	
	يازمش ايدى كز <i>yaz-mish-idiniz,</i>	you had written.
	يازدديدى كز <i>yaz-didiniz,</i>	
	يازدى لار ايدى <i>yaz-dilar-idi,</i>	
	يازمش ايدى لار <i>yaz-mish-idilar,</i>	they had written.
	يازدديدى لار <i>yaz-didi-lar,</i>	

Negative.

Sing.	يازمدىم ايدى <i>yaz-ma-dim-idi,</i>	I had not written.
	يازمش ايدىم <i>yaz-ma-mish-idim,</i>	
	يازمدىدىم <i>yaz-ma-didim,</i>	
	يازمدك ايدى <i>yaz-ma-dim, idi,</i>	
	يازمش ايدك <i>yaz-ma-mish, idin,</i>	thou hadst not written.
	يازمدديدك <i>yaz-ma-didin,</i>	
	يازمدى ايدى <i>yaz-ma-di-idi,</i>	
	يازمش ايدى <i>yaz-ma-mish-idi,</i>	he, she, had not written.
Plur.	يازمديدى <i>yaz-ma-didi,</i>	
	يازمدق ايدى <i>yaz-ma-di-q-idi,</i>	
	يازمش ايدك <i>yaz-ma-mish-idik,</i>	we had not written.
	يازمدديدك <i>yaz-ma-didik,</i>	
	يازمدى كز ايدى <i>yaz-ma-diniz-idi,</i>	
	يازمش ايدى كز <i>yaz-ma-mish-idiniz,</i>	you had not written.
	يازمدديدى كز <i>yaz-ma-didiniz,</i>	

یازمدیلرایدی *yaz-ma-dilar-idi*,
 یازممشایدیلر *yaz-ma-mish-idilar*,
 یازمدیدیلر *yaz-ma-didilar*,

} they had not written.

Future. Affirmative.

Sing.

یازاجغم *yaz-ajagh-im*, I shall, or will write.
 یازاجقسین *yaz-ajaq-sin*, thou shalt, or wilt write.
 یازاجق (در) *yaz-ajaq (dir)*, he, she, shall or will write.

Plur.

یازاجغز *yaz-ajagh-iz*, we shall, or will write.
 یازاجقسکز *yaz-ajaq-siniz*, you shall, or will write.
 یازاجقلر *yaz-ajaq-lar*, they shall, or will »

Negative.

Sing.

یازمیہجغم *yaz-ma-yajagh-im*, I shall, or will not write.
 یازمیہجقسین *yaz-ma-yajaq-sin*, thou shalt, or wilt not *
 یازمیہجق (در) *yaz-ma-yajaq (dir)*, he, she, shall, or will not »

Plur.

یازمیہجغز *yaz-ma-yajagh-iz*, we shall, or will not write.
 یازمیہجقسکز *yaz-ma-yajaq-siniz*, you shall, or will not »
 یازمیہجقلر *yaz-ma-yajaq-lar*, they shall, or will not »

Necessitative.

Aorist. Affirmative.

Sing.

یازملویم *yaz-ma-li-yim*, I must, or ought to write.
 یازملوسین *yaz-ma-li-sin*, thou must, or oughtest to »

1) The Turks say colloquially in the first person singular of the Aorist of the Necessitative:

(د) یازملى *yaz-ma-li (dir)*, he, she, must or ought to write.

Plur.

یازملىييز *yaz-ma-li-yiz*, we must, or ought to write.

یازملىسينيز *yaz-ma-li-siniz*, you must, or ought to write.

یازملىدلر *yaz-ma-li-dir-lar*, } they must, or ought to
یازملىلر *yaz-ma-li-lar-dir*, } write.

Negative.

Sing.

یازملىيم *yaz-ma-mali-y-im*, I must, or ought not to write.

یازملىسين *yaz-ma-mali-sin*, thou » » » » »

(د) یازملى *yaz-ma-mali-(dir)*, he, she, must, or ought not to write.

Plur.

یازملىييز *yaz-ma-mali-y-iz*, we must, or ought not to write.

یازملىسينيز *yaz-ma-mali-siniz*, you » » » » »

یازملىدلر *yaz-ma-mali-dir-lar*, they must, or ought not to write.

Perfect, Affirmative.

Sing.

یازملىدم *yaz-mali-idim*, I ought to have written.

یازملىدك *yaz-mali-idin*, thou oughtest to have written.

یازسم كرك *yaz-sam gerek*, I must write, I ought to write, it is necessary for me to write.

سم كرك *sev-sem gerek*, I must love, I ought to love, it is necessary for me to love.

گيتسم كرك *git-sem gerek*, I must go, I ought to go, it is necessary for me to go, etc.

This mode of expression holds good for any active affirmative verb.

يازملويدى *yaz-mali-idi*, he, she, ought to have written.

Plur.

يازمليديق *yaz-mali-idig*, we ought to have written.
 يازملويدىك *yaz-mali-idiniz*, you ought to have »
 يازمليديلر *yaz-mali-dirlar*, they ought to have »
 يازملولر ايدى *yaz-mali-lar-idi*.

Negative.

Sing.

يازملييدىم *yaz-ma-mali-idim*, I ought not to have written.
 يازملييدىك *yaz-ma-mali-idin*, thou oughtest not to have written.
 يازملييدى *yaz-ma-mali-idin*, he, she, ought not to have written.

Plur.

يازملييدىق *yaz-ma-mali-idig*, we ought not to have written.
 يازملييدىك *yaz-ma-mali-idiniz*, you ought not to have written.
 يازملييدىلر *yaz-ma-mali-dirlar*, they ought not to have written.
 يازملولر ايدى *yaz-ma-mali-lar-idi*.

Conditional.

Present.

Affirmative.

Sing. يازارسىم *yaz-ar-isem*, { if I write.
 يازارسىم *yaz-ar-sam*, {
 يازارسىك *yaz-ar-isani*, { if thou write.
 يازارسىك *yaz-ar-san*, {

	يازارايسه <i>yaz-ar-ise,</i>	{ if he, she, write.
	يازارسه <i>yaz-ar-se,</i>	
Plur.	يازارايسق <i>yaz-ar-isaq,</i>	{ if we write.
	يازارسق <i>yaz-ar-saq,</i>	
	يازارايسه كن <i>yaz-ar-isa-niz,</i>	{ if you write.
	يازارسه كن <i>yaz-ar-sa-niz,</i>	
	يازارايسه لار <i>yaz-ar-isa-lar,</i>	{ if they write.
	يازارسه لار <i>yaz-ar-sa-lar,</i>	

Negative.

Sing.

	بازمازايسم <i>yaz-maz-isam,</i>	{ if I do not write.
	بازمازسم <i>yaz-maz-sam,</i>	
	بازمازايسك <i>yaz-maz-isan,</i>	{ if thou dost not write.
	بازمازسك <i>yaz-maz-san,</i>	
	بازمازايسه <i>yaz-maz-isa,</i>	{ if he, she, does not write.
	بازمازسه <i>yaz-maz-sa,</i>	

Plur.

	بازمازايسق <i>yaz-maz-isaq,</i>	{ if we do not write.
	بازمازسق <i>yaz-maz-saq,</i>	
	بازمازايسه كن <i>yaz-maz-isa-niz,</i>	{ if you do not write.
	بازمازسه كن <i>yaz-maz-saniz,</i>	
	بازمازايسه لار <i>yaz-maz-isa-lar,</i>	{ if they do not write.
	بازمازسه لار <i>yaz-maz-sa-lar,</i>	

Perfect.

Affirmative.

Sing.

	بازسايدم <i>yaz-sa-idim,</i>	{ if I had written.
	بازسيدم »	
	بازسايدك <i>yaz-sa-idin,</i>	{ if thou hadst written.
	بازسيدك »	

يازسا ايدي *yaz-sa-idi*, } if he, she, had written.
يازسيدي »

Plur.

يازسا ايديق *yaz-sa-idiq*, if we had written.
يازسيديق »
يازسا ايديكنز *yaz-sa-idi-niz*, if you had written.
يازسيديكنز »
يازسا ايديلر *yaz-sa-idi-lar*, } if they had written.
يازسيديلر »

Negative.

Sing.

يازمسيدم *yaz-ma-sa-idim*, if I had not written.
يازمسيدك *yaz-ma-sa-idin*, if thou hadst not written.
يازمسيدي *yaz-ma-sa-idi*, if he, she had » »

Plur.

يازمسيديق *yaz-ma-sa-idiq*, if we had not written.
يازمسيديكنز *yaz-ma-sa-idi-niz*, if you » » »
يازمسيديلر *yaz-ma-sa-idi-lar*, if they » » »

O p t a t i v e.

Affirmative.

Present.

Sing. يازيم *yaz-a-yim*, that I (may) write.
يازسين *yaz-a-sin*, that thou (mayest) write.
يازه *yaz-a*, that he, she, (may) write.
Plur. يازлим *yaz-a-lim*, } that we » »
يازاييز *yaz-a-iz*,
يازاسينيز *yazasiniz*, that you » »
يازالار *yaz-a-lur*, that they » »

Negative.

- Sing. *يازمايميم* *yaz-may-a-yim*, that I may not write.
يازمايمهسن *yaz-may-a-sin*, that thou mayest not write.
يازمايه *yaz-ma-ya*, that he, she, may » »
 Plur. *يازمايمهلم* *yaz-ma-ya-lim*, that we may not write.
يازمايمهسينز *yaz-ma-ya-siniz*, that you » » »
يازمايمهلهلر *yaz-ma-ya-lar*, that they » » »

Past. Affirmative.

- Sing. *يازمايدم* *yaz-a-idim*, that I might write.
يازمايدن *yaz-a-idin*, that thou » »
يازمايدي *yaz-a-idi*, that he, she, might write.
 Plur. *يازمايدق* *yaz-a-idig*, that we might write.
يازمايدنيز *yaz-a-idiniz*, that you might write.
يازمايدلر *yaz-a-idi-lar*, that they might write.

Negative.

- Sing. *يازمايديم* *yaz-ma-ya-ydim*, that I might not write.
يازمايدين *yaz-ma-ya-ydin*, that thou mightest not write.
يازمايدي *yaz-ma-ya-ydi*, that he, she, might » »
 Plur. *يازمايديق* *yaz-ma-ya-ydig*, that we might not write.
يازمايدينيز *yaz-ma-ya-ydiniz*, that you » » »
يازمايديلر *yaz-ma-ya-ydi-lar*, that they might » »

Active participle, affirmative.

- يازان* *yaz-an*, writing, who, or which writes, or will write.

Negative.

- يازمايان* *yaz-ma-yan*, not writing, who, or which writes not,
 or will not write.

Passive participle, affirmative.

Present.

- يازدى* *yaz-dig*, which is, or has been written, (declinable).

Negative.

یازمادیق *yaz-ma-diq*, which is not or has not been written, (declinable).

Imperative.

Affirmative.

- Sing. یاز *yaz*, write thou.
 یازسون *yaz-sin*, let him, her, write.
- Plur. یازلیم *yaz-a-lim*, let us write.
 یازیکیز *yaz-iniz*,
 یاز *yaz-in*, } write ye.
 یازسونلار *yaz-sin-lar*, let them write.

Negative.

- Sing. یازمه *yaz-ma*, write thou not.
 یازماسون *yaz-ma-sin*, let him, her, not write.
- Plur.* یازمیدلم *yaz-ma-ya-lim*, let us not write.
 یازمیکیز *yaz-ma-yi-niz*,
 یازما *yaz-ma-in*, write not ye.
 یازماسونلار *yaz-ma-sin-lar*, let them not write.

Verbal nouns.

- * یازمه *yaz-ma*, writing, the act of writing, (now or habitually).
- یازدیق *yaz-diq*, the act of having written.
- یازاجق *yaz-ajaq*, the act of being about to write.

Gerunds.

Affirmative.

- یازوب *yaz-ip*, writing, having written.
- یازورق *yaz-araq*, while writing, continuing to write.

- ياز ياجق *yaz-ıjq*, } as soon as writing, or, on writing.
 يازنجه *yaz-inja*, }
 ياز ياز *yaz-a yaz-a*, by writing and writing, or repeatedly writing.
 يازمغين *yaz-ma-ghin*, by reason of writing.
 ياز لى *yaz-ali*, since writing.

Negative.

- يازمبوب *yaz-ma-yip*, not writing, not having written.
 يازميدرق *yaz-ma-yaraq*, while not writing, not continuing to write.
 يازمينجه *yaz-ma-inja*, not on writing.
 يازميه يازميه *yaz-ma-ya yaz-ma-ya*, by not writing and not writing, or repeatedly not writing.
 يازمغين *yaz-ma-ma-ghin*, } by reason of not writing.
 يازمقسزين *yaz-ma-maq-sizin*, }
 يازميه لى *yaz-ma-ya-li*, since not writing.

CHAPTER XXIX.

THE INTERROGATIVE VERB, فعل استغهام *fi'li istifhām*.

The following models will serve for the interrogative and interrogative-negative conjugations.

Indicative mood.

Aorist.

Interrogative.

- Sing. سورميم *sev-er-mi-yim*, do I love?
 سورميسن *sev-er-mi-sin*, dost thou love?
 سورمى *sev-er-mi*, does he, she »

- Plur. *sever-mi-yiz*, do we love?
sever-mi-siniz, do you »
sever-ler-mi, do they »

Interrogatively and negatively.

- Sing. *sev-mem-mi*, do I not love?
sev-mez-mi-sin, dost thou not love?
sev-mez-mi, does he, she, not »
- Plur. *sev-mez-mi-yiz*, do we not love?
sev-mez-mi-siniz, do you » »
sev-mez-ler-mi, do they » »

Perfect.

- Sing. *sev-dim-mi*, did I love?
sev-din-mi, didst thou love?
sev-di-mi, did he, she, »
- Plur. *sev-dık-mi*, did we love?
sev-diniz-mi, did you »
sev-di-ler-mi, did they »

Interrogatively and negatively.

- Sing. *sev-me-dim-mi*, did I not love?
sev-me-din-mi, didst thou not love?
sev-me-di-mi, did he, she, not »
- Plur. *sev-me-dik-mi*, did we not love?
sev-me-diniz-mi, did you not »
sev-me-di-ler-mi, did they not »

Future.

- Sing. *sev-ejek-mi-yim*, shall or will I love?
sev-ejek-mi-sin, shalt or wilt thou »
sev-ejek-mi (dir), shall or will, he, she, love?

Plur. سوه جكمييز *sev-ejek-mi-yiz*; shall, or will we love?
 سوه جكميسن *sev-ejek-mi-siniz*, » » » you »
 سوه جكلرمي *sev-ejek-ler-mi*, » » » they »

Interrogatively and negatively.

Sing.

سوميه جكميم *sev-meyejek-mi-yim*, shall, or will I not love?
 سوميه جكميسن *sev-meyejek-mi-sin*, shalt, or wilt thou » »
 سوميه جكمي (در) *sev-meyecjek-mi (dir)*, shall, or will he, she, not »

Plur.

سوميه جكمييز *sev-meyejek-mi-yiz*, shall, or will we not love?
 سوميه جكميسن *sev-meyejek-mi-siniz*, » » » you » »
 سوميه جكلرمي *sev-meyejek-ler-mi*, » » » they » »

Optative.

Present. Interrogatively.

Sing. سوه يممي *sev-e-yim-mi*, may I love?
 سوه سنمي *sev-e-sin-mi*, mayest thou love?
 سوه مي *sev-e-mi*, may he, she, »
 Plur. سوه لدمي *sev-e-lim-mi*, may we »
 سوه سنكمي *sev-e-siniz-mi*, may you »
 سوه لرمي *sev-e-ler-mi*, may they »

Interrogatively and negatively.

Sing. سوميه بدمي *sev-meyeyim-mi*, may I not love?
 سوميه سنمي *sev-meyesin-mi*, mayest thou » »
 سوميه مي *sev-meye-mi*, may he, she, » »
 Plur. سوميه لدمي *sev-meye-lim-mi*, may we » »
 سوميه سنكمي *sev-meye-siniz-mi*, » you » »
 سوميه لرمي *sev-meye-ler-mi*, » they » »

§ 1. Infinitive سويلمك *suweylemek*, to speak.

Indicative.

Aorist. Interrogatively.

- Sing. سويلرميم *suwey-ler-mi-yim*, do I speak?
 سويلرميسن *suwey-ler-mi-sin*, dost thou speak?
 سويلرמי *suwey-ler-mi*, does he, she, speak?
- Plur. سويلرميز *suwey-ler-mi-yiz*, do we speak?
 سويلرميسنيز *suwey-ler-mi-siniz*, do you speak?
 سويلرلرמי *suwey-ler-ler-mi*, do they speak?

Interrogatively and negatively.

- Sing. سويلمهمي *suweyle-mem-mi*, do I not speak?
 سويلمزميسن *suweyle-mez-mi-sin*, dost thou not speak?
 سويلمزمي *suweyle-mez-mi*, does he, she, not speak?
- Plur. سويلمزميز *suweyle-mez-mi-yiz*, do we not speak?
 سويلمزميسنيز *suweyle-mez-mi-siniz*, do you not speak?
 سويلمزلرمي *suweyle-mez-ler-mi*, do they not speak?

Perfect. Interrogatively.

- Sing. سويلدیمي *suweyle-dim-mi*, did I speak?
 سويلدکمي *suweyle-din-mi*, didst thou speak?
 سويلدیمي *suweyle-di-mi*, did he, she, speak?
- Plur. سويلدکمي *suweyle dik-mi*, did we speak?
 سويلدیکزمي *suweyle-diniz-mi*, did you speak?
 سويلدیلرمي *suweyle-di-ler-mi*, did they speak?

Interrogatively and negatively.

- Sing. سويلدمهمي *suweyle-me-dim-mi*, did I not speak?
 سويلدمکمي *suweyle-me-din-mi*, didst thou not speak?
 سويلدمهمي *suweyle-me-di-mi*, did he, she, not speak?

- Plur. سویلمدکی *suweyle-me-dik-mi*, did we not speak?
 سویلمدیکرمی *suweyle-me-diniz-mi*, did you not speak?
 سویلمدیلرمی *suweyle-me-di-ler-mi*, did they not speak?

Future interrogatively.

Sing.

- سویلجکمییم *suweyle-jek-mi-yim*, shall I speak?
 سویلجکمیسن *suweyle-jek-mi-sin*, shalt or wilt thou speak?
 سویلجکمی (در) *suweyle-jek-mi (dir)*, shall or will he, she, speak?

Plur.

- سویلجکمییز *suweyle-jek-mi-yiz*, shall or will we speak?
 سویلجکمیسنیز *suweyle-jek-mi-siniz*, shall or will you »
 سویلجکلرمی *suweyle-jek-ler-mi*, shall or will they »

Interrogative and negative.

Sing.

- سویلیمه جکمییم *suweyle-meye-jek-mi-yim*, shall I not speak?
 سویلیمه جکمیسن *suweyle-meye-jek-mi-sin*, shalt or wilt thou not speak?
 سویلیمه جکمی (در) *suweyle-meye-jek-mi (dir)*, shall or will he, she, not speak?

Plur.

- سویلیمه جکمییز *suweyle-meye-jek-mi-yiz*, shall or will we not speak?
 سویلیمه جکمیسنیز *suweyle-meye-jek-mi-siniz*, shall or will you not speak?
 سویلیمه جکلرمی *suweyle-meye-jek-ler-mi*, shall or will they not speak?

Optative interrogatively.

Present.

- Sing. سويلدييم مى *suweyle-yim-mi*, may I speak?
 سويلدسن مى *suweyle-sin-mi*, mayst thou speak?
 سويلديه مى *suweyle-ye-mi*, may he, she, »
 Plur. سويلديلم مى *suweyle-ye-lim-mi*, may we »
 سويلدسكز مى *suweyle-ye-siniz-mi*, » you »
 سويلدILER مى *suweyle-ye-ler-mi*, » they »

Interrogatively and negatively.

- Sing. سويلميديم مى *suweylemeye-yim-mi*, may I not speak?
 سويلميدسن مى *suweylemeye-sin-mi*, mayest thou » »
 سويلمديه مى *suweylemeye-mi*, may he, she, » »
 Plur. سويلميديلم مى *suweylemeye-lim-mi*, may we » »
 سويلميدسكز مى *suweylemeye-niz-mi*, » you » »
 سويلميدILER مى *suweylemeye-ler-mi*, » they » »

§ 2. Infinitive وىرەك *vermek*, to give.

Indicative.

Aorist.

- Sing. وىرەيمىم *ver-ir-mi-yim*, do I give?
 وىرەيمىسن *ver-ir-mi-sin*, dost thou give?
 وىرەرى مى *ver-ir-mi*, does he, she, »
 Plur. وىرەيمىز *ver-ir-mi-yiz*, do we give?
 وىرەيمىسكز *ver-ir-mi-siniz*, do you »
 وىرەرلەر مى *ver-ir-ler-mi*, do they »

Interrogatively and negatively.

- Sing. وىرەممى *ver-mem-mi*, do I not give?
 وىرەممىسن *ver-mez-mi-sin*, dost thou not give?
 وىرەرمى *ver-mez-mi*, does he, she, » »

- Plur. ویرمز مییز *ver-mez-mi-yiz*, do we not give?
 ویرمز میسکز *ver-mez-mi-siniz*, do you » »
 ویرمز لرمی *ver-mez-ler-mi*, do they » »

Perfect. Interrogatively.

- Sing. ویرد می *ver-dim-mi*, did I give?
 ویرد کی *ver-din-mi*, didst thou give?
 ویرد می *ver-di-mi*, did he, she, »

- Plur. ویرد کی *ver-dik-mi*, did we give?
 ویرد یکز می *ver-diniz-mi*, did you »
 ویرد یلرمی *ver-di-ler-mi*, did they »

Interrogatively and negatively.

- Sing. ویرمد می *ver-me-dim-mi*, did I not give?
 ویرمد کی *ver-me-din-mi*, didst thou not give?
 ویرمد می *ver-me-di-mi*, did he, she, » »

- Plur: ویرمد کی *ver-me-dik-mi*, did we not give?
 ویرمد یکز می *ver-me-diniz-mi*, did you » »
 ویرمد یلرمی *ver-me-di-ler-mi*, did they » »

Future. Interrogatively.

Sing.

- ویره جکی می *ver-ejek-mi-yim*, shall I give?
 ویره جکی میسن *ver-ejek-mi-sin*, shalt or wilt thou give?
 ویره جکی (در) *ver-ejek-mi (dir)*, shall or will he, she, »

Plur.

- ویره جکی مییز *ver-ejek-mi-yiz*, shall we give?
 ویره جکی میسکز *ver-ejek-mi-siniz*, shall or will you give? .
 ویره جکی لرمی *ver-ejek-ler-mi*, shall or will they »

Optative. Interrogatively.

Present.

- Sing. *vere-yim-mi*, may I give?
 • *vere-sin-mi*, mayest thou give?
vere-mi, may he, she, give?
 Plur. *vere-lim-mi*, may we give?
vere-siniz-mi, » you »
vere-ler-mi, » they »

Interrogatively and negatively.

- Sing. *ver-meye-yim-mi*, may I not give?
ver-meye-sin-mi, mayest thou not give?
ver-meye-mi, may he, she, not give?
 Plur. *ver-meye-lim-mi*, may we not give?
ver-meye-siniz-mi, may you not give?
ver-meye-ler-mi, may they not give?

§ 3. Infinitive *bilmek*, to know.

Indicative.

Aorist. Interrogatively.

- Sing. *bil-ir-mi-yim*, do I know?
bil-ir-mi-sin, dost thou know?
bil-ir-mi, does he, she, »
 Plur. *bil-ir-mi-yiz*, do we »
bil-ir-mi-siniz, do you »
bil-ir-ler-mi, do they »

Interrogatively and negatively.

- Sing. *bil-mem-mi*, do I not know?
 • *bil-mez-mi-sin*, dost thou not know?
bil-mez-mi, does he, she, not know?

- Plur. بلەزمییز *bil-mez-mi-yiz*, do we not know?
 بلەزمیسکز *bil-mez-siniz*, do you not know?
 بلەزلمی *bil-mez-ler-mi*, do they » »

Perfect interrogatively.

- Sing. بلەدیمی *bil-dim-mi*, did I know?
 بلەدیکمی *bil-din-mi*, didst thou know?
 بلەدیمی *bil-di-mi*, did he, she, »
 Plur. بلەدیکمی *bil-dik-mi*, did we »
 بلەدیکزیمی *bil-diniz-mi*, did you »
 بلەدیلریمی *bil-diler-mi*, did they »

Interrogatively and negatively.

- Sing. بلەدەدیمی *bil-me-dim-mi*, did I not know? .
 بلەدەدیکمی *bil-me-din-mi*, didst thou » »
 بلەدەدیمی *bil-me-di-mi*, did he, she, » »
 Plur. بلەدەدیکمی *bil-me-dik-mi*, did we » »
 بلەدەدیکزیمی *bil-me-diniz-mi*, » you » »
 بلەدەدیلریمی *bil-me-diler-mi*, » they » »

Future interrogatively.

Sing.

- بلەجکمییم *bil-ejek-mi-yim*, shall I know?
 بلەجکمیسن *bil-ejek-mi-sin*, shalt or wilt thou know?
 بلەجکمی (در) *bil-ejek-mi (dir)*, shall or will he, she, know?

Plur.

- بلەجکمییز *bil-ejek-mi-yiz*, shall or will we know?
 بلەجکمیسنکز *bil-ejek-mi-siniz*, » » » you »
 بلەجکلریمی *bil-ejek-ler-mi*, » » » they »

Interrogatively and negatively.

Sing.

- بلمیہ جکمیم *bil-meyejek-mi-yim*, shall I not know?
 بلمیہ جکمیسین *bil-meyejek-mi-sin*, shalt, or wilt thou not know?
 بلمیہ جکی (در) *bil-meyejek-mi (dir)*, shall, or will he, she, not know?

Plur.

- بلمیہ ج *bil-meyejek-mi-yiz*, shall, or will we not know?
 بلمیہ جکمیسکز *bil-meyejek-mi-siniz*, shall, or will you not
 بلمیہ جکلرمی *bil-meyejek-ler-mi*, shall, or will they not

Optative, interrogatively.

Present.

Sing.

- بلهئم می *bil-e-yim-mi*, may I know?
 بلهسن می *bil-e-sin-mi*, mayest thou know?
 بله می *bil-e-mi*, may he, she, know?

Plur.

- بلهلم می *bil-e-lim-mi*, may we know?
 بلهسکز می *bil-e-siniz-mi*, may you know?
 بلهلرمی *bil-e-ler-mi*, may they know?

Interrogatively and negatively.

Sing.

- بلمیہ یم می *bil-meye-yim-mi*, may I not know?
 بلمیہ سن می *bil-meye-sin-mi*, mayest thou not know?
 بلمیہ می *bil-meye-mi*, may he, she, not know?

Plur.

- بلمیہ لیم می *bil-meye-lim-mi*, may we not know?

بلمیہ سکر می *bil-meye-siniz-mi*, may you not know?

بلمیہ لر می *bil-meye-ler-mi*, may they not know?

All other verbs are conjugated in the same way.

CHAPTER XXX.

THE COMPLEX CATEGORIES OF TURKISH VERBS.

There are complex categories of Turkish verbs (three of which are in constant use) besides the regular conjugation of a verb with its simple tenses. The complex categories of every verb, whether active or passive, transitive or intransitive, affirmative, negative or impotential, are formed by adding the auxiliary verb اولمق *olmaq* «to become», «to be» to the aorist, past and future active participles of the verb from which the complex category is to be formed.

The auxiliary verb always follows the participle. The auxiliary verb اولمق *olmaq* «to become», «to be» forms its first complex category with the aorist active participle; its second with the past active participle; its third with the future active participle.

These complex categories are formed with every class of verb, active or passive, the participle, as an adjective, remaining unchangeable throughout.

The first complex category is formed with the present active participle followed immediately by all the tenses of the auxiliary verb اولمق *olmaq*.

We will now conjugate the first complex category with the aorist active participle سوراوور *sever-olur*, loving, he loves, or he, she, is, or becomes one who loves constantly.

The second complex category with the past active par-

ticiple *اولور او قوش olur*, having read, he will have read, or he will become one who has read.

The third complex category with the future active participle *اولور يازاج olur*, he will be one who will write.

§ 1. The first complex category.

Indicative.

Present.

سور اوليورم sever-oliyorim, I am always loving, etc.

Imperfect.

سور اوليور ايديم sever-oliyor-idim, I was always loving, etc.

Aorist.

سور اولورم sever-olurum, I am always loving, I shall be ever loving, etc.

Past.

سور اولور ايديم sever-olur-idim, I used to be always loving, I would be, or would have been always loving, etc.

Perfect.

سور اولدوم sever-oldum, I became always loving, etc.

Pluperfect.

سور اولدوم ايدي sever-oldum-idi, I had been, or become always loving, etc.

Future.

سور اولاجاهيم sever-olajaghim, I am about to become always loving, etc.

Future past.

سور اولاجاهيم ايديم sever-olajagh-idim, I was about to become always loving, etc.

Necessitative.

Aorist.

سوارلملیم *sever-olmali-yim*, I must be, or become always loving, etc.

Past.

سوارلملوايدیم *sever-olmali-idim*, I ought to have been always loving, etc.

Optative.

Aorist.

سور اولاییم *sever ola-yim*, that I may be always loving, etc.

Past.

سور اولایدیم *sever olaydim*, that I had been always loving, etc.

Conditional.

Aorist.

سور اولسام *sever olsam*, were I, should I become always loving, etc.

Past.

سور اولسايدیم *sever olsa-idim*, had I been always loving, etc.

Imperative.

سور اول *sever ol*, be thou loving, love thou always, etc.

Active participles.

Present.

سور اولان *sever olan*, who, or which is, was, will be, always loving, etc.

Aorist.

سور اولور *sever olur*, who, or which is, was, will be, always loving, etc.

Past.

سور اولمش *sever olmush*, who has been always loving, etc.

Perfect.

سور اولدى *sever-oldu*, who was always loving.

Future.

سور اوله جق *sever-olajaq*, who is to be always loving.

Passive participles.

Aorist.

سور اولدى *sever-oldu*, who, or which has always been loved,

Future.

سور اوله جق *sever-olajaq*, who, or which is about to become one who will be loved.

Verbal nouns.

Present.

سور اولمه *sever-olma*, the act of being always loving.

Perfect.

سور اولدىق *sever-olduq*, the act of having been always loving.

Future.

سور اوله جق *sever-olajaq*, the act of being about to become always loving.

Gerunds.

سور اولوب *sever-olup*, being always loving.

- سر اوله رق *sever-olaraq*, continuing to be always loving.
 سر اوله ناجه *sever-olunja*, } as soon as-becomes (become, will
 سر اوله باجق *sever-olijaq*, } become) always loving.
 سر اوله اوله *sever-ola-ola*, by continually being always loving.
 سر اوله مغبين *sever-olmaghin*, by reason of being always loving.
 سر اوله لي - نه *sever-olali*, ever since becoming always loving.

§ 2. The second complex category.

This is formed by putting the past active participle ending in *مش* *mish* or *mush*, of every class of verb immediately before the auxiliary verb *اولمق* *olmaq*, «to become», «to be», throughout all its tenses.

Indicative.

Present.

او قومش اوليورم *oqumush-oliyor-im*, I am, or am becoming, one
 who has read, I have read.

Imperfect.

او قومش اوليوردم *oqumush oliyor-dim*, I was, or was becoming,
 one who has read.

Aorist.

او قومش اولورم *oqumush olurum*, I shall have read.

Past.

او قومش اولوردم *oqumush olurdum*, I should have read.

Perfect.

او قومش اولدم *oqumush oldum*, I became one who had read,
 I had read.

Pluperfect.

اوقومش اولدوم ايدي *oqumush oldum-idi*, I had become one who has read.

Future.

اوقومش اوله جغم *oqumush olajaghim*, I am about becoming one who has read, I am going to have read.

Future past.

اوقومش اوله جقفايديم *oqumush olajaq-idim*, I was about to have read.

Necessitative.

Aorist.

اوقومش اولملييم *oqumush olmaliyim*, I must (now) have read (then).

Past.

اوقومش اولملو ايديم *oqumush olmali-idim*, I must (then) have (already) read (before).

Optative.

Aorist.

اوقومش اولييم *oqumush ola-yim*,
اوقومش اولم *oqumush ola-m*, } that I may have read.

Past.

اوقومش اوليديم *oqumush olay-dim*, that I have read.

Conditional.

Aorist.

اوقومش اولسم *oqumush olsam*, I had read (then).

Past.

اولسيديم *oqumush olsay-idim*, had I read.

Active participles.

Present.

اولان *oqumush olan*, who has (already) read.

Aorist.

اولور *oqumush olur*, who will have (already) read.

Past and perfect, not used.

Future.

اوله جق *oqumush olajaq*, who will become one who has read.

Passive participles.

Aorist.

اولدق *oqumush olduq*, which (a reader) has (already) read.

Future.

اوله جق *oqumush olajaq*, which (a reader) will have read.

Verbal nouns.

Present.

اولمه *oqumush olma*, the fact, or state of having read.

Perfect.

اولدق *oqumush olduq*, the fact, or state of having read.

Future.

اقومش اوله جف *oqumush olajaq*, the fact, or state of being about to become one who has read.

Gerunds.

اقومش اولوب *oqumush olup*, having read.

اقومش اوله رق *oqumush olaraq*, while becoming one who has read.

اقومش اولناجه *oqumush olunja*, } immediately on becoming
اقومش اولي جف *oqumush olıjaq*, } one who has read.

اقومش اوله اوله *oqumush ola-ola*, by continuing to become one who has read.

اقومش اولمغبين *oqumush olmaghin*, by reason of becoming one who has read.

اقومش اوله لى - لو *oqumush olali*, since becoming one who has read.

Imperative.

Future.

اقومش اول *oqumush ol*, be thou one who has read.

§ 3. The third complex category.

Is formed by putting the future active participle of the verb before the auxiliary verb اولمق *olmaq*, «to be», «to become» throughout all its tenses.

Indicative.

Present.

يازاجف اوليورم *yazajaq oliyor-lm*, I am at present on the point of writing, I become on the point of writing.

Imperfect.

يازاجف اوليورايديم *yazajaq oliyor-idim*, I was just then on the point of writing.

Aorist.

ياز:جق اولورم *yaz-ajaq olurum*, I am (habitually) I shall be (then) on the point of writing.

Past.

ياز:جق اولurdum *yaz-ajaq olurdum*, I used (habitually) I shall be (then) on the point of writing.

Perfect.

ياز:جق اولدم *yaz-ajaq oldum*, I was (then) on the point of writing.

Pluperfect.

ياز:جق اولدم ایدی *yaz-ajaq oldum-idi*, I had been (before then) on the point of writing.

Future.

ياز:جق اوله جقم *yaz-ajaq olaja-ghim*, not used as being cacophonous.

Future past.

ياز:جق اوله جغدم *yaz-ajaq olajagh-dim*, not used as being cacophonous.

Necessitative.

Aorist.

ياز:جق اولملویم *yaz-ajaq olmali-yim*, I must be on the point of writing.

Past.

ياز:جق اولملوایدم *yaz-ajaq olmali-idim*, I ought to have been on the point of writing.

Optative.

Aorist.

ياز:جق اولم *yaz-ajaq olam*, that I may be on the point of writing.

Past.

ياز:جق اوليديم *yaz-ajaq olay-dim*, that I had been on the point of writing.

Conditional.

Aorist.

ياز:جق اولسم *yaz-ajaq olsam*, were I to be, or become on the point of writing.

Past.

ياز:جق اولسيديم *yaz-ajaq olsay-dim*, had I been on the point of writing.

Active participles.

Present.

ياز:جق اولان *yaz-ajaq olan*, who, or which is, or becomes on the point of writing.

Aorist.

ياز:جق اولور *yaz-ajaq olur*, who, or which is (naturally), or will be (sometimes) on the point of writing.

Past and Perfect

ياز:جق اولمش *yaz-ajaq olmush*, (who, or which has been,
ياز:جق اولدق *yaz-ajaq olduq*, or was (then) on the point
of writing.

Future.

يازهجق اولهجق *yazajaq olajaq*, not used as being cacophonous.

Imperative.

Future.

يازهجق اول *yaz-ajaq ol*, be thou about to write.

Passive participles.

Aorist.

يازهجق اولدق *yaz-ajaq olduq*, which was to have been written.

Future, not used.

Verbal nouns.

Present.

يازهجق اولمه *yaz-ajaq olma*, the act of being, or becoming, (at any time) on the point of writing.

Perfect.

يازهجق اولدق *yaz-ajaq olduq*, the past act or state of being (then) on the point of writing.

Future, cacophonous, not used.

Gerunds.

يازهجق اولوب *yaz-ajaq olup*, being about to write.

يازهجق اولهرق *yaz-ajaq olaraq*, while being about to write.

يازهجق اولنجه *yaz-ajaq olunja*, as soon as, is, was, will be about to write.

يازهجق اوليجهق *yaz-ajaq olijaq*, cacophonous, not used.

يازاجق اوله اوله *yaz-ajaq ola-ola*, by continuing to be about to write.

يازاجق اولمغين *yaz-ajaq olmaghin*, by reason of being about to write.

يازاجق اوله لى - لو *yaz-ajaq olali*, ever since becoming on the point to write.

CHAPTER XXXI.

CONJUGATION OF THE TWO AUXILIARY VERBS ايتيمك
etmek and ايليمك *cylemek*, «TO DO».

To save space we give the first person only of each tense.

Indicative.

Present.

ايدبورم *ediyorum*,
ايلبورم *eyleyorum*, } I am doing, etc.

Imperfect.

ايدبوردم *ediyordum*,
ايلبوردم *eyleyordum*, } I was doing, etc.

Aorist.

ايدرم *ederim*,
ايلرم *eylerim*, } I do (habitually) or I shall or will do, etc.

Past.

ايدرايدم - ايدردم *eder-idim*, I did, I used to do, or I
ايلرايدم - ايلردم *eyler-idim*, would do, etc.

Perfect.

ايتدم *ettim*,
ايلدم *eyledim*, } I did, or have done, etc.

Pluperfect.

ایتدم *ettim-idi*,
 ایلم *eyledim-idi*, } I had done.

Future.

ایدجکم *edejeyim*,
 ایلهجهجکم *eyleyejeyim*, } I shall or will do, etc.

Future past.

ایدجک ایدم - ایدجک *edejek-idim*, } I was about to
 ایلهجهجک ایدم - ایلهجهجک *eyleyejek-idim*, } do, etc.

Necessitative.

Aorist.

ایتملیم *etmeliyim*, } I must or ought to do, etc.
 ایلملیم *eylemeliyim*, }

Past.

ایتملی - ایتملو ایدم - ایتملیم *etmeli-idim*, } I ought to
 ایلملی - ایلملو ایدم - ایلملیم *eylemeli-idim*, } have done, or
 ' to do, etc.

Optative.

Aorist.

ایدیم *edeyim*,
 ایلهیم *eyleyeyim*, } that I may do, etc.

Past.

اید ایدم *edey-idim*, } that I might do, or might have done,
 ایله ایدم *eyleye-idim*, } or that I had done, etc.

Conditional.

Aorist.

ایدرسم *edersem*,
 ایلمرسم *eylersem*, } if I do, etc.
 ایتسم *etsem*,
 ایلمسم *eylesem*, }

Past.

ايتسيديم *etsey-idim*, } if I did, or had done, etc.
 ايله سيديم *eylesey-idim*,

Imperative.

ايت *et*, } do thou, etc.
 ايله *eyle*,

Active participles.

Present.

ايدن *eden*, } who, or which does, did, or will do, etc.
 ايليان *eyleyen*,

Aorist.

ايدر *eder*, } doing, who, which does (habitually) or will
 ايلر *eyler*, } do, etc.

Past.

ايتمش *etmish*, } who, which has done, etc.
 ايلمش *eylemish*,

Perfect.

ايتدك *ettik*, *tdik*, } who, which has done, etc.
 ايلدك *eyledik*,

Future.

ايدجك *edejek*, } who, which will do, etc.
 ايليجك *eyleyejek*,

Verbal nouns.

Present.

ايتمه *etmē*, } the act of doing, etc.
 ايلمه *eyleme*,

Perfect.

ايتدك *ettik, etdik,* { the act of having done, etc.
 ايلدك *eyledik,*

Future.

ايدجك *edejek,* { the act of being about to do, etc.
 ايليجك *eyleyejek,*

Gerunds.

ايدوب *edip,* { doing, having done, etc.
 ايلويوب *eyleyip,* {
 ايدرك *ederek,* doing, or to be a constant doer, or
 ايليرك *eyleyerek,* continuing to do, etc.
 ايدنجه *edinje,* {
 ايلدنجه *eyledinje,* { as soon as doing, etc.
 ايديجك *edijek,* {
 ايليجك *eyleyijek,* {
 ايدده *ede ede,* { by continually being a doer, by
 ايلديه *eyleye eyleye,* { dint of doing, by repeatedly doing,
 etc.
 ايتمكين *etmeyin,* { by reason of doing.
 ايلمكين *eylemeyin,* {
 ايدلهي - لو *edeli,* { since doing, etc.
 ايليلهي - لو *eyleyeli,* {

CHAPTER XXXII.

THE FOLLOWING IS THE TRUE TURKISH CONJUGATION OF
REGULAR VERB COMBINED WITH THE THREE COMPI
CATEGORIES. — On account of space we give

Indicative.

Present.

First Category.

seviyorum *sev-iyor-im.*sever oluyorum *sev-er-oluyor-im.*

Imperfect.

seviyordim *sev-iyor-idim.*sever oluyordim *sev-er-oluyor-idim.*seviyordim *sev-iyor-dim.*sever oluyordim *sev-er-oluyor-dim.*

Aorist.

severim *sev-er-im.*sever olum *sev-er-olur-um.*

Past.

sever idim *sev-er-idim.*sever olurdum *sev-er-olur-idim.*severdim *sev-er-dim.*sever olurdum *sev-er-olur-dim.*

Perfect.

sevdim *sev-dim.*sever oldum *sev-er-oldum.*

Pluperfect.

seviyordim *sev-dim-idi.*sever oluyordim *sev-er-oldi-idi.*sevdim *sev-didim.*sever olurdum *sev-er-oldi-di.*seviş idim *sev-miş-idim.*sever olmuştum *sev-er-olmuş-idim.*sevişdim *sev-miş-dim.*sever olmuştum *sev-er-olmuş-dim.*

Future.

seveceğim *sev-eje-yim.*sever olacağım *sev-er-olaja-ghim.*

first person sing. only of each tense. The regular verb **سومك** *sevmek* «to love» which ends in **مك** *mek*.

Indicative.

Present.

Second Category

سومش اوليور *sev-mish-oliyor-im.*

Third Category

سوه جك اوليورم *sev-ejek-oliyor-im.*

Perfect.

سومش اوليور ايدم *sev-mish-oliyor-idim.*

سوه جك اوليور ايدم *sev-ejek-oliyor-idim.*

سومش اوليوردم *sev-mish-oliyor-dim.* **سوه جك اوليوردم** *sev-ejek-oliyor-dim.*

Aorist.

سومش اولورم *sev-mish-olurum.*

سوه جك اولورم *sev-ejek-olurum.*

Past.

سومش اولور ايدم *sev-mish-olur-idim.*

سوه جك اولور ايدم *sev-ejek-olur-idim.*

سومش اولوردم *sev-mish-olur-dim.* **سوه جك اولوردم** *sev-ejek-olur-dim.*

Perfect.

سومش اولدوم *sev-mish-oldum.*

سوه جك اولدوم *sev-ejek-oldum.*

Pluperfect.

سومش اولدى ايدم *sev-mish-oldi-idim.*

سوه جك اولدى ايدم *sev-ejek-oldi-idim.*

سومش اولمش ايدم *sev-mish-olmush-idim.*

سوه جك اولمش ايدم *sev-ejek-olmush-idim.*

سومش اولمشدم *sev-mish-olmush-dim.*

سوه جك اولمشدم *sev-ejek-olmush-dim.*

Future.

سومش اولاجم *sev-mish-olaja-ghim.*

(not used).

First Category.

Future past.

سوءه جك ايدم *sev-ejek-idim.*

سوراوله جق ايدم *sev-er-olajag-ic*

سوءه جك دم *sev-ejek-dim.*

سوراوله جق دم *sev-er-olajag-di*

Necessitative.

Aorist.

سوملييم *sev-meli-yim.*

سوراولملييم *sev-er-olmali-yim.*

سوملويم

سوراولملويم

»

Past.

سوملي ايدم *sev-meli-idim.*

سوراولملي ايدم *sev-er-olmali-idi*

سوراولملو ايدم

»

Optative.

Aorist.

سوءيم *sev-eyim.*

سوراولهيم *sev-er-ola-yim.*

Past.

سوءه ايدم *sev-e-idim.*

سوراولهيم *sev-er-olay-dim.*

Conditional.

Aorist.

سوسم *sev-sem.*

سوراولسم *sev-er-olsam.*

سورايسم *sev-er-isem.*

سورسم *sev-er-sem*

Past.

سوسيديم *sev-sey-dim.*

سوراولسيديم *sev-er-olsay-dim.*

Second Category.

Third Category.

Future past.

سومش اوله جقا ايدم *sev-mish-olajaq-*
idim.

(not used).

سومش اوله جقا دم *sev-mish-olajaq-dim.*

Necessitative.

Aorist.

سومش اولمالي يم *sev-mish-olmali-yim.* سوه جك اولمالي يم *sev-ejek-olmali-yim.*

Past.

سومش اولمالي ايدم *sev-mish-olmali-*
idim. سوه جك اولمالي ايدم *sev-ejek-olmali-idim.*
سومش اولمالي ايدم *sev-mish-olmali-dim.* سوه جك اولمالي ايدم »

Optative.

Aorist.

سومش اولم *sev-mish-ola-yim.* سوه جك اولم *sevejek olayim.*

Past.

سومش اولم ايدم *sev-mish-olay-dim.* سوه جك اولم ايدم *sev-ejek-olay-dim.*

Conditional.

Aorist.

سومش اولسا دم *sev-mish-olsam.* سوه جك اولسا دم *sev-ejek-olsam.*

Past.

سومش اولسا دم ايدم *sev-mish-olsay-dim.* سوه جك اولسا دم ايدم *sev-ejek-olsay-dim.*

First Category.

Active participles.

Present.

سۈن *sev-en.*سۈرۈلۈن *sev-er-olan.*

Aorist.

سۈر *sev-er.*سۈرۈلۈر *sev-er-olur.*

Past.

سۈمۈش *sev-mish.*سۈرۈلمۈش *sev-er-olmush.*

Perfect.

سۈدۈك *sev-dik.*سۈرۈلدۈك *sev-er-olduq.*

Future.

سۈۈجۈك *sev-ejek.*سۈرۈلۈجۈك *sev-er-olajaq.*

Passive participles.

Aorist.

سۈدۈك *sev-dik.*سۈرۈلدۈك *sev-er-olduq.*

Future.

سۈۈجۈك *sev-ejek.*سۈرۈلۈجۈك *sev-er-olajaq.*

Verbal nouns.

Present.

سۈمۈ *sev-me.*سۈرۈلمۈ *sev-er-olma.*

Perfect.

سۈدۈك *sev-dik.*سۈرۈلدۈك *sev-er-olduq.*

Future.

سۈۈجۈك *sev-ejek.*سۈرۈلۈجۈك *sev-er-olajaq.*

Second Category.

Third Category.

Active participles.

Present.

| سومش اولان *sev-mish-olan.*

سوه جك اولان *sev-ejek-olan.*

Aorist.

| سومش اولور *sev-mish-olur.*

سوه جك اولور *sev-ejek-olur.*

Past.

(not used).

سوه جك اولمش *sev-ejek-olmush.*

Perfect.

| سومش اولدق *sev-mish-oldug.*

سوه جك اولدق *sev-ejek-oldug.*

Future.

| سومش اولاجق *sev-mish-olajaq.*

سوه جك اولاجق *sev-ejek-olajaq.*

Passive participles.

Aorist.

| سومش اولدق *sev-mish-oldug.*

سوه جك اولدق *sev-ejek-oldug.*

Future.

| سومش اولاجق *sev-mish-olajaq.*

سوه جك اولاجق *sev-ejek-olajaq.*

Verbal nouns.

Present.

| سومش اولما *sev-mish-olma.*

سوه جك اولما *sev-ejek-olma.*

Perfect.

| سومش اولدق *sev-mish-oldug.*

سوه جك اولدق *sev-ejek-oldug.*

Future.

| سومش اولاجق *sev-mish-olajaq.*

(not used).

First Category.

Gerunds.

سوب <i>sev-ip.</i>	سوراولوب <i>sev-er-olup.</i>
سوراك <i>sev-erek.</i>	سوراوله رق <i>sev-er-olaraq.</i>
سوناجه <i>sev-inje.</i>	سوراولناجه <i>sev-er-olinja.</i>
سوراجك <i>sev-ijek.</i>	سوراولباجق <i>sev-er-olijaq.</i>
سوه سوه <i>sev-e sev-e.</i>	سوراوله اوله <i>sev-er-ola-ola.</i>
سومگين <i>sev-megin.</i>	سوراولمغين <i>sev-er-olma-ghin.</i>
سوله <i>sev-eli.</i>	سوراوله لي <i>sev-er-olali.</i>
سوله <i>sev-eli.</i>	سوراوله لو <i>sev-er-olali.</i>

CHAPTER XXXIII.

OF ADVERBS ظروف *Zurûf.*

Turkish adverbs are numerous. Every adjective may be used adverbially. There are besides various methods of forming adverbs.

The adverb precedes the verb and adjective which it qualifies. Any noun may be used adverbially in Turkish in one of the following ways.

(a) By adding the proposition ايله *ile*, with, or اوزره *uzere*.

دليلك *delilik*, stupidity.

دليلك ايله *delilik ile*, with stupidity, stupidly.

رعایت *ri'ayet*, respect.

رعایت ايله *ri'ayet ile*, with respect, respectfully.

دوستلك *dostluk*, friendship.

دوستلك ايله *dostluk ile*, with friendship.

دوستلك اوزره *dostluk uzere*, friendly.

Second Category.

Third Category.

Gerunds.

سومش اولوب <i>sev-mish-olup.</i>	سوهجك اولوب <i>sev-ejek-olup.</i>
سومش اولاراق <i>sev-mish-olaraq.</i>	سوهجك اولاراق <i>sev-ejek-olaraq.</i>
سومش اولنجا <i>sev-mish-olinja.</i>	سوهجك اولنجا <i>sev-ejek-olinja.</i>
سومش اولياچاق <i>sev-mish-olijaq.</i>	سوهجك اولياچاق <i>sev-ejek-olijaq.</i>
سومش اوله اوله <i>sev-mish-ola-ola.</i>	سوهجك اوله اوله <i>sev-ejek-ola-ola.</i>
سومش اولمغين <i>sev-mish-olma-ghin.</i>	سوهجك اولمغين <i>sev-ejek-olma-ghin.</i>
سومش اولالي <i>sev-mish-olali.</i>	سوهجك اولالي <i>sev-ejek-olali.</i>
سومش اوله لى <i>sev-mish-olali.</i>	سوهجك اوله لى <i>sev-ejek-olali.</i>

- (b) Any Arabic substantive or adjective becomes a Turkish adverb by adding the letter 'l' *elif* with double *ustun* sign and pronounced «en» or «an».

صورت *sūret*, appearance.

صورتًا *sūreten*, apparently.

حق *haqq*, truth.

حقًا *haqqan*, truly.

مؤخرًا *mu'akkkheran*, recently, latterly.

مقدمًا *muqaddeman*, formerly.

برًا و بحرًا *berran ve bahran*, by land and by sea.

If the Arabic substantive and adjective be feminine ending with the letter «he», two dots are placed over it, with or without the double «*z*», it then becomes a Turkish adverb and is pronounced with the «an» sound.

حقیقت *haqīqat*, a true thing, truth, the truth.

حقیقَةً *haqīqatan*, really, indeed.

قطعًا *qat'an*, decidedly.

واقطبةً *ve qātibeten*, and entirely.

The Turks use the first ten Arabic ordinals adverbially.

اولا <i>evvela</i> , firstly.	سادسا <i>sādīsa</i> , sixthly.
ثانيا <i>sāniya</i> , secondly.	سابعا <i>sābi'a</i> , seventhly.
ثالثا <i>sālisa</i> , thirdly.	ثامنا <i>samīna</i> , eighthly.
رابعا <i>rābi'a</i> , fourthly.	تاسعا <i>tāsī'a</i> , ninthly.
خامسا <i>khamīsa</i> , fifthly.	عاشرا <i>ashīra</i> , tenthly.

(c) Arabic and Persian nouns become adverbial adjectives by adding to them the Persian termination انه *āne*.

دوست *dost*, a friend.

دوستانه *dostāne*, friendly act, in a friendly manner.

عقل *aql*, reason, intelligence.

عقلانه *aqlane*, reasonably, intelligently.

پدر *peder*, a father.

پدرانه *pederāne*, paternally.

(d) By adding one of the particles لين *leyin*, or بن *yin*, adverbs are formed.

اركن *erken*, early.

اركنلين *erkenleyin*, rather, or very early.

صبح *sabah*, morning.

صبحايلين *sabahlayin*, very early in the morning.

(e) By adding the syllable جه *je*, to substantives, adverb are formed.

ترکجه *turkje*, in a Turklike manner.

ترکجه *turkje*, means also the «Turkish language», if it is not then an adverb, but a noun.

سؤیلمک *turkje suweylemek*, means to speak Turkish indefinitely — but

سویلجه *turkjeyi suweylemek*, means to speak the Turkish language.

اطلیانجه *italianje*, after the Italian manner.

فرانسجه *fransizje*, after the French »

انگلیزجه *inglizje*, after the English » etc.

(f) By adding the syllable *je*, to nouns and pronouns, a kind of substantive of manner is formed sometimes as an adverbial expression. .

سنجه *senje*, your way, your opinion.

بنجه *benje*, my way, my opinion.

انلرجه *anlarja, annarja*, their way, their opinion.

But when the syllable *je* is added to adjectives only, it then has the meaning of «rather, pretty».

کوزلجه *gyuzelje*, rather prettily or pretty.

انگلیزجه ایوجه یازار *inglizje iyije yazar*, he writes English pretty well.

کندی ایوجه در *kendi iyije dir*, he is pretty well.

بیوکجه در *buyukje dir*, it is somewhat large.

قالینجه در *qalinja dir*, it is thickish.

§ 1. ADVERBS OF QUALITY OR MANNER.

ایو *iyi*, well, good.

فنا *fena*, } bad, badly.

بد *bed*, }

کوزل *gyuzel*, beautiful, beautifully, prettily.

خوش *khosh*, agreeable, agreeably.

نافله *nafile*, uselessly.

اویله *uyle*,

بویله *buyle*,

ینه *yine*,

کنه *gene*,

یکیلین *yeniden*,

} in that manner, in that way, so.

} once more, again.

عقل *aqil*, witty.

Some of these adverbs are merely adjectives used adverbially.

§ 2. ADVERBS OF QUANTITY.

بىراز *bir az*, a little.

حوق *choq*, much.

زياده *ziyade*, more.

ارتق *artiq* (with a negative) no more.

بنتشر، ديمشور *yetishir*, that will do, it is enough.

از *az*,
دها، دخی از *daha az*, } less, a little.
اكسك *eksik*,

دها حوق *daha choq*,
دخی زياده *dakhi (daha) ziyade*, } much more.

اول قدر *ol qadar*,
اولقدر *ol (o) qadar*, } so much.

شو قدر *shu qadar*,
نقدر *naqadar*, how much? how many? how long
(in time).

زياده سنجه *ziyadesinje*, too much.

پك *pek*, very.

ازار ازار *azar azar*, little by little.

بر مقدار *bir miqdar*, a little.

افراط *ifrat*, excess, excessively.

غايث *ghayet*, extremely.

§ 3. ADVERBS OF PLACE.

بورا *bura*,

بوند *bunda*, this place, here.

بوراده *burada*,

بورام *buram*, this place on my body.

بوراك *buran*, this place on thy body.

- بۇرايە *buraya*, to this place.
 بۇراسى *burasi*, this place in it.
 بۇرامە *burama*, here, to this place in my body.
 بۇ يەردە *bu yerde*, here, in this place.
 شۇندە *shunda*, { here and there.
 بۇندە *bunda*, {
 شۇرادە *shurada*, { here in this place, and there in
 بۇرادە *burada*, { that place.
 شۇرا *shora*, (in) this place, this spot.
 ئوردا *ora*, (in) that place, that spot.
 ئورام *oram*, (my that place) there, that part of my body.
 ئوراسى *orasi*, (its that place) there, that part of him,
 her, it.
 ئورادە *orada*, at that place, there.
 ئورالارە *oralara*, to those places, thereabouts.
 ئورالاردە *oralarda*, at those places, thereabouts.
 قەيىيە *qaniya*, where is it?
 ھەيىيە *hamiya*, where?
 نەرىيە *nereye*, to what place? where?
 نەرىدە *nerede*, in what place?
 نەرىنە *nerenin*, of what place?
 نە مەھەللە *ne mahalda*, in what place?
 شۇندىن *shundan*, from there?
 بۇ تەرەپتىن *bu taraftan*, in, on this side.
 ئولتۇرۇپ *oltarafta*, { there on that side.
 ئوتتۇرىدە *eutede*, {
 ئوتتۇرىغا *eute-beri*, hither and thither.
 ھەر يەردە *her yerde*, every where.
 ھېچ بىر يەردە *hich bir yerde*, no where.
 يۇقىرىغا *yoqari*, up, upward.
 يۇقىرىدە *yoqarida (yoqarda)*, up, upstairs.
 يۇقىرىدىن *yoqaridan (yoqardan)*, from above, from the top.

اشاغى يوقاريدن *yoqaridan ashaghi*, from top to bottom, from beginning to end.

يوقش يوقارى *yoqush yoqari*, up-hill.

يوقش اشاغى *yoqush ashaghi*, down hill.

اشاغى *ashaghi*, down lower; down.

ابلرو *ilери*, in advance, further on.

كرو *geri*, behind.

اوك *un, eun*, the front, fore part.

ارد *ard*, the back side of any thing.

اردم صره *ardim-sira*, after me, etc.

ايچرى اىچرى *icheri*, in, the inside.

طشره ديشارى *tashra, dishari*, out, beyond.

صاغه *sagha*, to the right.

صاغده *saghda*, on the right.

صاغدن *saghdan*, from the right.

صوله *sola*, to the left.

سولده *solda*, on the left.

سولدن *soldan*, from the left.

بوندن *bundan*,

بوران *buradan*, from here, hence.

بو يردن *bu yerden*,

اندن *andan*,

اوران *oradan*, from, through, by that place.

اول يردن *ol yerden*,

بو طرفدن *bu tarafdан*, from this side.

اوكنده *ununda*, { before, in front.

اوكنده *ununa*, {

اطرافه *etrafа*, { around.

اطرافده *etrafda*, {

الت *alt*, the under part, or side.

اوست *ust*, the upper part.

اوستنكده *ustunda*, at the upper part of thee, upon thee.

اوستندن *ustundan*, from the upper part of him, her, it; from it, off from it, off of it, etc.

§ 4. ADVERBS OF TIME زمان *zarf-i zemān*.

Every Turkish noun of time is also an adverb as in English.

- بو کون *bu gyun*, to day, this day.
 بر کون اول *bir gyun evvel*, one day before, as soon as possible, as early as possible.
 هر کون *her gyun*, every day.
 اوتنه کون *eute gyun*,
 اولسی کون *evvelsi gyun*, } the day before yesterday.
 اولبر کون *ol-o-bir-gyun*, the day after tomorrow.
 دها اولبر کون *daha ol-o-bir-gyun*, the third day from this.
 کون بکون *gyun-be-gyun*,
 کوندن کونه *gyundan gyune*, } daily, from day to day.
 اولین, اوایلین *euileyin*, at midday, midday, noon.
 This is a real adverb.
 اويله *euyle*, so, in that way, in that manner.
 بو اخشم *bu aqsham*, this evening.
 صباح *sabah*, tomorrow, in the morning.
 صباحلین *sabahleyin*, in the morning, early betimes.
 چیک صباح *chin sabah*, the time just after day-break.
 اخشمیلین *aqshamleyin*, in the evening.
 کوندرزین *gyunduzun*, in the day time, by day, during the day time.
 شمدی *shimdi, shindi*, now, at present, presently.
 شمدیلک *shimdilik*, for the present, at present.
 شمدیجک *shimdijik*,
 همان شمدی *hemen-shimdi*, } almost directly, just this moment.
 شمدیه قدر *shimdiya qadar*,
 بو زمانه کلهجه *bu zamana gelinje*, hitherto, until now.
 شمدیه دک *shimdiyedek*,

adverbs.

- شمدیدن *shimdiden*, from now, from this moment, time.
 دمین *dimin*, just now, but a minute ago.
 بوندن بویه *buudan-buyle*, henceforth, hence-
 بوندنصکرة *bundan-songra, sora*, forward.
 شمدیدن کیرو *shimdiden geri*,
 چو قدن *choqdan*, a long while ago, for a long while.
 دن *dun*, yesterday.
 ارکن *erken*, early.
 گچ *gech*, late.
 اوزاق *uzaq*, } distant, far off.
 اراق *iraq*, }
 یاقین *yaqin*, near, close.
 تبر *tuz, tez*,
 چاپق *chapiq*, } quickly, quick, soon.
 یارین *yarın*, tomorrow.
 اترتسی کون *ertesi gyun*, the day after tomorrow.
 کماجه کوندوز *geje gyunduz*, day and night.
 کوندوز *gyunduz*, the day time, by day.
 کماجه *geyje*, by night, in the night.
 کماجه لیلین *geyje leyin*, by night during the night (adverb).
 کماجه یاربسی *geyje yarisi*, midnight, in the middle of the night.
 ارتق *artıq*, (with an affirmation) now, at last
 (with a negative) no more, never again.
 زیاده *zyade*, more.
 برابر *beraber*, together, along with, at the same time.
 بویه *buyle*, } thus, so, in that manner, in this
 بویهجه *buyleje*, } way, in this fashion.
 شویه *shuyle*, so, in that manner.
 شویه *shuyle*, } middling, not too well.
 بویه *buyle*, }
 کچنلرده *gechenlerde*, formerly.
 بوندن اقدم *bundan-aqdem*,

- بهارین *baharin*, in winter.
 یازن *yazin*, in summer.
 کوزون *gyuzun*, in autumn, during autumn.
 قشین *qishin*, in winter.
 بولدور *buldur*, last year.
 سابقاً *sabiqan*, formerly.
 برزاول *bir-az-evvel*,
 یقینلردە *yaqinlarda*,
 مؤخر " *mu'akhkheran*, } lately.
 صباح *aqsham sabah*, evening and morning.
 اشتە *ishte*, here! lo! behold!
 بتون *bitun, bitun*,
 جملة " *jumleten*, } entirely, wholly, totally,
 هپ, هپ *hep*. } all, altogether.
 هابده *hay-de*,
 هایدی *hay-di*, } now then! go on! now for it!
 هایدی کیت *hay-di-git*, go along with you! be off!
 بشقه *bashqa*,
 غیری *ghayri*, } other.
 صکره *songra, sora*, afterwards, later, by and bye.
 هنوز *henuz, heniz*, just this moment, only just
 this moment (with a negative) not yet.
 جات, پات *pat, chat*, now and then, but rarely.
 یواش یواش *yawash yawash*, slowly.
 احياناً *ahyanan*, sometimes (Arabic accus. indef.).
 درعقب *der-'aqab*,
 اول ساعت *ol saat*,
 علی العجله *'ale-l-'ajele*,
 انیدہ *anida*, immediately.
 شمدی *shimdi, shindi*,
 چابک *chabik*,
 عاجله *'ajele*,

- صیق صیق *siq, siq,* } often, frequently.
 صقچه *siqcha,*
 بعض کره *ba'zi kerre,* sometimes.
 وقتلو *vaqtli,* } punctually, regularly in point of
 وقتناجه *vaqtinje,* } time.
 پک *pek,* very.
 نصل *nasl,*
 نباحه *nije,* } how, in what manner,
 نه شکل *ne-shekil,* } in what way, wherefore?
 نه وجهه *ne vejile,* } what! indeed!
 همان *heman, hemen,* only, just, hardly, in that
 very time.
 همان شمدی *heman, hemen, shimdi, shindi,* just this mo-
 ment, this minute.
 همان ساعت *heman, hemen saat,* } that very moment.
 هماندم *hemandem,*
 اول *evvel,*
 ایلو *ileri,* before.
 معدما *muqaddemān,* (Arabic accus. indef.)
 مقدم *muqaddem,*
 اک صکره *en songra, sora,*
 الحاصل *el-hasil,* finally.
 حاصل کلام *hasil-i kelām,*
 طهر *zahir,* of course, to be sure.
 ظاهر *zāhira,* apparently, (Arabic accus. indef.).
 صره ایله *sira-ile,* successively.
 فیما بعد *fima ba'd,* } henceforth, henceforward.
 بر دها *bir daha,* }
 اک *en,* the most.
 هیچ دکل ایسه *hich diyil, digil, ise,* }
 هیچ اولمزه *hich olmazsa,* at least.
 باری *bari,*

قارشو *qarshi*, } *vis-à-vis.*
قارشویه *qarshiya*,

وقت *waqit*, } from time to time, now and then.
بوقت *bewaqit*,

خصوصا *khusus*, } (Arabic accus. indef.), especially,
على الخصوص *ale-l-khusus*, } particularly, more particularly,
above all, more than all.

صوکند *sonunda*, at last, at length, in the end, in the long run.

بلکه *belki*, perhaps, may be, by chance.

یکیدن *yeniden*, newly.

مثلا *mesela*, (Arabic accus. indef.), for example, as for example, if, for example.

ظوتهلم که *tutalim ki*, } supposing.
فرض ایدلم که *farz idelim ki*,

صاقن ها *sagin hā!* } look out, take care, now! mind
الارغه *alargha!* } what you are about.
وارد *warda!*

اولا *evvela*, } (Arabic accus. indef.), before, first,
ابتدا *iptida*, } heretofore, precedently, ere now, in the first place, firstly.

کبی *gibi*, } as, like, so, almost, nearly, as it
مثللو *misillu*, } were, how, in what way.

کویاکه *guyaki*, as if.

نیچون *nichin, nichun*, why?

افرین *aferin, aferim*, well done!

اولقدار *olqadar*, so much, so many, as much.

اتفاقا *ittifaqa*, (Arabic accus. indef.), by chance, accidentally.

ایو *iyi*, } very well.
کوزل *gyuzel*, }
اپ ایوجه *ep iyije*, pretty well.

انسز	<i>ansiz,</i>	
انسزین	<i>ansizin.</i>	
بردن بره	<i>birden, bire,</i>	} suddenly.
اپانسز	<i>ap-ansiz,</i>	
بالبداهه	<i>bil-bedahe,</i>	
فجئة	<i>fej'etan, (Arabic accus. indef.),</i>	

§ 5. ADVERBS OF AFFIRMATION.

اوت	<i>evet,</i>	
بلى	<i>beli,</i>	} yes.
اويله در	<i>euyledir,</i>	just so.
بلكى	<i>belki,</i>	} perhaps.
بلكیده	<i>belkide,</i>	
قابلدیر	<i>qabildir,</i>	} possibly.
بلکه	<i>belki,</i>	
شبهه سز	<i>shubhesiz,</i>	} undoubtedly.
البته	<i>elbette,</i>	
گرجک	<i>gerchek,</i>	} truly, certainly.
صحيح	<i>sahih,</i>	
حقیقی	<i>haqiqi,</i>	
پك ايو	<i>pek iyi,</i>	} very well.
چوق ايو	<i>choq iyi,</i>	
پك كوزل	<i>pek gyuzel,</i>	
باش اوستنه	<i>bash ustuna,</i>	} willingly.
ازدل و جان	<i>ez-dil-u-jan,</i>	
واقعا	<i>waq'ia, (Arabic accus. indef.)</i>	in fact, really.

§ 6. ADVERBS OF NEGATION.

يوق	<i>yoq,</i>	} no.
خير	<i>khayr,</i>	
دكل	<i>digil, diyil,</i>	not, not only, not merely.

هېچ *hich*,
 ابد *ebeden*, (Arabic accus. indef.) } never.
 اصلا *asla*, » » » }
 حاشا *hāshā*, God forbid, no.

§ 7. ADVERBS OF DEMONSTRATION.

اشته *ishte*, | behold!
 نا *nā*,
 بافسدك آ *bagsana*, } look here.
 بكا باقى *bana baq*,

§ 8. ADVERBS OF ORDER.

اول *evvel*, (Arabic accus. indef.) } firstly, in the first
 اولى *for uly* *ula*, } place, first.
 ابتدا *ibtida*, }
 ثانيا *saniya*, (Arabic accus. indef.) } in the second place,
 ايكنجى *ikinji*, } secondly.
 عاقبت *āqibet*, at last, at length.
 صرا ايله *sira-ile*, successively.
 بير بيرينه *bir birina*, mutually.

§ 9. ADVERBS OF INTERROGATION.

اونه *o-ne*, what is this?
 بونه *bu-ne*,
 نيجون *nichin*, why?
 نه *ne*, what?
 نصل *nasl*,
 نيجه *nije*,
 نه شكل *ne shekil*, how?
 نه وجهله *ne vej-ile*,
 نه كونه *ne gyune*,
 نيجه *nije*, how? how many? how much?

نیجا سن *nije-sin*, how are you?

قاج *qach*, how many?

قاجنجی *qachinji*, the howmanyeth.

نقد *naqadar*, how much? how many? how long (in time)?

قاج کره *qach kerre*, } how many times?

قاج دفعه *qach def'a*, }

نرهه *nereya*, } where, whereabouts?

نرهه *nereda, nerda*, }

قنغی *qanghi, hanghi*, which?

قنی *qani, hani*, where, where is it?

نه سببدن *ne sebedden*, for what cause? for what reason?

نه وجه ايله *ne vejh-ile*, in what way?

§ 10. ADVERBS OF WARNING.

صاقن *sagin*, take care! now! mind what you are about! look out! get out of the way!

کوزکی اح *gyuzunu ach*, open your eyes! look out! be attentive, be vigilant!

صاول *sawul*, get out of the way, clear the road! take care!

الارغه *alargha*, (Italian) be off! keep away! keep your distance! make room!

هابده *hay-de*, } now then! go on! now for it!

هابدی *hay-di*, }

کیت هایدی *haydi git*, be off! go along with you!

§ 11. ADVERBS OF REFUSAL, OR DENIAL.

یوق *yog*, } no not at all.

خیر *khayr*, }

اولماز *olmaz*, it cannot be.

اصلا *asla*, (Arabic accus. indef.) never, not at all.

§ 12. ADVERBS OF SILENCE.

صوس *sus*, } hold your tongue! be silent! cease, leave
 صوس اول *sus ol*, } off speaking or talking.
 سسكى كس *sesini kess*, hold your tongue! etc.

CHAPTER XXXIV.

TURKISH EXPLETIVES.

An expletive is a word, or part of a word, giving expressive force to a sentence, but which does not admit of being exactly rendered in another language. Expletives are, however, very common in Turkish, and therefore the following list of them is given.

بارى *bari*, one time, once. Lord! at least, if nothing else, just, only, any how, at all events, at any rate.

بس *pes*, then, after all, after which, moreover, well? what then? what next?

ككاشكه *kyashke*, } would that it were so! O that! I
 ككشه *keshke*, } would that!

كور *gyure*, (the 5th gerund of the verb كورمك *gyurmek*, to see, used like an adverb) like, according.

بكا كور *bana gyure*, according to me.

سكا كور *sana gyure*, according to you, (theo).

اوكا كور *ona gyure*, according to him, her.

هله *hele*, now! look there! do just look! well! did you ever! come!

ارتق *artiq*, (with a negative), no more, never, again, (with an affirmative) now, at last, under those

circumstances, already (used conjunctively) well, in short.

دو *deyu*, for دیوب *deyub*, in conversation it is pronounced *deye*, a gerund of دیمک *demek*, to say, said, having said, he said, saying, intending.

مگر *meger*, unless, and still, and yet and all the while, but, only.

دها *daha*, more.

دخی *dakhi*, also, and, even.

دا *da*, *de*, this is used at the end of a word, as and.

اودا *oda*, he, she also.

بودا *buda*, this (person) also.

ادم سنده *adam sanda*, what a man (you are)!

دندکده *dedikde*, on having said.

همان *hemān*, *hemen*, only, just, hardly, only just; at once, immediately, all of a sudden.

ایسه *ise*, but, through, as for (it is the 3rd pers. subjunctive mood of the objective verb ایم *im*).

ایسده *isede*, but, although.

بره *bre*, } sirrah! fellow! O! oh! exclamation of

بهی *behey*, } contempt.

بره ادم *bre adam*, } you fellow!

بهی ادم *behey adam*, }

کوک *gerek*, fitting, becoming, opportune, whether, it is necessary, but.

کری کبی *geregi gibi*, as it becoming to it, well, properly, thoroughly.

همین *hemin*, } the very same, but a minute ago

دمین *demin*, } just now.

انجاق *anjaq*, only, just, hardly, except, but however, still

جه *ja*, *je*, adverbial termination.

کوزلجه *gyuzelje*, prettily.

بويلاجه *buyleje*, in this way, manner.

عقبياجه *aqabimja*, after me.

بونكاجه *bununje*, after this, that.

Notice that each Turkish expletive may be rendered in English in many different ways.

CHAPTER XXXV.

PREPOSITIONS, POSTPOSITIONS AND PARTICLES.

As the Turkish preposition always follows the noun, pronoun, or verb it governs, it is properly a postposition. There is no true preposition in the Turkish language; but Arabic and Persian prepositions are largely used; and these foreign prepositions always precede the words they govern.

على الحساب *ala-l-hisāb*, on account of.

على الطريق *ala-t-tarīq*, on the way, upon the road.

از سر نو *ez-ser-i nev*, from a new beginning.

Postpositions take an active part in the Turkish language, and form one of its difficulties; some postpositions govern the nominative, some the genitive, others the dative, and others the ablative. The following will be found useful.

اول *evvel*, before.

صكرا *sonra, sora*, after.

اوتد *ute*, beyond.

برو *beri*, hither, since, hitherwards.

غيرى *ghayri*, besides.

ماعدأ *ma'ada*, other.

ناشی *nāshi*, owing to, arising from (any cause).

اوترو *uturu*, on account of, concerning, about.

يكا *yana* (erroneously used for يانه *yana*) on account of, in respect of, to, or on the side.

طوغرى *doghru*, towards, to.

قدر *qadar*,

دكين *deyin*, until, as far as.

دك *dek*,

كوره *gure*, according.

له *le*, *la*,

يله *ile*, *ila*, with.

اوزره *uzere*, *uzre*,

ابچون *ichin*, *ichun*,

دائر *du'ir*,

طولى *doluy*,

اشورى *ashiri*, beyond.

يرينه *yerina*, in place of, instead, in lieu of.

باننه *yanina*, near to, by the side of.

هعنده *haqqinda*,

خصوصنده *khususunda*, } concerning, about, respecting, touching,
with respect to, over again, and again.

§ 1. Some of the Arabic and Persian propositions used in Turkish are subjoined.

§ 2. ARABIC PREPOSITIONS.

الى *ila*, to, towards (used in Turkish, an Arabic adverbial expression).

الى ماشا الله *ilu-ma-sha'llah*, to, or until (the time) which God wills.

الى اخره *ila akhirihi*, to the end, and so for, et cetera.

الى الابد *ila-lebed*, for ever, to all eternity.

الى الانتها *ila-lintihā*, to the end.

- إلى الآخر *ila-l-akhiret*, to the end.
 من *min*, from.
 من بعد *min ba'd*, henceforward.
 من عند الله *min 'ind ullāh*, from God.
 من عندكم *min 'indekum*, from you.
 من عند الجار *min 'ind ej-jar*, from the neighbour.
 من الابتداء *min el-ibtēda*, from the commencement.
 من غير *min ghayr*, } without.
 من دون *min devn*, }
 من دون الطابور *min devn el-tabur*, without the battalion.
 على *'ale*, upon, on, according to.
 على كل شيء قدير *'ale kyullī-shi'īn qadīr*, God is Almighty.
 على الإطلاق *'ale-l-itlaq*, in a general sense, never, (an adverbial expression).
 على العموم *'ale-l-'umum*, generally, commonly, universally.
 على التوالي *'ale-t-tevālī*, successively, uninterruptedly.
 على أي حال *'ale-eyyi-halīn*, in whichever way.
 على ذمتهم *'ala zummetihim*, upon their conscience.
 على قلوبنا *'ālā qulubina*, upon our hearts.
 كلا التقديرين *'ala kila-'t-tuqdireyn*, in either of the two cases.
 في *fi*, in, into, on, about.
 في الحال *fi-l-hal*, at once, instantly.
 في الجملة *fi-l-jumle*, concisely, in a summary manner.
 في الحقيقة *fi-l-haqīqa*, in truth.
 في ريب *fi-reibīn*, in doubt.
 في البيت *fi-l-beyti*, in the house.
 في الكتاب *fi-l-kitābi*, in the book.
 في الحال *fi-l-hāl*, now, in the present moment.
 في العربة *fi-l-'araba*, in the carriage.
 في بلادهم *fi beladīhim*, in their country.
 في افكارهم *fi efkyārihim*, in their minds, thoughts.

- ب *bi*, in, by, with, on.
 بالحقيقت *bil-haqiqat*, in effect, in truth, in reality.
 بالجملة *bi-l-jumle*, all, every one.
 بالتدبير *bit-tedbir*, by, or with care.
 بالباطن *bil-bātin*, inwardly.
 بحيات فرعون *bi-heyāt fer'un*, by the life of Pharoah.
 بسيف *bi-seif*, by the sword.
 بسم الله *bism-i 'llah*, in the name of God.
 ل *li*, for, to.
 لاب *li-eb*, on the father's side, paternal.
 لام *li-umm*, on the mother's side, maternal.
 لاجل *li-ejl*, in order to, on account of.
 هدى للمتقين *huda lil-muttaqina*, a guidance and direction to the pious.
 لدى الاقتضا *ledi-el-igtiza*, when needful, necessary, requisite, in case of need.
 لنا *lina*, to us.
 لكم *lekyum*, to you.
 لله *lillāh*, by God.
 لدى *leda*, (before the definite article ال *lede* immediately after (in time) لدى السؤال *leda s-u-'al*, on the question being put, when asked.
 بلا *bila*, without.
 بلا ادب *bila edeb*, without good manners.
 بلا فائض *bila fa'iz*, without interest on money.
 بلا علت *bila illet*, without cause, excuse.
 بلا جيش *bila jeyshin*, without troops.
 بلا رخصت *bila rukhsat*, without leave, permission.
 بلا عقل *bila 'aqlin*, stupid, foolish.
 بلا شبهه *bila shuphe*, without doubt.
 بلا اكل *bila eklin*, without food.
 بلا انتفاع *bila intifa'*, without benefit, gain, advantage.

§ 3. PERSIAN PREPOSITIONS.

- از *ez, z, zi*, from, of, by, under, through.
 از سرنو *ez ser-i-nev*, from a new beginning, over again,
 and again.
 از دست *ez dest*, out of, from the hand.
 از این طرف *ez in taraf*, from this side.
 زیر سر *zi ber ser*, on the head (lit. from off the head).
 از هر جهت *ez her jihat*, in every way, from every side.
 پس *pes*, after.
 پس از آن *pes ez an*, after that, (also used as expletive,
 and interrogative.
 با *bā*, with by.
 با خدا *ba khuda*, with God.
 با احتیاس *ba ihtirās*, with care.
 با من *ba men*, with, by me.
 به *be*, with, to, by.
 بجا *bi ja*, in place.
 بتدبیر *btedbir*, with management.
 بدست دست *bedest-i dost*, in the hand of a friend.
 بامید خدا *be umid-i-khuda*, in the hope of God.
 بجانب *bejānib*, by the side.
 بهر *beher*, each.
 بهر ماه *beher mah*, each month, monthly.
 در *der*, in, into, about, on the subject of.
 درمیان *dermiyan*, between, in the midst.
 در این حال *der in hāl*, in this state.
 در این عالم *der in alem*, in this world.
 در خانه *der khane*, in a house.
 در راه *der rah*, in a road.
 در بوستان *der bostān*, in a garden.
 زیر *zir*, under, beneath.

- زیر دست *zir-dest*, a subject, any one subject to another.
 زیر زین *zir-zin*, under a saddle.
 زیر زور *zir-zor*, under, by force.
 زیر مجبوریّت *zir-i-mejburiyyet*, under compulsion.
 زیر حکومت *zir-i-hukumet*, under the Government.
 زیر زمین *zir-i-zemin*, under ground, under the earth.
 تا *ta*, until, even as far, as far as.
 تا لندن *ta londraya*, as far as London.
 تا دنیانک آخرت *ta dunyanin akhiretina*, until the end of the world.
 برای *berai*, for, because.
 برای مصلحت *berai maslahat*, because advisable.
 برای تاب *berai-tāb*, because (of) strength, power, might.
 میان *miyān*, between, the middle, the midst.
 میانمیز *miyānimiz*, between us, in the midst of us.
 میانجی *miyānji*, a mediator, one who stands between two persons.
 پیش *pish*, the front, before.
 پیش خانه *pishi-i khāne*, in front of, before the house.
 پیش تخته *pish takhte*, little front tablets to count money on, used by money changers in the East.
 پیش نظر *pishi-i nazar*, in front, under one's eyes, before any one.
 بی *bi*, without (in composition).
 بی بآک *bi-bāk*, fearless, without fear..
 بیچاره *bi-chāre*, poor, helpless, forlorn, without help.
 بی عقل *bi-aql*, without reason, sense, intelligence.
 بی زبان *bi-zebān*, without tongue, dumb.
 بی حق *bi-haqq*, without truth, without pure verity.
 بی آرام *bi-ārām*, without repose, without tranquillity,
 بی آرامش *bi-ārāmish*, } restless.
 بر *ber*, on, upon, over, according to.

- برطرف *ber taraf*, on one side, out of the way.
 برآن *ber-ān*, upon this.
 برمنوال ماکر *ber minvāli muharrer*, according to the manner described, as above mentioned.
 بردست *berdest*, by the hand (of so and so).
 برمراد *ber-murād*, according to, by one's desire, aim, wish, intent.
 فرو *furu*,
 فرود *furud*, { beneath, down, downwards.
 فرو آموان *furu āmadān*, to descend, to come down.
 سرشروایتmek *ser-furu-etmek*, to be humble, to hold the head down.
 زبر *zeber*, the upper side, above.
 زبر این *zeber in*, upon this.
 زبردست *zeber-dest*, over, superior.
 زبروزیر *zir-u-zeber*, upside down, in complete ruin.
 نزد *nezd*,
 نزدیک *nezdik*, { near, the immediate vicinity, or proximity of any thing.
 نزد لله *nezd lillāh*, near to God.
 نزدیکه الله *allahin nezdinde*, near to, with God.

§ 4. THE PARTICLE د *de, da*.

When this particle د *de, da*, is added to the infinitive, or verbal noun, it gives the meaning of «busy with» or «engaged in» doing any thing.

- یازمقددر *yazmaq-da-dir*,
 یازمددر *yazma-da-dir*, { he is engaged in, or «busy with» writing.
 باقمقددر *bu keyfiyyeti baqmaq-da-dir*,
 باقمدددر *bu keyfiyyeti baqma-da-dir*, { he is «busy with», or «engaged in» this matter.

- بقده كور *baq-da-gyeur*, look and see.
 او كرنمكدن *ugrenmek-de-dir*, } he is «engaged in», or «busy
 او كرنمده *ugrenme-de-dir*, } with» learning.
 سومكدن *sevmek-de-dir*, } he is «engaged in», or «busy
 سومده *sevme-de-dir*, } with» loving, or making love.
 اولنمكدن *evlenmek-de-dir*, } he is «busy with», or «en-
 اولنمده *evlenme-de-dir*, } gaged in» (is going) to be
 فارى المقة *qari almaq-da-dir*, } married.
 فارى المده *qari alma-da-dir*, }
 ابندرمكدن *askeri taslim etdirmek-de-dir*,
 ابندرمده *askeri taslim etdirme-de-dir*,
 he is «busy with», or «engaged in» drilling
 the soldiers.
 تجارت انمكدن *tijaret etmek-de-dir*, } he is «engaged in»
 تجارت انمده *etme de-dir*, } commerce.
 دعا ايتمكدن *dua etmek-de-dir*, } he is «engaged in»
 دعا اينمده *etme-de-dir*, } prayer, he is praying.

§ 5. The particle *da, de*, is also used as a conjunction and is repeated after each of the members of a phrase that are linked together by it; the *da, de*, is always affixed to each word.

اوچموز و بئير *ben-da-san-da-o-da uchumuz ve-*
ririz, I, thou, and he too, we will all three give.

When it is placed after the conditional it is equivalent to «even».

گتسه *gitse-de*, «even» should he go.

گلسه *gelse-de*, «even» should he come.

گده *gidejek olsa-da*, «even» should he be about to go.

§ 6. The postposition *دن dan, den*, it sometimes signifies, «by», «through» or «of».

- اندى *andan, ondan*, by, of him, her.
 ارادتندن *adamin irâtedinden*, by the will of man.
 کلى بوازندن *boghazindan geldi*, he came through its strait.
 کلى دن و قردن لوندربه *denizden ve qaradan londraya geldi*, he came to London by sea and by land.
 چقى پنجرمدن *penjeremden chiqdi*, he went out through my window.
 ايتدى حبسخانه پنجرمدن فرار ايتدى *habs-khâne penjeresinden firar etti*, he escaped through the prison window.
 کچى قورشين جسدندن *gurshun jesedinden gechedi*, the bullet went through his body.
 اولدى قىلجىدن تلف اولدى *qilijdan telef oldu*, he was killed by the sword.
 اولدى سانجيدن *sanjidan uldu*, he died of colic.
 اولدى اسستمىدن *isitmadan, sitmadan uldu*, he died of fever, 'etc.

§ 7. This postposition *dan, den*, also signifies «made of».

- بو کوستک التوندن *bu kyustek altindan, altundan, dir*, this watch-chain is «made of» gold.
 بو ساعت کومشدىن *bu saat gyumushden dir*, this watch is «made of» silver.
 بو تنجره باقردن *bu tenjere bagirdan dir*, this saucepan is «made of» copper.
 بو کوپرى دمىر تيموردن *bu kyupru demirden dir*, this bridge is «made of» iron.
 التوندىن بى يوزک *altundan bir yuzuk*, a ring «made of» gold.
 تيموردن بى گمى *demirden bir gemi*, a ship «made of» iron.
 ابيکدىن *ipekden dir*, it is «made of» silk.
 پاموقدن *pamuqdan, pampuqdan dir*, it is «made of» cotton.

در *aghajdan dir*, it is «made of» wood.

§ 8. This postposition *دن* *dan*, *den*, is also used in indeterminate verbal nouns.

گلمزدن اول *gelmezden evvel*, before coming, before the time or action of coming.

گلدکدن صکره *geldikden sonra*, *sora*, after having come.

گتمزدن اول *gitmezden evvel*, before going.

§ 9. THE POSTPOSITION *له* *le*, or *ایله* *ile*, *ila*.

The *ایله* *ila*, is very often written and pronounced *ilen*, or *ilan*, and the *له* *le*, *la*, is pronounced *len*, or *lan*, corresponds in English to «by» or «with».

انک ایله *onun ilan, ila*, «with» him, her.

خواجه ایله جیقدم *khoja ilan, ila, chiqdim*, I went out «with» the Professor.

کیله ایله صاتمق *kile ilan, ila, satmaq*, to sell «by» the bushel.

هجوم ایله *hujum ilan, ila*, «by» assault.

سوری ایله *suri ilen, ile*, «with» the crowd.

فلجی ایله *qiliji ilan, ila*, «with» his sword.

قلمی ایله *qalami ilan, ila*, «with» his pen.

اهتماملری ایله *ihitimāmleri ilen, ile*, «with», «by» their care.

سومکله *sevmeylen, sevmeyle*, «by», «with» loving.

بازمغله *yazmaghlan, la*, «by», «with» writing.

بلطه ایله *balta ilen, ile*, «with», «by» the axe.

دینک ایله اوردی *deynek ilen, ile wurdū*, he struck him «with» a stick.

دستله *destlen, le*, «with» the hand.

همتکرله *himmetinizlen, le*, «with» your assistance, «with» your influence.

پاره ايله كلى *para ilen, ile, geldi*, he has come «with» the money.

بو مكتوبى قلم ايله يازدى *bu mektubi qalam ilen, qalam ile, yazdi*, he wrote this letter «with» a pen.

§ 10. When the postposition *له* *la, le*, is joined to any infinitive, it then means «because», but the letter *ق* *qaf* changes to the letter *غ* *ghain, ghayn*, and the *ك* to *y*.

بن كلكله گتمشله *ben gelmeyle gitmishler*, «because» I have come, they went away.

سىز الماغله *siz almaghla*, «because» you have taken, etc.

§ 11. The personal, interrogative, or demonstrative pronouns are placed in the genitive case, when they precede and are joined to the postpositions *ايله* *ila ile*, or *له* *la, le*.

بنم ايله كل *benim ile gel*, } come (alone) with me.
بنمله كل *benimle gel*, }

سنگله گدريم *seninle giderim*, I will go with thee.

اونله گيت *onunla git*, go with him, her.

بزمه اولور *bizimle otur*, sit down with us.

سزگله گلهجكلر *sizinle gelejekler*, they will come with you.

انلرله كوندر *onlarla, anlarla gyeunder*, send with them.

§ 12. THE POSTPOSITION *برله* *birle*, WITH, IN, BY.

This postposition is generally used with the infinitive *گلمك* *gelmek birle*, coming, whilst coming, coming together, or, all at once, but sometimes it is used with other tenses of the verb.

عون الله برله *avn allāh birle*, with, by Divine assistance.

ايمان برله آخرته كتدى *imān birle akhirata gitti*, he, she, died believing.

گلدی بیره *geldiyi birle*, immediately on his, her arriving, arrival.

بیره گدهلم *birle gidelim*, let us go together, or let us go all at once.

بیره گلدیلر *birle geldiler*, they have come together, or all at once.

§ 13. When the postposition *la, le*, is used as a conjunction, «and», then the final consonant suffers no change.

گلمکله نلمکله بیره دیل *gelmekle, gelmemekle bir digil, diyil dir*, to come and not to come is not the same.

سوyleمکله سولمکله بیره دیل *suweylemekle suweylememekle, bir digil, diyil dir*, to speak and not to speak is not the same.

گتمکله گتممکله بیره دیل *gitmekle gitmemekle bir diyil dir*, to go and not to go is not the same.

بنیمله سز *benimle siz*, I, «and» you (lit. with me you).

انلرله بز *onlarla, anlarla, biz*, we and they (lit. with them we).

§ 14. The Turkish privative particle *siz*, placed like a postposition at the end of a noun, has the meaning of «less» or «without».

اڭسز *edebsiz*, impolite, dishonest.

چوچوسز *chojuqsuz*, childless, without a child.

سز سز *sizin siz*, without you.

اولمقسزین *olmaqsizin*, without being.

بقمقسزین *baqmaqsizin*, without looking, without seeing.

کتابسزم - ایم *kitabsiz-im*, I am without a book.

سلاحسز نفر *silahsiz nefer*, a soldier without arms.

پارهسز آدم *parasiz adam*, a penniless man.

ییمکسز فقرا *yemeksiz fugara*, a foodless pauper, a poor man without food.

§ 15. There are invariable postpositions when affixed to the noun, which place that noun in the nominative.

ایچون *ichun, ichin*, for.

الله ایچون *Alluh ichun, ichin*, for God.

بنم ایچون *benim ichun, ichin*, for me.

پادشاه ایچون *padishāh ichun, ichin*, for the sovereign.

حکمدار ایچون *hukmdār ichun, ichin*, for the king.

انم بابام ایچون *anam babam ichun, ichin*, for my mother and father.

بو ات بنم ایچون *bu at benim ichun, ichin*, this horse (is) for me.

کبی *gibi*, like.

گلدکلی کبی *geldikleri gibi*, as soon as they came.

سوز اکلمز کبیجه *suz annamaz gibije*, an ignorant stupid person, like a person who does not understand.

دوست کبی *dost gibi*, like a friend.

اوغلان کبی *oghlan gibi*, like a boy, a child.

بی ادب بیر جواب *bunun gibi bi edeb bir jerwab*, an impolite answer like this.

بنم کبی *benim gibi*, like me.

سنگ کبی *senin gibi*, like thee (you).

انک کبی *onun gibi*, like him.

دوستم کبی *dostum gibi*, like my friend.

ادم کبی طور دور *adam gibi dur*, stand up like a man, in a manly way.

§ 16. نه *ne*, what?

بو نه در *bu ne dir*, what is this?

بو نه مددر *bu ne medir*, what is this to me?

نه حال ایسه *ne hal ise*, in any case, no matter what may be the circumstances.

قدر نه *ne qader*, } how much?
 مقدار نه *ne miqdar*, }
 زمان نه *ne zaman*, } what time?
 وقت نه *ne vaqit*, }
 ديمك استر نه *ne demek ister*, what does he mean?
 نيه *neye*, why, wherefore?
 ايله نه *ne ile*, with what?
 ايچون نه *ne ichun*, *ichin*, what for?

§ 17. The interrogative pronoun *کيم kim*, who, when followed by the postposition *ايله ile*, or *له la, le*, is sometimes placed in the nominative and sometimes in the genitive.

کيم ايله *kim ile*, nominative, } with whom?
 کيمک ايله *kimin ile*, genitive, }

§ 18. When the postposition *ايچون ichun*, *ichin*, is placed with the possessive suffixes of the 3rd person it often drops the first syllable *اي*.

بابا سيچون *babasi ichun*, *ichin*, for his father.
 • فاري سيچون *qarisi* » » for his wife.
 اناسيچون *anasi* » » for his mother.
 كمسيچون *gemisi* » » for his ship.
 اوغودقلىر يچون *oquduqlari ichun*, *ichin*, on account of what they read.
 گلدكلىر يچون *geldikleri ichun*, *ichin*, on account of what they came (for).
 سويلديكلر يچون *suweyledikleri ichun*, *ichin*, on account of what they say.
 يدكلر يچون *yedikleri ichun*, *ichin*, on account of what they eat, etc.

§ 19. When the postposition *ايچون ichun*, *ichin*, is preceded by either the demonstrative, interrogative, or perso-

nal pronouns, the pronouns are placed in the genitive, with the exception of the third person plural, which is in the nominative.

آنك ايچون نه درلر *onun ichun, ichin ne derler*, what do they say about him?

سزك ايچون نه درلر *sizin ichun, ichin ne derler*, what do they say about you?

بنم خاطر م ايچون *benim khâtirim ichun, ichin*, for my sake.

سنك خاطر ك ايچون *senin khatirin* » » for your (thy) »

آنك خاطر ي ايچون *onun khâtiri* » » his, her, its, »

بزم خاطر م ايچون *bizim khâtirimiz* » » for our sake.

سزك خاطر نر ايچون *sizin khâtiriniz* » » for your sake.

آنلر خاطر ي ايچون *onların khatiri* » » for their sake.

§ 20. There are postpositions, or adverbial affixes which place the nouns of time, place, or condition preceding, in the dative. The following are some of them.

دك *dek* } till, until, as far as.

دگين *degin, deyin*, }

صباحه دگين *sabaha degin, deyin*, until the morning.

موتہ دگين *mevtē degin, deyin*, } till, until death.

اولنجه دك *uluncyēdek*,

شمديه دك *shimdiya, shindiya dek*, till, until now.

استانبول دك دگين *istambula dek, deyin*, till, as far as Constantinople.

اوليله دك *uyleyēdek*, till, until noon, noonday.

كيجيه دگين *geyjeye deyin*, till, until night time.

لوندرا دك *londrayadek*, as far as London.

مصره دگين *misira degin, deyin*, as far as Egypt.

اومده كتر *evimdek getur*, bring, or take it as far as my house.

§ 21. These adverbial affixes also follow the third gerund, which is put in the dative case.

سويلنجيهدك *suweylenjeyedek*, until I, thou, etc. speak.
 سوينجيهدك *sevinjeyedek*, until I, thou, etc. love.

§ 22. The agent sometimes is either named or understood.

سان بونی ساتنجايدك *san bunu satinjayadek*, until you (thou) sell this.

دوستم اومه وارنجايدك *dostum evime varinjayadek*, until my friend reach, or reached my house.

§ 23. قرشی, فرشو, فارشو, فارشی *qarshi*, opposite.

اومه قارشو *evime qarshi*, opposite to my house.

صاحه قارشى *sabaha qarshi*, towards the morning.

فارشيکه *qarshina*, opposite to thee.

فارشيسنده *qarshisinda*, opposite to him, her, it.

§ 24. كوره *gyure*.

كوره *gyure*, is the 5th gerund of the verb كورمك *gyurmek*, to see, used as an adverb.

انلارك لاقردبلىنه كوره *anlarin laqirdilarina gyure*, according to their account, to what they say.

انك لاقردبسنه كوره *anin laqirdisina gyure*, according to his, her, account, to what he, she, says.

كوز كوره *gyuz gyure*, according to appearance.

زمانه كوره *zamana gyure*, according to the season.

بزه كوره دكل *bize gyure digil, deyil*, not according to us.

عقلنزه كوره *aqliniza gyure*, according to your judgment.

عقلمزه كوره *aqlimiza gyure*, according to our judgment.

عقلمه كوره *aqlima gyure*, according to my judgment.

§ 25. یقین *yaqin*, near.

دیبی یقین قویو *dipi yaqin quyu*, the well that is not deep,
the well the bottom of which is near.

شهره یقین *shehira yaqin*, near the town, city.

بکا یقین *bana yaqin*, near me.

سکا یقین *sana yaqin*, near (thee) you.

اکا یقین *ana yaqin*, near him, her, it.

نزه یقین *bize yaqin*, near us.

سزه یقین *size yaqin*, near you.

انلره یقین *anlara yaqin*, near them, etc.

§ 26. طوغری، طغرو، ضغری *doghru*, straight.

طوغریسی بو در که *dughrusu bu dir ki*, the fact is (lit)
the truth of it is, that.

طوغروسنی سوبله *doghrusunu suvyle*, speak the truth.

طوغرندن *doghrudan* } directly, without interme-

طوغری به *doghruya*, } diary.

اکا طوغری *ana doghru*, straight to him, her, it.

مصره طوغری *misira doghru*, straight to Egypt.

دوز، طلوس، طوز طوغری *doz, dos doghru*, straight on, point blank.

طوغریسی *doghrusu*, sincerity, rectitude, honesty,
uprightness, integrity.

اکا طوغری کندی *qurshun ana doghru gitdi*, the bul-
let went straight to him.

بکا طوغری کلدی *bana doghru geldî*, he, she, it came straight
to me.

اومه طوغری کلدیلر *evime doghru geldiler*, they came straight
to my house.

کیتدیله طوغری ضابطه *zabita doghru gitdiler*, they went
straight to the officer.

§ 27. The following are some of the adverbial postpo-

sitions which place the nouns that precede them in the ablative.

صکرة songra, sora, after.

بندك صکرة benden sora, after me.

سندك صکرة sandan » » (thee) you.

اندك صکرة andan » » him, her, it.

بزدن صکرة bizden » » us.

سزدن صکرة sizden » » you.

انلردن صکرة anlardan » » them.

§ 28. ماعدا mavada, other.

اندن ماعدا andan mavada, further more.

بوندن ماعدا bundan mavada,

بندن ماعدا benden mavada, besides me.

سندن ماعدا sandan mavada, besides him, her, it.

بو ادامدن ماعدا bu adamdan mavada, other than, or besides,
or except this man.

صالحدن ماعدا اطلاق ایلدی salıhdan mavada itlaq eyledi,
he set them free except Salih.

دار عدمه کتدیلر mavadası diyur-i 'ademe gittiler,
they are gone to the land of non-existence
(death) except himself.

§ 29. اوزاق, uzak, distant, far off, the distance.

استانبول لوندردن انکی بیک میل اوزاق istambul Londradan
iki bin mil uzak, Constantinople (is) 2000 miles
distant from London.

اردون بesh میل اوزاق (در) ordudan besh mil uzak (dir),
(it is) five miles distant from the camp.

بندن اوزاق benden uzak, distant, far off, from me.

سندن اوزاق sandan uzak, » » » » thee.

اوزاق اندن *ondan uzaq*, distant, far off, from him, her, it.
 بورادن اوزاق *buradan uzaq*, » » » » here.

§ 30. اول *evvel*, before.

بندن اول *benden evvel*, before me.
 سندن اول *sandan evvel*, before him, her, it.
 اندن اول *ondan evvel*, before (thee) you.
 بزدن اول *bizden evvel*, before us.
 سزدن اول *sizden evvel*, before you.
 انلردن اول *anlardan evvel*, before them.
 بیر کون اول *bir gyun evvel*, one day (earlier) before.
 بیر ساعت اول *bir sā'at evvel*, { a little time before i. e.
 بیر ان اول *bir an evvel*, { as early as possible, with
 the greatest despatch.
 بیر ایدن اول *bir aydan evvel*, a month before.
 گتمزدن اول *gitmezden evvel*, previous to, before going.
 گلمزدن اول *gelmezden evvel*, previous to, before coming.
 اولدن آخره *evvelden akhirc*, from the first to the
 last, from beginning to end.
 پدرمدن اول *pederimden evvel*, before my father.
 انامدن اول *anamdan evvel*, before my mother.
 والدمدن اول *validemden evvel*,
 فرنداشمدن اول *qarndashimdan evvel*, { before my brother.
 برادرمدن اول *biraderimden evvel*, {
 قیز فرنداشمدن اول *qiz qarindashimdan evvel*, { before my
 همشیرهمدن اول *hemshiremenden evvel*, { sister.
 دوستمدن اول *dostumdan evvel*, before my friend.
 درسندن اول *dersimden evvel*, » » lesson.

§ 31. اوتوری, اوترو, اوترو, اوتوری *uturu*, concerning,
 about, regarding.

اوتوری بلمدن *bilmeden uturu*, in respect of knowing.

نوردن اوتوری *nurdan uturu*, about, regarding, relatively to the light.

بولدن اوتوری *yoldan uturu*, about, relatively to, concerning the road.

مالدن اوتوری *maldan uturu*, about, relatively to, the property.

§ 32. بکا بانه *yana*, طولای *dolayi*, relative to.

شوندن طولای *shundan dolayi*, about, relative to this.

مکتوبدن طولای *mektubden dolayi*, about, relative to the letter.

پارندن یکا *parandan yana*, in respect of, about, on account of, relative to the money.

کلمکدن طولای *gelmekden dolayi*, about, etc. coming.

§ 33. برو بری *beri, beru*, since, ago.

برو اوتہ *beri, beru ute*, here and there, up and down, all about.

بری برینه برو اوتہ *biri birina beru ute*, } to insult each other
قاقدشدرمق *qaqışdırmaq*, } reciprocally.

بروسندہ *berisinde*,

برو طرفدہ *beru tarafda*, } of, from, on this side.
برودہ, بریدہ *beride*,
برولردہ *berilerde*,

بش سندن برو *beshseneden beri*, five years ago, or since.

بر ایدن برو *bir aydan beri*, a month ago, since.

دورت کوندن برو *deurt gyunden beri*, four days ago, since.

یدی هفتهدن برو *yedi haftadan beri*, seven weeks ago, since.

§ 34. اوتہ *ute*, far off.

This postposition is used with the nominative as well as the ablative.

بورادن اوتہ *buradan ute*, far from here.

شهردن اوتہ *shehirden ute*, far from the town, city.

- اومدن اوته *evimden ute*, far from my house.
 اردودن اوته *ordudan ute*, far from the camp.
 جادرمدن اوته *chadirimdan ute*, far from my tent.
 اوته يقه *ute yaqa*, opposite, the opposite side.
 اوته ياننده *ute yaninda*, facing, opposite, vis-à-vis.
 اوته بری *ute beri*, here and there.
 اوته کون *ute gyun*, the day before yesterday.
 اوته کيجه پرنده *ute geje, perendush*, the night before.
 اوته سی چقمز صواق *utesi chiqmaz soqaq*, blind alley, street
 without egress.

§ 35. The following are declinable and the possessive affixes after them.

- ارد *ard*, after, the space behind anything.
 ارم صره *ardim-sira*, after me.
 ارك صره *ardin-sira*, after thee.
 اري صره *ardi-sira*, after him, her, it.
 ارمزه گلدیلر *ardimiza geldiler*, they came after us.
 اركزه گتدیلر *ardiniza guttiler*, they went after you.
 اركلر دوشتیلر *ardlarina dushtiler*, they run after them.
 ارمه گل *ardima gel*, come after me.
 اركه گیت *ardina git*, go after him, her, it.
 اركلر دوش *ardlarina dush*, run after them.
 ارمه گل *ardimja gel*, follow me, come after me.
 اركلر دشمن طابورك اركندن گلدی *dushman taburun ardingan geldi*,
 the enemy came from behind the battalion.

§ 36. الت *alt*.

- الت اوست *alt-ust*, upside-down.
 الت يانی *alt-yani*, } the next place lower down,
 الت طرفی *alt-tarafi*, } the remainder, the sequel.

انگلترونك *ingilteranin*, } under the English flag.
 سناجغى التندە *sanjaghi altinda*, }
 اغاج التندە *aghaj altinda*, under the tree.
 قبة التى *qubbe alti*, this space under the dome.
 بر التندە *yer altinda*, under ground.
 ال التندە *el altinda*, }
 ال التندن *el altindan*, } under hand.

§ 37. ارا *ara*, the midst, among, amongst, an interval.

ارادە *arada*, } in the midst.
 ارا يردە *ara yerda*, }
 ارادە صردە *arada-sirada*, sometimes, at intervals.
 ارامدە در *aramizda dir*, it (he) is amongst us, in
 the midst of us.
 اراكدە *aranizda*, in the midst of, or amongst you.
 دوستلاريميزك اراسندە يز *dostlarimizin arasinda iz*, we are amongst,
 or in the midst of our friends.

§ 38. ايچرى *icheri*, inside, the inside.

ايچردن *icherden*, from inside.
 ايچردە *icherde*, inside.
 ايچردەكى *icherdeki*, the one which is inside.
 ايچربسى *icherisi*, the inside, its inside.
 بيوركنز ايچرى *buyurunuz icheri*, come in, step inside.
 سراى ايچيندە *saray ichinde*, inside the Palace.
 دوشمنلرک ايچيندە يز *dushmanleri ichinde iz*, we are in the
 midst of, or among enemies.
 ايچردن چىقتى *icherden chiqtid*, he, she, it, came out from
 inside.
 ايچردە ايدى *icherde idi*, he, she, it, was within, inside.
 ايچردەكى *icherdeki*, that which (is) in, inside.

§ 39. *الرو، ایلرو ileru, ileri*, further on, in advance, forward.

ایلو گت ileri git, go forward, further on, in advance.
ایلو گچور ileri gechir, cause, make to pass forward, cause
 (him, her, it) to be placed forward.

ایلو قودم ileri godum, I prepared (this).

ایلو سور ileri sur, drive on, forward.

§ 40. *دشاری، دیشلرو، طشرو، طشره، طشاره، طشاری، طشری dishari*, the space outside.

بر شهرک طشرهسی bir shehrin dashrasi, disharisi, the space outside a town.

استانبولدن طشری istamboldan dishari, outside Constantinople.

طشرده در tashrada, disharda dir, it is outside.

طشریه چق dishariya chiq, go out.

طشره‌دن چاغردیلر dishardan, tashradan chaghirdilar, they called him, her, from outside.

مترسدن طشره‌ات meterisden tashra, dishari at, throw him, her, it outside the trench.

جباخانه طشردن مترسه کتوریکز jibkhāne dishardan meterisa getiriniz, bring the ammunition from outside into the trench.

خلف بر برینه بقمیوب قیودن طشره اولدیلر khalq bir birina baqmayub qapudan dishari, tashra oldilar, the people, men, without looking at one another, went outside the gate.

اومک طشره‌سنده evimin disharaisinde, outside of my house.

§ 41. *طرف taraf*, side, part, direction, district.

طرفه‌ترة tarafiniza, to your side, to, towards you.

طرفه‌میزی tarafimizi, our side, i. e. us, me.

طرفندن *tarafından*, from his, her side, part, from him, her.

بو طرفده *bu tarafda*, in this side, here.

بو طرفه *bu tarafa*, to » » »

بو طرفدن *bu tarafdan*, } from this side to that side.
اول طرفده *ol tarafda*, }

اوبر طرفده *o-bir tarafda*, from the other side, from over there.

بو طرفلردن *bu taraflardan*, from here.

بی طرفلق *bi tarafliq*,

tarafsizliq, neutrality, impartiality.

بی طرفی *bi tarafi*,

طرفسزلیق *tarafsizliq*,

اصولی *usulu*,

} the rule, system of neutrality.

بی طرف قالمق *bi taraf qalmaq*, to remain neutral.

هر طرفده *her tarafda*, every where.

بر طرف *bir taraf*, on one side, separately.

فغی طرفه *hanghi tarafa*, to which side?

اکی طرف *iki taraf*, both sides, both parties.

کریم الطرفین *kerim ut-tarafeyn*, of noble descent on the father and mother's side.

طرفیندن *tarafeynden*,

طرفینلو *tarafeynli*,

} mutually.

§ 42. اؤك *un*, the front, the fore part.

اوکند *ununde*, before him, her, in his, her presence.

اوک اباق *un ayaq*, the front foot, the principal prop, support.

اوک ایلاغی در *onin un ayaghi dir*, he, she, is his, her principal support.

اوک بزی *un bezi*, apron.

او اوکی *ev unu*, front of the house.

- باش اوکی *bash unu*, front.
 اوک قاپو *un qapu*, front door,
 قاپو اوکنده *qapu ununde*, before the door.
 اوکه کچمک *una gechmek*, to go before, in front.
 اوکه دوشمک *una dushmek*, » » » to show the way,
 to lead the way.
 اوکندن سکرچی *ununden sekerji*, forerunner.

§ 43. اوست *ust*, the upper part.

- او اوستی *ev usti*, the top of the house.
 ایاغ اوستی *ayagh usti*, the instep.
 مکتوب اوستی *mektub usti*, the address of, on a letter.
 اوست یانی *ust yani*, the upper part, the place next above.
 اوستم باشم *ustum bashim*, my head, for my head-gear,
 and what is on me my clothes.
 اوستمه *ustuma*, to the upper part of me, to what
 is on me, i. e. on to me, on to my clothes.
 اوستکده *ustunde*, at the upper part of thee, upon
 thee, upon thy clothes.
 اوستندن *ustunden*, from the upper part of him, her,
 it, from it, off from it, off of it etc.
 اوسته چقیق *uste chiqmaq*, to get the upper hand, up-
 permost.
 اوست دوداگی *ust dudaghi*, the upper lip.
 اوست دیشلری *ust dishleri*, the upper, front, teeth.
 اوست کلمه *ust gelme*,
 اوست اولماقلىق *ust olmaqliq*, } pre-eminence
 اوستنده کی *ustundeki*, upper, what is above.
 اوستنه *ustune*, upon him, her, it.
 باش اوستنه *bash ustune*, yes, I obey willingly.
 باشم اوستنه *bashim ustune*, upon my head, yes, certainly.
 (I will do so and so) willingly.

شاهه خبرخبر اوستنه کلوردی *shaha khaberkhaber ustune gelirdi*, news upon news come to the king.

§ 44. یوقاری, یوقارو, یوقاری *yugari*, the upper, higher part, or top of any thing, up, upwards.

یوقاریده	<i>yugarida</i> ,	up, upstairs, at the top, or upper part, above, upon, upper- most.
یوقارده	<i>yugarda</i> ,	
یوقارده	»	
یوقارده	»	

یوقارده کی *yugardaki*, what is above, up, upstairs, at the top.

یوقاریدن *yugaridan*, from above, from the top.

یوقاریدن اشاغی *yugaridan ashaghi*, from top to bottom, from beginning to end, from the head to the foot.

یوقاریجه *yugarija*, a little higher up.

یوقاریلی *yugarili*, height, summit, top, upper part.

§ 45. یان *yan*, the side.

یانم *yanim*, my side.

یانمه *yanima*, to my side.

یانمده *yanimda*, at my, by my side.

یانمدن *yanimdan*, from my side.

یانن *yanın*, thy side.

یانی *yani*, his, her, its, side.

یانمیز *yanimiz*, our side.

یاننیز *yaniniz*, your side.

یانلاری *yanlari*, their side, or sides.

یان یان *yan yana*, side by side.

یاننده قالمق *yaninda qalmaq*, to remain by, or near, or with one, to remain in one's possession.

یان باقمق *yan baqmaq*, }
یان باقش ایله *yan baqish ila*, } to look askew.

- یان چیزمک *yan chizmek*, to go away softly, quietly.
 درت یانه باقمق *dort-yana baqmaq*, to look on every side,
 all round, to be wide awake.
 یان کس یاجی کیسه بر *yan kesiji, kese-ber*, a pick-pocket.
 یانلر *yanlar*, wings of an army.

§ 46. یر *yer*, place, space, room, the ground, the floor, employment.

- طولیور *doluyur*, a full place.
 بوش یر *bosh-yer*, an empty place.
 مبارک یر *mubarekyer*, a holy place.
 یرینه *yerina*, to its proper place, instead, in
 place of, in lieu of.
 یرینه قومق *yerina gomaq*, to put (any thing) in its
 proper place.
 آدم یرینه قومق *adam yerina gomaq*, to treat and esteem
 (any man) as a person of consideration.
 یرینه کلمک *yerina gelmek*, to come, or get into its
 proper place, to be fulfilled, accomplished.
 یرینی بولمق *yerini bulmaq*, (any thing) to find its proper
 place, its level, to find a post of employ-
 ment.
 یرنده *yerinde*, in its proper place, fitting, right.
 یر ایتمک *yer etmek*, to make a place, or room.
 یرلو *yerli*, a native of a place, grown, or born
 on the spot, pertaining to the proper
 place.
 یرلر *yerliler*, the aborigines.
 نه یرلو *ne yerli*, of what country?
 بو یرلو *bu yerli*, this (is) of, from this country.
 یرلو ایتمک *yerli etmek*, to naturalize.
 یرلو یری *yerli yeri*, the proper place of anything.

yerli yerinde, { each, or every thing, or person
 yerli yerinje, { to, or in his, her, or its own
 place.

yerli yoldash, a compatriot.

یَر یُزُی *yer yuzu*, the face of the earth.

دیکش یری *dikish yeri*, a seam.

بر ايله beraber, } level with the earth.
 بر ايله yeksan, }

بر الماسي *yer elmasi*, (lit. earth apple) the Jerusalem
artichoke, the potato.

يەرلى يەرینا *yerli yerina*, (any thing) to its proper place.

yersiz adam, a man without a place.

بوش آدم *bosh adam*, } a man out of place.

CHAPTER XXXVI.

CONJUNCTIONS.

As the Turks have no punctuation either in their writing or books, they make use of various conjunctions to show the end of one sentence and the beginning of the next. Many of these are interposed with, and sometimes added to the gerunds, which perform a similar function. All conjunctions head the phrase they belong to, except the conversational *de*, *da*, and the literary *dakhi*, which are placed after the word in the sentence to which special attention is directed. These conjunctions are divided into different classes.

Copulative conjunctions.

و *o*, و *ve*, و *de*, *da* and, is called *واو عاطفه* *vwa ātifa*.

When the Arabic conjunction *واو* *waw*, و *ve* is placed between synonymous words, or between two words signifying different or contrary things, but which nature or the mind is accustomed to couple together, this conjunction becomes a vowel, and takes the sound of *u* or *ü* according as the first of the two words is soft or hard.

سودی و اوپدی *sevdi ve updti*, he loved and he kissed.

دولت و اقبال *devlet-u-iqbal*, fortune and prosperity.

صبح و افشام *sabah ve aqsham*, morning and evening.

بو گون و نارین *bu gyun ve yarin*, to day and tomorrow.

لعل و نهار *leyl-u-nihār*, day and night.

بای و کدا *bay-u-gedā*, rich and poor.

صلح و صلاح *sulh-u-salah*, peace and concord. But when this is used of asseveration then it is rendered by «By» and is pronounced as in Arabic.

والله *vwallah*, By God.

§ 1. The Persian particle *وا* *vwa* sometimes, before a few words, denotes a backward motion, or sometimes a recurrence, and may therefore mean back, or again.

وابسته *vrā-beste*, tied back.

واپسین *vrā-pesīn*, the last, the hindmost.

واپس آمدن *vrāpes-ameden*, to come back, to return.

واپس استادن *vrāpes istuden*, to be kept back.

واپس افکندن *vrāpes-efkenden*, } to put off (any thing)

واپس انداختن *vrāpes-endakhten*, } till tomorrow.

واپس داشتن *vrāpes dāshten*, to keep (any thing) back.

واپس ماندن *vrāpes mānden*, to stay, to keep back.

§ 2. The conversational conjunction *دە* *de, da*, too is always placed after the word of a phrase to which special attention is directed.

بیزدە گەلرئە *bizde geliriz sizde*, we, too, will come,
as also you.

بیزدە سئەزە ئونلارە ھەممەز گەلرئە *bizde sizde onlarda hepimiz geliriz*,
we, you, and they too, will all of us, come.

When the *دە* *de, da*, follows a verb in the conditional mood, it is rendered in English by «even».

سۆیەلسەدە *suweylesede*, «even» should he, she, speak.
گەتەمش ئىسەدە *gitmiş ise-de*, «even» though he, she, be
gone.

سۆیەلسەدە ئىدى *suweyleseydi-de*, «even» had he, she, spoken.

When this *دە* *de, da*, follows any other word than the conditional, it answers to the English «both» followed by the conjunction «and» or «also».

قۇلەرئەدە اغلارئەدە *qyulerimde aghlarimde*, I will «both» langh,
«and» weep.

گەلرئەدە سەرەدە *gelirim-de severim-de*, I will «both» come,
«and» love.

§ 3. The literary conjunction *دەخى* «*dakhi*», and, also, even, is like the *دە* *de, da*, always placed after the word of a phrase to which special attention is directed.

بىر دەخى اولماق اوزرە *bir «dakhi» olmamaq uzere*, on the
understanding that this shall not happen again.

بەن گەلدىم او دەخى گەلدى *ben geldim dakhi geldi*, I came,
and he «also» came.

دەخى قالماق *dakhi qalqmadi*, he, she is not up yet.

لوندردن دخی پاره کلدی *londradan dakhi para geldi*, money came from London «also».

لوندردن عسکر دخی کلدی *londradan asker dakhi geldi*, soldiers, «too,» came from London.

اوته دخی *dakhi (daha) ute*, «also» beyond, farther off.

ایو دخی *dakhi (daha) iyi*, better «also,» best.

دخیجه وار *dakhije var*, there is a little «also,» there is «also» some thing.

§ 4. ها *ha*, when it means «whether» and

اگر <i>eger, eyer,</i>	when they mean «although» put the verbs in the conditional mood.
گرچه <i>gerchi, gerche,</i>	
اگرچه <i>egerchi, egerche,</i>	
ها بازسه <i>ha yazsa,</i>	{ whether he, she write, or not.
ها بازمسه <i>ha yazmasa,</i>	
اگر سوسه <i>eger, eyer sevse,</i>	{ whether he, she, love, or not.
اگر سوسمه <i>eger, eyer sevmese,</i>	

This conjunction is more used in writing than in conversation.

§ 5. When the disjunctive conjunction استر *ister* is put before two phrases, it puts the verb in the imperative.

استر کلسون <i>ister gelzin,</i>	{ whether he, she, come or not.
استر کلمسون <i>ister gelmesin,</i>	

§ 6. هم *hem*, both, also.

هم بیوک <i>hem buyuk,</i>	{ it is «both» large, and «also» handsome.
هم گوزل در <i>hem gyuzel dir,</i>	
هم آبی <i>hem abi,</i>	{ «both» of land (and) «also» of water, amphibious.
هم ترابی <i>hem turabi,</i>	

گیتندیم	<i>hem gitdim,</i>	} I «both» went and saw.
هم گوردیم	<i>hem gyurdum,</i>	
همفراش	<i>hem-firāsh,</i>	a bed fellow.
همشهری	<i>hem-shehri,</i>	a fellow countryman.
همراه	<i>hemrah,</i>	a fellow traveller.
همجوار	<i>hem-jiwar,</i>	} a neighbour.
همجواری	<i>hem-jiwari,</i>	
همآهنگلیک	<i>hem-ahenglik,</i>	} accord, harmony.
همآهنگی	<i>hem-ahengi,</i>	
همپایه	<i>hempaye,</i>	a colleague, of the same rank.
همدم	<i>hemdem,</i>	intimate friend, inseparable companion.
همآورد	<i>hem-awerd,</i>	a rival, compotitor.
همآخانه	<i>hem-lhāne,</i>	of the same abode, home.
همدل	<i>hem-dil,</i>	unanimous.
همدملیک	<i>hemdemlik,</i>	} intimate friendship.
همدمی	<i>hemdemi,</i>	

§ 7. حنی *hatta*, so much so that, to such a degree that, and, in proof of it, I may as well mention that....

دن دبلورسک حنی *alem bilir «hatta» san bilirsın,*
the world knows it, so much so that even you know it....

§ 8. نه *ne*, neither, nor.

ند بو نه شو *ne bu ne shu*, neither this nor that.

نه ضبط نه نفر *ne zabıt ne nefer*, neither officer nor soldier.

نه اناسی نه باباسی *ne anasi ne babasi*, neither his, her, father nor his, her, mother.

نه یر نه ایچیر *ne yer ne ıcher*, he, she, neither eats nor drinks.

نه قاندين نه تن ارادتندن نه انسان ارادتندن انجق اللهدين
 ne qandan ne ten irādetinden
 ne insān irādetinden anjaq allahdan dogh-
 mushlar dir, they were born neither of
 blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor
 of the will of man, but of God.

§ 9. يا *ya*, or ياخود *yakhod*.

يا بو يا او *ya bu ya o, ol*, either this or that.

§ 10. كرك *gerek*, whether.

This conjunction places the verb that follows in the conditional mood.

كرك سويلهسه *gerek suweylese*, } whether he, she, speak
 كرك سويلهسه *gerek suweylemese*, } or not.

كرك سوراسه *gerek sever-ise*, } whether he, she, love or not.
 كرك سومزاسه *gerek sevmez-ise*, }

كرك يازارسه *gerek yazar-sa*, } whether he, she, write or not.
 كرك يازمازسه *gerek yazmaz-sa*, }

كركى كى *geregi gibi*, well, properly, thoroughly, perfectly, as it should be.

كرك اولماق *gerek olmaq*, to be necessary, requisite.

كرك كيتسه *gitse gerek*, it is necessary that he, she, should go.

كر كسه *gerek ise*, if it should be necessary.

نه كرك *ne gerek*, what does it matter.

نمه كرك *neme gerek*, what matters it to me?

§ 11. THE DISJUNCTIVE CONJUNCTIONS ARE.

اما *emma*,
 ولكن *ve lakin*,
 لكن *lakin*, } but.
 الا *illa*,
 فقط *faqat*,

• شمدى كيت اما صكره كيرو دون *shimdi, shindi git emma sora geri dun*, go now, but return afterwards.

• لكن *lakin*.

انى قبول ايدنلره *ani qabul itmediler lakin ani qabul idenlere*, they did not receive him, but to those who received him.

الا *illa*.

لا اله الا الله *la ilāha illa-l-llah*, there is no God but God.

فقط *faqat*.

هپ كيتمشلر فقط بن قلدیم *hep gitmişler faqat ben qaldım*, all went, I only remained.

CHAPTER XXXVII.

INTERJECTIONS.

Sometimes interjections are used alone, some precede verbs, and some are accompanied by nouns to which they refer. The noun is then placed in the dative, but with the interjection *yazıq* *yazıq*, alas! what a pity! what a shame! it may be either in the nominative or dative. The following are some of the interjections used in Turkish.

آ *ā*, O! eh!

آ سلطانم *ā sultānim*, { O! eh! dear Sir! Sir!
آ افندیم *ā efendim*, {

آ دوستم *ā dostum*, O! eh! my friend.

آ *ā* ho! ah! hey! I say!

هایدی *haydi*, go now then! go on! now for it!

هایدی گیت *hay di git*, go along with you! be' off!
 هایده گیدلم *hay di gidelim*, come along! let us go.

افرین *aferim*, well done! bravo!

افرین بزه *aferim bize*, well done we!
 افرین سزه *aferim siza*, well done you!
 افرین انلره *aferim anlara*, well done they!
 افرین اوغلم *aferim oghlum*, well done my boy! etc.
 ماشاالله *mashüllāh*, well! wonderful! what things God
 wills!

نه گوزل *ne gyuzel*, } Oh! O! how nice! how pretty!
 اه اه *ah! ah!* } how pleasant!
 های های *hāy hāy*, yes, to be sure, by all means! of
 course! certainly!

کل باقهلم *gel baqalim*, O! eh! hólloa'
 ای *ey*,

بکا باق *bana baq*,
 باقسك آ *bagsan ā*,
 یا هو *ya hu*,
 یا *ya*,
 ای *ey*,

Holloa!

صوص *sus*!

صوص اول *sus ol!* { hold your tongue!

یازق *yaziq*, یازقدیر *yaziqdir*, it is a pity.
 بکا *yaziq bana*, poor me!
 سکا *yaziq sana*, alas for thee!
 اکا *yaziq ana*, alas for him, her!
 بزه *yaziq biza*, alas for us!
 سزه *yaziq size*, alas for you!
 انلره *yaziq anlara*, alas for them!
 نه یازق *ne yaziq*, what a pity!
 یازقلر اولسون *yaziqqlar olsun*, it is a pity!

- مدد *meded*, help!
 اه *ah*, ah! O!
 الله الله *allāh allāh*! O God! O God! wonderful!
 وای *wāy, wāy*, oh! alas! holloa!
 وای باشمه *wāy bashima*, oh! the misfortune that has
 befallen me!
 بیره افرین *bre aferim*, bravo!
 بیره اوغلان *bre oghlan*, ho! say boy, lad!
 صافن *saqin*, } take care! now, mind what
 کوزکی اح *gyuzunu ach*, } you are about!
 به *beh*, oh!
 هله *hele*, now! look there! well! did you ever!
 دی باقالم *de-baqalim*, }
 دی امدی *de-imdi, deindi*, } now then! well! go on.
 عجائب *‘ajā'ib*, dear me! how very singular!
 اوخ *okh*, Oh! I am glad of it! I am delighted!
 واک *wākh*, alas! O dear!

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

SYNTAX.

The Turkish construction is often quite the reverse of the English.

اولدورمه ديو تنبيه ايتدى *culdurme deyu tembih etdi*, he gave orders not to kill him.

(lit. do not kill, saying, order he made).

احوانى تمام بيان اولنجه *ahwali tamām beyān olunja*, as soon as his, its affairs were (are) completely explained. (lit. the affairs of him, his, it completely explained as soon as being).

غرة ماه محرمده عزیمت و ماه مذکورک اوننجی چهارشنبه کوننده
ghurre-i mäh muharremde 'azimet ve mäh mezkurin onunju charshambe gyununda iptidā ser-haddi 'ajemiye dukhul olundu. The departure took place on the first of the month of Muharram, and the first entry into the Persian territory was on Wednesday the 10th day of the same month.

§ 1. When two substantives come together determining the relation or quality of each other, the first is put in the genitive case, the second remains in the nominative and takes the possessive suffix *ی* or *سی* of the third person singular. Real possession is thus indicated, the name of the possessor being the first, and the combination is definite.

پاشانک اوغلی *pāshanin oghlu*, the son of the Pasha.

دوستمک آتی *dostumun ati*, the horse of my friend.

ضابطک سترپسی *zabitin setrisi*, the military coat of the officer.

فرنداشمک پارسی *qardashimin parasi*, the money of my brother.

انگلتره نك دونماسی *ingilteranin donanmasi*, England's Navy.

انامک ماکبتی *anamin muhabbeti*, my mother's love.

اردونك پاشاسی *ordunun pāshāsi*, the Pasha (General) of the Army.

اومک قپوسی *evimin qapusu*, the door of my house.

مکتبک چوجقلىرى *mektebin chojuqlari*, the children of the school.

(lit. of the school its children).

اصل زادنك ترجمانى *asl zādenin terjumāni*, } The interpreter
 اصلزادنك ترجمانى « » » } of the noble.

§ 2. The construction of substantive with substantive not only indicates possession, but with possessive suffix added to it, it indicates a genus and species, the genus standing last and the combination remaining indefinite, or in the nominative.

پاشا اوغلی *pasha oghlu*, a Pasha's son.

دوست اوی *dost evi*, a friend's house.

ببان قازی *yaban qazi*, a wild goose.

§ 3. If the first substantive is a proper name the second is the species, the first the name of the species, and the combination is definite.

اق دکر *aq deniz*, the Mediterranean sea.

قره دکر *qara deniz*, the Black sea.

طونا صوبی *tuna suyu*, the river Danube.

بعج شهری *bech shuhri*, the town of Vienna, etc.

§ 4. When the first noun indicates the time, place, or employment, it remains in the nominative, and the second takes the possessive suffix *ی* or *سی* of the third person singular.

اتش تعلیمی *atesh ta'limi*, rifle, carbine exercise.

انگلیر مملکتی *ingliz memleketi*, the country of the English, England.

انگلیر دونماسی *ingliz donanmāsi*, the English fleet.

مسکو عسکری *moskov askeri*, the Russian army.

هند سواری عسکری *hind suwāri askeri*, the Indian cavalry.

قبرص والیسی *qipris walisi*, the Governor of Cyprus.

شام والیسی *sham walisi*, the Governor of Damascus.

ارزروم والیسی *Erzerum walisi*, the Governor of Erzerum.

مالطه اردوسی *malta urdusu*, the army of Malta.

- عثمانلو مملکتی *osmanli memleketi*, the country of the Ottomans, Turkey.
 طوبجی عسکری *topju askeri*, the artillery.
 فرانسز طوبلری *fransiz toplari*, the French artillery.
 صبح نمازی *sabah namāzi*, morning prayer.
 اخشام زیارتی *aqsham ziyāreti*, evening visit.
 کیاچه یمکی *geyye yemegi, yemeyi*, the Lord's supper.
 باغچه چیچکی *baghche chicheyi*, garden flower.

§ 5. When two nouns are in apposition no change takes place in either of them, i. e. they remain in the nominative.

- بوزباشی افندی *yuzbashi efendi*, Mr. Captain.
 ملازم افندی *mulazim efendi*, Mr. Lieutenant.
 قائم مقام بك *qā'im-maqam Bey*, Sir Lieutenant Colonel, a deputy Governor.
 میرالای بك *mir-alay Bey*, Sir Colonel.
 میرمیران پاشا *miri-miran pasha*, Lieutenant General Pasha.

§ 6. When two nouns are placed in juxtaposition, the first indicating the material is in the nominative and is placed like an adjective.

- التون ساعت *altun sū'at*, gold watch.
 التون کوستک *altun kyustek*, gold chain.
 الماس یوزک *elmas yuzuk*, diamond ring.
 دیمیر قپو *demir qapu*,
 تیمور قپو *timur qapu*, } iron door.
 چلک قلچ *chelik qilij*, steel sword.
 کومش طباق *gyumush tabaq*, silver plate.

§ 7. The noun which indicates the material can also be put in the ablative.

التوندن ساعت *altundan sā'at*, a gold watch.
 التوندن كوستك *altundan kyustek*, a gold watch chain.
 الماسدن يوزك *elmasdan yuzuk*, a diamond ring.
 دميردن قپو *demirden qapi*, an iron gate, a gate of
 تيموردن قپو *timurдан gapu*, iron.
 حلكدن قلع *chelikden qilij*, a steel sword.
 كومشدن طباق *gyumushden tabaq*, a silver plate.

§ 8. If the first noun indicates a quantity, and the second a material, then they are placed in the same construction.

بش كونك سعر *besb gyunluk sefer*, a five days journey.
 اون فنطار كمور *on qantar kyumur*, ten quintals of charcoal.
 سكر غروشلق ات *sekiz ghurushluq et*, eight piastres worth of meat.
 دوت غروشلق اتمك *deurt ghurushluq ekmek*, four piastres worth of bread.
 اوج قيه پرنج *uch qiyye purinj*, three okes of rice.

The numeral adjectives always precede their substantive which remains in the singular. Very often another substantive is introduced between the adjective and the substantive, with the sense of individual, or individuals.

اللى باش قويون *elli bash qoyun*, fifty head of sheep.
 بكرمى كيله بوغداى *yigirmi kile boghday*, twenty bushels of wheat.
 اوتوز پاره تكنه *otuz pare tekne*, thirty vessels.
 بش قبضه قلع *besb qabza qilij*, five swords.
 اوج دانه الماس *uch tana elmas*, three diamonds.
 اون قطعه سفينه *on qita sefine*, ten ships.
 بش پاره طوپ *besb pare top*, five cannons.
 يوز نفر آدم *yuz nefer adam*, ten men.

§ 9. When the verb follows the numeral adjectives, it is placed in the singular.

یوز نفر کلدی *yuz nefer geldi*, a hundred soldiers came.

اللی نفر یاره‌لدی *elli nefer yaraladi*, fifty soldiers wounded.

اون دوه ساتون الدی *on deve satin aldi*, he, she, bought ten camels.

یوز اتلو کیتدی *yuz atli gidi*, a hundred horsemen went, (are) gone.

§ 10. If the noun is the subject it remains in the nominative, and the noun that receives an action in a sentence is placed in the accusative case.

عظمتلو شوکتلو پادشاه حضرتلی پرسی تشریف بیوردیلر
‘azametli shevketli pādishāh hazretleri parisi teshrif buyurdular. His Majesty the very magnificent and very powerful Sultan has honored Paris by his presence, (lit. the very magnificent and very powerful the Sultan their Majesty (in the nominative) Paris (in the accusative), honor they have made).

شهباده حضرتلی لوندیری تشریف بیوردیلر
shehzade hazretleri londrayi teshrif buyurdular. H.H. the Prince has honored London with his presence (lit. the Prince, their highness, in the nominative, London, in the accusative, they have made honor).

§ 11. When Turkish or Persian cardinal numbers are used, they always precede their noun which generally

remains in the nominative, but if the cardinal numbers are Arabic, they follow and agree with it in gender.

بش آدم *bes̄ adam*, five men.

درت حفت *deurt chift*, four pairs.

هفت اقلیم *heft iqlim*, { the seven climates.

بدی اولیم *yedi iqlim*, }

حسّه ظاهره *quwayi khamse, zāhire*, the five external senses.

دو رنگ *du renk*, of two colours.

دو برابر *du beraber*, double.

دو جهان *du jehān*, the two worlds, the present and future life.

دو دو *du du*, by two, two each, two facing each other.

اواسم اربعه *aqsamı erbata*, the four divisions.

§ 12. The Turkish and Persian cardinal numbers always precede the adjective, and the adjective the substantive.

اون بیاض قوون *on beyaz qoqun*, ten white sheep.

بش بیاض ات *bes̄ beyaz at*, five white horses.

سکڑ سیاه طاوق *sekiz siyah tawuq*, eight black fowls.

هفت اق اسپ *heft aq esp*, seven white horses.

یگرمی کوزل فاری *yegirmi gyuzel qarı*, twenty handsome women.

§ 13. When the Turkish cardinal number is placed after the substantive, the latter is placed in the genitive either singular or plural.

ضابطک بری *zābitin biri*, an officer, one of officers.

ضابطلرک بری *zābitların biri*, one of the officers.

اتنک انکیسی *atinin ikisi*, two of his horses.

اتلرک ایکیسی *atların ikisi*, two of the horses.

چاوشک بری *chawushun biri*, a serjeant, one of serjeants.

چاوشلرک بری *chawushların biri*, one of the serjeants.

کمینک ایکسی *geminin ikisi*, two ships.

کمیملرک ایکسی *gemilerin ikisi*, two of the ships, etc.

§ 14. The substantives that precede the Turkish ordinal numbers are always placed in the nominative.

دردنچی بلوک *deurdunju buluk*, the 4th division.

بشنجی الای *beshinji alay*, the 5th regiment.

اوحنچی طابور *uchunju tabur*, the 3rd battalion.

اون برنجی نفر *on birinji nefer*, the 11th soldier, etc.

§ 15. In Arabic the ordinal numbers follow the substantive.

اربع اقالیم *aqālim-i arba'a*, the four seasons.

باب ثالث *bab-i sālīs*, chapter the third.

باب سدس *bāb-i sādīs*, chapter the sixth, etc.

§ 16. The two complimentary Arabic words حضرت *hazret*, presence, and جناب *jenāb*, side, are always used in writing and conversation either before or after persons held in honor; these two words mean either Divine Majesty, Imperial and Royal Majesty, or Excellency, or even Mr. When placed before the noun they remain unchanged; but when they are in Persian construction they are pronounced with the letter *i* of the Persian genitive.

حضرت حق *hazret-i haqq*, } His Divine Majesty, God.
حضرت خدا *hazret-i khuda*, }

حضرت پیغمبر *hazret-i peyghamber*, his Holiness the Prophet.

حضرت رسول *hazret-i resul*, his Sanctity the Prophet.

جناب حق *jenāb-i haqq*, His Divine Majesty, God.

جناب رسالتپناهی *jenab-i resaletpenahi*, his Holiness the Prophet.

جناب قرالیچه *jenāb-i qiralicha*, Her Majesty the Queen.

§ 17. When these complimentary Arabic words are in Turkish construction they take the possessive pronominal suffix of the third person singular or plural.

- افندی جنابی *izmir qāzisi mustafa efendi jenābi*, his honor the judge of Smyrna.
 پاشا حضرتلری *ser'asker 'ali pasha hazretleri*, his Excellency general Ali Pasha.
 بك حضرتلری *elchi Bey hazretleri*, his Excellency the Lord Ambassador.
 افندی جنابی *musteshur Mehmed efendi jenābi*, his honor the councillor Mehmed Efendi.

§ 18. The Turks when they mention the name of any of the old Testament Prophets, or that of Christ, or of the Virgin Mary, always use the word حضرت *hazreti*, first.

- حضرت موسی *hazreti Musa*, the Prophet Moses.
 حضرت ابراهیم *hazreti Ibrahim*, the Patriarch Abraham.
 حضرت مسیح *hazreti mesih*, the holy anointed one, Christ.
 حضرت مریم *hazreti Meryem*, the Virgin Mary, and so on.

§ 19. The Turkish adjective-adverb, postposition کبی *gibi*, like, is always placed after the noun, the personal pronoun, third person plural, the plural demonstrative, the singular and plural of the interrogative, or relative pronouns, and is never used absolutely, but is always accompanied by the indication of the thing compared with; and all pronouns, except the third plural, placed before this postposition کبی *gibi* are placed in the genitive.

- ارسلان کبی *aslan gibi*, like a lion, i. e. brave, bold.
 الماس کبی *elmas gibi*, like a diamond, i. e. brilliant.
 صو کبی *su gibi*, like water.
 طوب کبی *turp gibi*, like a radish, i. e. hale and sound.
 سرو کبی *serv gibi*, like a cypress tree, i. e. graceful.
 بونلر کبی *bunlar gibi*, like these.
 کیم کبی *kim gibi*, like whom?

برادر من کی *birāderiminki gibi*, like the one belonging to my brother.

دوست کی *dost gibi*, like a friend.

اوغلان کی *oghlan gibi*, like a child, childish.

کلدکلی کی *geldikleri gibi*, immediately on, or after their coming.

ابند کی کی *etdigi gibi gelir*, as soon as he does it, he comes or will come.

کیبیجه *gibiye*, nearly like.

سوز اکلانز کیبیجه *suz annamaz gibiye*, like one who does not understand.

بنم کی *benim gibi*, like me.

سنگ کی *sanin gibi*, like you (thee).

انک کی *anin, onun gibi*, like him, her, it.

یزم کی *bizim gibi*, like us.

سز کی *sizin gibi*, like you.

انلر کی *anlari, onlari gibi*, like them.

بونک کی *bunun gibi*, like this.

بونک کی *bunun gibi*,

بی ادب جواب } a rude answer like this.

§ 20. The Turks in writing avoid the use of the personal pronoun of the third person singular by placing in its stead an arabic adjective signifying the «above mentioned» the «aforesaid».

مذکور *mezbur*,

مرفوع *marqum*,

مذکور *mezkyur*,

مومی الیه *muma ilayh*,

مشار الیه *muḥārūn ilayh*,

مذکور لک جمله سی *mezburlerin jumlesi*, all the above mentioned, the aforesaid.

the above mentioned,
the aforesaid.

- یوم مزبورده *yevmi mezburde*, on the above mentioned day.
 مرقوم کلام *merqum kelām*, the aforesaid words.
 مرقوم شهادت ایچون کلدی *merqum shehādet ichin geldi*, the
 above mentioned came for a witness.
 مرقوم بکیر دون کلدیler *merqum Beyler dun geldiler*, the
 aforesaid Beys came yesterday.
 مذكر بکیر پاشایه کیتدیler *mezkyur Beyler pūshūya gitdiler*,
 the above named Beys went to the Pasha.
 مشار الیه سوبلدی *mushārun ileyh suweyledi*, the above men-
 tioned said.
 مومی افندی انکار ایتدی *muma iley efendi inkyūr etdi*,
 the aforesaid efendi denied.
 مومی الیها فاری کلدی *muma ileyha qari geldi*, the above
 mentioned woman came.
 مشار الیها قیز اوئندی *mushar ileyha qiz evlendi*, the
 aforesaid, above mentioned girl is married,
 and so on.

CHAPTER XXXIX.

THE VERB.

The verb is always preceded by its nominative, either expressed or understood, with which it agrees in number and person.

- بن سوبلدم *ben suweyledim*, I said, I have said.
 سز سوبلدىنیز *siz suweylediniz*, you said, you have said.

The understood nominative of the verb is expressed thus:

- سوبلدی *suweyledi*, he, she said, has said.
 سوبلدیلر *suweylediler*, they said, have said.

§ 1. It is however not uncommon to find that a singular subject sometimes has its verb in the plural, out of respect or politeness.

دوستم سويلديلر *dostum suveylediler*, my friend said, has said.
 انام گلدیلر *anam geldiler*, my mother came, has come.

§ 2. It is noteworthy that a plural subject often has its verb in the singular. This is on account of the total absence in Turkish of any exact rule for concordance between the verb and the substantive, and it often happens, as we have just noticed, that in a sentence, the noun is in the plural and the verb is placed in the singular, and vice versa.

كون خصلر گلمدى *irtesi gyun khisimlar gelmedi*,
 on the following day the parents did not come.

دوستلارم دون گلمدى *dostlarim dun gelmedi*, my friends did
 not come yesterday.

انلر گيتدى *anlar, onlar gitdi*, those (is) gone, etc.

§ 3. The Turks in writing, place the verb always at the end of the phrase, except in poetry when it is permitted to be placed any where in the verse.

انگلتره دن دوننمه گلدی *ingilteradan donanma geldi*, from
 England the fleet is come.

مصر دن حواث گلدی *misirdan havadis geldi*, from Egypt
 news has come.

انلر گيتدی *anlar, onlar gitdi*, they went, have gone.

§ 4. ايسه *ise*, now, but as to, with regard to.

This is the third person of the conditional of the defective verb ايم *im*, and is often used expletively, and means, «now», «but as to» «with regard to», it really means, «if the question be concerning so and so».

فلیپس ایسه بیت صیدادن ایدی *Filipos ise beyt saydadan idi*, «now» Philip was of Bethsaida.

احمد افندی ایسه استانبولدن ایدی *ahmed efendi ise istanbuldan idi*, as to Ahmed Efendi he was from Constantinople.

§ 5. ایسه *ise* is like اچون *ichin*, a disjunctive post-position, it is generally, however, a sign of the subjunctive mood, and signifies «if».

اوتورموش ایسم ده *oturmuş isem de*, if I had sat down.

اوقوموش ایسم ده *oğumuş isem de*, if I had read.

کلمش ایسه ده *gelmiş ise de*, if he had come.

یازمیش ایسه ده *yazmış ise de*, if he had written, etc.

§ 6. When two infinitives follow each other denoting comparison, the comparative is preceded by the positive, which latter is placed in the ablative followed by the particle ایسه *ise*.

یا کلش سوبلمکدن ایسه سوبلمک او در *yanış suweylemekden ise suweylememek iyi dir*, it is better not to speak at all than to speak ill.

§ 7. The present active participle اولان *olan* of the verb اولماق *olmaq* «to be» is often omitted after the Arabic active or passive participles.

مکتوبیمده مذکور (اولان) حوادث *mehtubimde mezkur (olan) hawadis*, the news mentioned in my letter.

مدینه لندنده رجنت صوغاغنده کائن (اولان) بر بنده خانم *medine-i londrada rejent soğaghinda ka'in (olan) bir bende khünem*, a house of mine situated in Regent street in the town of London.

§ 8. Every participle can be used as substantive in the nominative and in the accusative.

اوله جغنی سوبله *olajaghini suweyle*, say that it is to be.
 استدیکنی بوله ماز *istediyini bulamaz*, he cannot find what
 he wants.

سنی سونی سو *seni seveni sev*, love him, her, them, who,
 loves you.

بولدیغکی اولدر *beshikde buldughunu euldur*, kill what
 thou findest in the cradle.

§ 9. When participles active or passive are declined, they stand in relation to verbs the same as substantives.

و شراب نقصان کلمکله *ve sharāb noqsān gelmekle*, and when
 they wanted wine, (lit. and the wine be-
 coming short).

کیدیکمه باقمه *giydiyime baqma*, look not at that which I
 wear.

بنم دیدیکم بو در *benim dediyim bu dir*, this is he of whom
 I spake.

ایله دیدیکمدن احتراز ایله *dediyimden ihtirāz eyle*, be careful of
 what I have said.

یاپه جغمی سورمه *yapajaghimi sorma*, ask not what I shall do.

§ 10. Active participles, like the verbs from which they are derived, govern the noun in the accusative case, the passive participles do likewise, except only the noun they each qualify as an adjective.

مکتوب یازان *mektub yazan*, he, she, who, writes a letter.

مکتوبی یازان *mektubi yazan*, he, she, who, writes the letter.

ایله یازدیغم مکتوب *qalamim ile yazdighim mektub*, the
 letter that I wrote with my pen.

§ 11. Most of the active and transitive verbs govern the nominative when the object is indefinite.

شَرَاب اِیچدی *sharab ichdi*, he, she, drank wine.
 شَرَاب صَاتدی *keskin sharab satdi*, he sold strong wine.

آت صَاتمِن الدَم *at satin aldim*, I bought a horse.
 کِتَاب وِردِم *kitab verdim*, I gave a book.

§ 12. When however specifying an object which has been already alluded to, or is joined to a pronominal termination, the object becomes definite and is placed in the accusative.

سَعِیْرِ بِي نَظِیْرِ اِرسَال اِبتَدِیْلِر *scfir-i bi naziri irsal etdiler*,
 they have sent the incomparable ambassador.

شَرَابِی اِیچدی *sharabi ichdi*, he drunk the wine.

اَوِی صَاتدِم *evimi satdım*, I sold my house.

قِلَیْجِی اَلدی *qılıjı aldı*, he bought, has bought, or taken the sword.

فَرَانْسِز عَسْکَرِی *fransız askeri*, the French Army.

اِنْگِلِیْز دُونْمَاسِی *ingliz donanması*, the English Navy.

اَوْغُلُومُ سَوْرَم *oghlumu severim*, I love my child.

§ 13. The Turks generally use the word نَام *nam*, name, after a proper name of persons, places and thing.

اِبْرَاهِیْم نَام زَات *Ibrahim nam zat*, the personage named Abraham.

مُصْطَفَی نَام زَات *mustafa nam zat*, the personage named Mustafa.

مُحَمَّد نَام زَات *Mohammed nam zat*, the personage named Mohammed.

لُونْدْرَه نَام شَهْرِ *Londra nam shehir*, the city called London

مَالْطَه نَام جَزیره *Malta nam jezire*, the island named Malta

استانبول نام شهر *Istambul nām shehir*, the city called Constantinople.

ازمیر نام شهر *izmir nām shehir*, the town named Smyrna.

CHAPTER XL.

ON QUESTIONS.

As a rule in Turkish in whatever case the question asked, the answer must be in the same case, if the question is in the dative the answer is likewise given in the dative.

نرعه کیدورسکز *nereye gidiyorsiniz*, (dative) where are you going?

مصره کیدبوریز *misira gidiyoriz*, (dative) we are going to Egypt.

نردن کلدی *nereden geldi*, (ablative) where does he come from?

لوندردن کلدی *londradan geldi*, (ablative) he came from London.

§ 1. The price of anything asked, is always put in the dative, and the answer is also put in the dative.

قاجه *qacha*, at how much?

فاج غروشہ صاتدی بو ات *bu at qach ghurusha satdi*, for how much (many piastres) did he sell this horse?

بش یوز غروشہ *besh yuz ghurusha*, for, at 500 piastres.

§ 2. The Turks also put in the dative, the pronoun which represents a person or a thing, when they ask the name of any person or thing.

بوکا نه درلر *buna ne derler*, or } what do they call this?
 بوکا نصل درلر *buna nasl derler*, }
 خسته خانه درلر *khasta-khāne derler*, they call it a hospital.
 منقشه درلر *menefshe derler*, they call it violet.
 طوبخانه درلر *top-khane derler*, they call it arsenal.
 باصمه خانه درلر *basma khane derler*, they call it a printing place.

§ 3. When the question asked contains a verb of rest or repose, it is put into the locative case.

نرهده *nerede* where? where is it?
 نرهده در *nerededir*,
 بورا در *buradadır*, it is here.
 اوده در *evdedir*, it is in the house.
 بنده در *bendedir*, it is with me.
 سنده در *sendedir*, it is with thee.
 بيمده در *bızimdedir*, it is with us.
 ضابط اربوده در *zabit ordudadır*, the officer is in the camp.
 آت اخيرده در *at akhirdadır*, the horse is in the stable.

§ 4. If a question asked is in the genitive, the answer also is in the genitive.

بو آت کيمکدر *bu at kimindir*, whose is this horse?
 افندمکدر *efendimindir*, my master's.
 کيمک بو آتلر *kimin bu atlar*, to whom do these horses belong?
 بولکمزکدر *bulukmizindir*, (they belong) to our squadron.
 بو فلج کيمکدر *bu qilij kimindir*, to whom does this sword belong?
 ضابطکدر *zabitindir*, it is the officer's.
 کيمک بواو *kimin bu ev*, to whom does this house belong?
 بيمندر *benimdir*, mine, it belongs to me.
 کيمک بو تفنگ *kimin bu tufek*, who's is this rifle, musket

محمّد نفر کدیر *Mehmed neferindir*, it belongs to private (soldier) Mehmed.

کیمک بو پارە *kimin bu para*, who's is this money?
بابامکدر *babamindir*, my father's.

§ 5. If the question is in the ablative, the answer must be in the ablative also.

نەردەن کەلدیلەر *nereden geldiler*, where did they come from?

لەندەرەدن کەلدیلەر *londradan geldiler*, they came from London.
بو آتی نەردەن ساتون الدە *bu ati nereden satin aldin*, where did you buy this horse?

چارشیداندەر *charshidandir*,
چارسوداندەر *charsudandir*, | from the market.
بو قەلجی ساتون الدە *kimden bu qiliji satin aldin*, from whom did you buy this sword?

مەحمەدن *Mehmedten*, from Mehmed.
مەصطفی دن *mustafadan*, from Mustafa.
ئەبراهیم دن *Ibrahimdan*, from Abraham.
بو ساعەت کیمەندەر *bu saat kimdendir*, from whom is this watch?

بابامداندەر *babamdandir*, from my father.
انامداندەر *anamdandir*, from my mother.
دوستەمداندەر *dostumdandir*, from my friend.
ئەمداد عسکەری نە طرفەن کەلیور *imdad askeri ne tarafdan geliyor*, from which way is the relieving army coming?

شمال طرفەندن *shimal tarafindan*, (they are coming) from the North.

جەنوبەن *jenubden*, from the South.
مەشرەقەن *meshriqdan*, from the East.
مەغربەن کەلیور *maghribdan geliyor*, from the West.

کلپور دنماسی نره‌دن انگلیز *ingiliz donamasi nereden geliyor*,
whence is the English fleet coming?

انگلتره‌دن *ingilteradan*, from England.

مالطه‌دن *Maltadan*, from Malta.

مصردن کلپور *misirdan geliyor*, from Egypt.

طوبلر نره‌دن کچه‌جکلر *toplar nereden gecejekler*, from where is
the artillery to pass?

کوپریدن کچه‌جکلر یارن *yarın kyupruden gecejekler*, tomor-
row they will pass over the bridge.

دون حوادث کلدی استانبولدن می *Istamboldan mı dun ha-
wadis geldi*, did the news come from
Constantinople yesterday?

خیر مصردن کلدی *khayr, misirdan geldi*, no, it came from
Egypt.

CHAPTER XLI.

VERBAL NOUNS.

Turkish verbal nouns are constructed with their subjects like other nouns.

الانک کیتمسی *alayin gitmesi*, the going of the Regiment,
the Regiment's going.

الانک کیتدیگی *alayin gitdiyi*, the Regiment's having gone.

الایک کیده‌جکی *alayin gidejeyi*, the Regiment's being about
to go.

دوستمک کلمسی *dostumin gelmesi*, the coming of my friend,
my friend's coming.

دوستمک کلدیکی *dostumin geldiği*, my friend's having come.

دوستنك كلهجكي *dostumin gelejeyi*, my friend's being about to come.

§ 1. When the perfect and future verbal nouns have a pronoun as the subject, this is put in the genitive case, the verbal noun becomes declinable and takes the possessive suffix of the subjects number and person.

بنم يازمم *benim yazmam*, my writing.

سنك يازديك *sanin yazdiyin*, thy having written.

انك يازديكي *anun, anin yazdiyi*, his having written.

بیم كلدیمز *bizim geldiyimiz*, our having come.

سزك سوديكنز *sizin sevdiniz*, your having loved.

انلرك سوهجكلى *anlari sevecekleri*, their being about to love.

مصدقن كلهجكلى *misirdan gelecekleri*, their being about to come from Egypt.

مصره كیدهجكلى *misira gidecekleri*, their being about to go to Egypt.

§ 2. All Turkish infinitives and verbal nouns with their predicates are constructed in the same way as the verbs from which they are taken.

سنا نه هديه وريجكمى بن بلورم *sana ne hediye vereceyimi ben bilirim*, I know what present I shall give thee.

بو قارينن گوزللكنى بلورم *bu qarinin guzelliyini bilirim*, I know the beauty of this woman.

انى سويمم *ani sevmem*, my loving him, her, it.

بنم كليم امر مقرر دير *benim gelmem emr-i muqarrer dir*, my coming is certain.

لندريه كیدهجكنى *londraya gideyeyini*, his being about to go to London (accusative).

دوستکه قرداشمک بو کون هدیه کوندردیکنی *dostuna qar-*
dashinin bu gyun hediye gyunderdiyini, my
 brother's having to day sent a present to
 thy friend (accusative).

§ 3. Thus we see that Turkish infinitives and verbal nouns can be treated exactly like any other substantives.

کیتمی لازم دکل *gitmesi lâzim diyil*, his, her going (is)
 not necessary.

سومی لازم دکل *sevmesi lâzim diyil*, his, her loving (is)
 not necessary.

یمنی انمی لازم دکل *ymnin etmesi lâzim diyil*, his, her
 taking an oath (is) not necessary.

گلمهسنه لزوم یوق *gelmesine luzum yoq*, } his, her coming.
 کلمهسی لازم دکل *jelmesi lâzim diyil*, } (is) not necessary.
 اوومسی لازم در *uyumasi lâzim dir*, his, her sleeping (is)
 necessary.

کنورمهک جالشدی *geturmeye chalishdi*, he, she, tried to bring.
 اوومق اچون اوومه کلدی *uyumaq ichin erime geldi*, he,
 she, came, has come to my house to sleep.
 اتی صاتمق اچون بوره کتوردی *ati satmaq ichin buraya*
getirdi, he, she, brought, has brought the
 horse here to sell (it).

خستنهک اوومه بیلجکنه شبهه یوق *khastanin uyuyabilejeyine*
shubhe yoq, there is no doubt that the pa-
 tient will be able to sleep.

دوستم ناز بیلجکنه شبهه یوقدر *dostum yazabilejeyine shubhem*
yoqdir, I have no doubt that my friend will
 be able to write.

کل بیلجکنه شبهه یوقدر *pederim gelebilejeyine shubhem*
yoqdir, I have no doubt that my father will
 be able to come.

اوله جغنه شبهه بوقدر *bu adam 'ālim olajaghina shubhem yoqdir*, I have no doubt that this man will become a sage.

اشجی ایتی بشورمک ایچون کتوردی *ashji eti pishirmek ichun getirdi*, the cook brought the meat to cook it.

§ 4. When Arabic verbal nouns are used in Turkish they become declinable and take the suffixes like Turkish nouns, they are sometimes constructed in the Turkish or Persian manner.

ناظر امور خارجیه *nāzir-i umur-i khārijiyye*, } the Minister for
خارجیه ناظری *khārijiyye nāziri*, } foreign affairs.

ناظر امور داخلیه *nāzir-i umur-i dākhiliyye*, } the Minister
امور داخلیه ناظری *umuri dākhiliyye nāziri*, } for home department.

فنی حربیه تحصیلہ مدار *fenn-i harbiyyeyi tahsila medār*, } a help to acquiring the art of
فنی حربیه نیک تحصیلہ *fenn-i harbiyyenin, tuhsiline*, } war, military science.

ادارۂ بحریہ *idāre-i bahriyye*, } Naval management,
بحریہ نیک ادارہ سی *bahriyyenin idāresi*, } Board of Admiralty.
ادارۂ امور *idāre-i umur*, } the management of
امور ادارہ سی *umurun idāresi*, } affairs.

CHAPTER LXII.

THE GERUNDS.

The Turks use the gerunds very little in conversation, but they are constantly used in the literary style, one long sentence ending with one personal verb being formed of a

large number of subordinate sentences, each ending with a gerund, and these gerunds act to the ear as well as to the eye like the English «commas» and «semicolons», in fact they denote a pause in the sentence by dividing it, and by this means, they dispense with all punctuation.

بن سکا - سنی انجیر اغاجنک التندہ کرورب دیدو کم آپچون
 len sana injir aghajinin al-
 tinda gyurub dediyim ichin itiqad idermisin,
 I told thee, because of my having said I saw
 thee under the fig-tree believest thou?

پرعاشف معشوقہ یک باغچہ کنارنہ کلوب ادچروسنہ نظر ایدناچہ
 bir'ashiq ma'shuqanun baghcha
 kenarine gelip icherisine nazar idinje buyur-
 sunlar dedi, a lover came to the edge of his
 beloved's garden, and as soon as he looked
 into it, they (or she) said «Pray come in».

گلوب قوشہرق مکتوبلری کتوردی
 gelup qosharaq mektubleri
 getirdi, He came running and brought the
 letters.

بہ نفر قوشہرق حادرنہ واروب نفکی الی الناجہ رفیعک امدادینہ
 bir nefer qosharaq chadirina varup tu-
 fekini alinja refiqinin imdadina geldi, a sol-
 dier running came to his tent (and) as soon
 as he had seized his musket, came to the as-
 sistance of his companion.

بن کتابی بہ کون اومہ کتوروب احرف دفت الہ او فوناجہ کوزل
 ben kitabi bir gyun
 evime getirup acharaq diqqat ile oqunju gyuzel
 ve fa'ideli tevarikh idi gyurdum, I brought
 one day the book to my house, and opened
 it, and as soon as I read it attentively, I

saw that it was a beautiful and useful history.

اول دخى اغزينى اجوب انلار، تعليم ايدرك ديديكه
ol dakhi aghzini achip anlara ta'lim iderek dediki, He
 likewise (or so He) opened his mouth, and
 teaching them, said that or (and) He opened
 His mouth, and taught them saying, St.-
 Math. V, 1.

اول دخى جمعيتلى كوروب طاغە چىقدى
ol dakhi jem'iiyet-
leri gyurup dagha chiqtdi, so He saw the mul-
 titudes and went up the mountain, or (and)
 seeing the multitudes He went up into a moun-
 tain, St.-Math. V, 1.

• *etdi*, the man mounted the horse, and returned to his house.

يَدِي *vine vvasil olijaq yemek*
yedi, as soon as he arrived, or on arriving
 at his house, he dined.

emriniz vvasil olunja ita'et
 etdin, as soon as your command arrived, I
 obeyed, or on your command arriving, I
 obeyed.

گیدوپ گلمک *gidip gelmek*, to go and come.

أحب باوقده *achip baqdiqde*, on opening (and) seeing.

bunlar beni gyurup salam qildilar, these saw me (and) saluted me.

khanemize gelinje alay tertib ederlerdi, as soon as they came to our house, they drew up the regiment.

ایکی طرفدن فدل ظاهر اولماق
iki tarafdan qital zahir
olijaq, as soon as fighting on both sides be-
 came evident.

روایت ایدرلر *bir altun kyupru vardir diyu (diyup) riwāyet ederler*, they narrate saying, «there is a bridge of gold».

CHAPTER XLIII.

THE VERB «TO HAVE» CONJUGATED WITH NOUNS,

اسم ايله مالک اولمق فعلنک تصرفی *ism ile malik olmaq fulinin tasrifi*.

The verb «to have», as we have it in English, does not exist in Turkish properly speaking, but they make use of two adjectives *var*, present or existent, and *yok*, absent or non-existent, and these, like any other substantive or adjective, may be followed by the verbal particle of affirmation *dir*. This particle of affirmation is used in all the tenses of a verb except in the present, in which case it is optional, and can either be used or left out, thus:

evim var, or *evim var dir*, I have a house, i. e. a house of mine existent, *ateshim yok*, or *ateshim yok dir*, I have no fire i. e. fire of mine non existent.

Present حال زمانی *hāl zemāni*.

I have some bread, *ekmeyim var*.

thou hast some meat, *etin var*.

he has some wine, *sharābi var*.

we have some water, *suyumuz var*.

you have some fruit, *meyveniz var*.

they have sugar, *yemishiniz var*.

they have sugar, *shekerleri var*.

(NOTE. The word کاشکی *kyashke, keshke*, can be left out at will, we can say قهوه‌م اولیدی *qahvem olaydi*, etc.).

Imperative امر حاضر *emri-hāzir*.

have thou a horse, اترك اولسون *atin olsun*.

let him have a horse, اتي اولسون *ati olsun*.

let us have butter, تيره باغميز اولسون *tere yaghiniz olsun*.

have ye some bread, اكمهگيز اولسون *ekmeginiz olsun*.

let them have eggs, بمورضه‌لري اولسون *yumurtalari olsun*.

Gerund.

whilst I had a house, اوم وار ايکن *evim var iken*.

whilst there is a friend, بر دوست وار انکن *bir dost var iken*.

CHAPTER XLIV.

THE VERB «TO HAVE» CONJUGATED INTERROGATIVELY,

مانك اولمف فعلنك استفهام اوزره وجه تصريفي *mālik olmaq*
fūlinin istifhām uzere, uzre, vejhi tasrifi.

Present حال *hāl*.

have I a horse? اتم وارمي *atim varmi*.

hast thou a spoon? بر قاشغك وارمي *bir qashighin varmi*.

has he a plate? بر طبغی وارمي *bir tabaghi varmi*.

have we any glasses? قدح‌لریم وارمي *qadehlerimiz varmi*.

have you any towels? حوله‌لرین وارمي *hawlilariniz varmi*.

have they a table-cloth? صفره‌بی‌لری وارمي *sofra-bezileri varmi*.

Past ماضی *māzi*.

had I a knife? بر بچاغم وارمیدی *bir bichaghim varmi-idi*.

hadst thou a fork? چتاك وارمیدی *chatalin varmi-idi*.

had he a house? اوى وارمیدی *evi varmi-idi.*

had we any gold? التونمز وارمیدی *altinimiz varmi-idi.*

had you any silver? كوشكز وارمیدی *gyumushunuz varmi-idi.*

had they any money? اقچهلىرى وارمیدی *paralari aqchalari varmi-idi.*

Dubitative شيههلو *shubheli.*

had I money? پارم ايمش *param varmi imish.*

hadst thou money? پارك وارم ايمش *paran varmi imish.*

had he money? پارسى ايمش *parisi varmi imish.*

had we money? پارمىز ايمش *paramiz varmi imish.*

had you money? پارىز ايمش *paraniz varmi imish.*

had they money? پارلىرى ايمش *paralari varmi imish.*

Future مستقبل *mustaqhel.*

shall I have a sword? قلجم اوله جقمى *qilijim olajaqmi* or
اولورمى *olurmi.*

shalt thou have a rifle? ششخانك اوله جقمى *shesh-khānen*
(*shishānen*) *olajaqmi*, or اولورمى *olurmi.*

shall he have (gun) powder? باروتى اوله جقمى *baruti ola-*
jaqmi, or اولورمى *olurmi.*

shall we have any paper? كاغدمر اوله جقمى *kyaghidimiz olajaqmi.*

shall you have pens? قلملىرىڭىز اوله جقمى *qalemлерiniz olajaqmi.*

shall they have a house? اولرى اوله جقمى *evleri olajaqmi.*

This tense is used also for the conditional present interrogative.

Sometimes the Turks express the conditional, thus:

اولورمى بير اتيم *olurmi bir atim* 'ajaba, shall I have
a horse, I wonder, etc.

CHAPTER XLV.

THE VERB «TO HAVE» CONJUGATED NEGATIVELY.

Present.

I have not a coat, (دیر) ستیریم یوق *setrim yoq (dir)*.
 thou hast not a vest, ییگین یوق *yelegin yoq*.
 he has no socks, قیسا-چورابی یوق *qisa-chorabi yoq*.
 we have no shoes, قوندورالاریمیز یوق *qunduralarimiz yoq*.
 you have no hat, شاپقانیز یوق *shapqaniz yoq*.
 they have no shirts, گیوملکلیری یوق *gyumlekleri yoq*.

Past.

I had no linen, چاماشیریم یوغهیدی *chamashirim yoghidi*.
 thou hadst no handkerchief, مئندیلین یوغهیدی *mendilin yoghidi*.
 he had no silk, ییگی یوغهیدی *ipegi yoghidi*.
 we had no meat, اتمیز یوغهیدی *etimiz yoghidi*.
 you had no sugar, شکرینیز یوغهیدی *shckeriniz yoghidi*.
 they had no milk, سوتلری یوغهیدی *sutleri yoghidi*.

Dubitative.

I had no friend (I think), دوستم یوغهیمیش *dostum yoghimish*.
 thou hadst no salt (I think), توزون یوغهیمیش *tuzun yoghimish*.
 he had no watch (I think), ساعاتی یوغهیمیش *savati yoghimish*.
 we had no ox (I think), اویوزوموز یوغهیمیش *ukyuzumuz yoghimish*.
 they had no right (I think), حققلاری یوغهیمیش *haqqolari yoghimish*.

Future.

I shall not have a bed, بیر یاتاقھیم اولمیهجق *bir yataghim olmayajaq*.
 thou shalt not have velvet, قادیفهک اولمیهجق *qadifen olmayajaq*.
 he will have no money, پاراس اولمیهجق *parasi olmayajaq*.

we shall have no time, *vaqtimiz olmayajaq.* وقتیمز اولمیه جق
 you shall have no right, *haqqiniz olmayajaq.* حقکنز اولمیه جق
 they will have no time, *vaqitlari olmayajaq.* وقتلری اولمیه جق

Conditional.

Present.

if I have no time, *vaqtim yogh usa.* ایسه بوتق بوغسه
 if thou hast no right, *haqqin yogh usa* بوتق ایسه
 if he has no home, *evi yogh usa.* بوتق ایسه
 if we have no remedy, *charemia yogh usa.* چاره مز بوغیسه بوتق ایسه
 if you have no remedy, *chareniz yogh usa.* چاره کر بوغیسه بوتق ایسه
 if they have no arms, *silahlari yogh isa olnasa.* سلاحلری بوتق ایسه

Past.

if I had not a friend, *bir dostum yogh usaydi.* دوستم بوغسییدی بوتق ایسه ایدی
 if thou hadst not a friend, *bir dostun yogh usaydi.* دوستک بوغسییدی بوتق ایسه اندی
 if he had not a friend, *bir dostu yogh usaydi.* دوستی بوغسییدی بوتق ایسه ایدی
 if we had not a friend *bir dostumuz yogh usaydi.* دوستمز بوغسییدی بوتق ایسه ایدی
 if they had not ammunition, *jabkhaneleri yogh usaydi.* جپخانهلری بوغسییدی بوتق ایسه ایدی

Optative.

O! that I had not an enemy, *dushmanim olmayd* دشمنم اولمیدی
 O! that thou hadst not an enemy, *dushmeni olmaydi.* دشمنک اولمیدی

O! that he had not an enemy, *دشمنی اولمیدی dushmani olmaydi.*

or

O! that I had not an enemy, *کاشکی دوشمنم اولمیدی kyashke, keshke, dushmanim olmaydi.*

O! that thou hadst not an enemy, *کاشکی دوشمنک اولمیدی kyashke, keshke, dushmanin olmaydi.*

O! that he had not an enemy, *کاشکی دوشمنی اولمیدی kyashke, keshke, dushmani olmaydi.*

O! that we had not an enemy, *کاشکی دوشمنیمز اولمیدی kyashke, keshke, dushmanimiz olmaydi.*

O! that you had not an enemy, *کاشکی دوشمنکز اولمیدی kyashke, keshke, dushmaniniz olmaydi.*

O! that they had not an enemy, *کاشکی دوشمنلری اولمیدی kyashke, keshke, dushmanleri olmaydi.*

(NOTE, instead of *کاشکی kyashke*, the Turks sometimes use, *کَشْکَه keshke*, *والله الله الله allah vere*, God grant, or O! would that, thus: *والله الله الله الله ollah vere yaghmaydi*, would that it would not rain, God grant that it would not rain).

Imperative.

have thou no arms, *اولمسون silahin olmasun.*

let him have no arms, *اولمسون silahı olmasun.*

let us not have pistols, *اولمسون tabanjalarımız olmasun.*

have not you bayonets, *اولمسون sungyunuz olmasun.*

let them not have a standard, *اولمسون bayaraqları olmasun.*

CHAPTER XLVI.

THE VERB «TO HAVE» CONJUGATED BOTH NEGATIVELY
AND INTERROGATIVELY.

Present.

have I not a horse? *یوقمی بر اتم yoqmu bir atim.*
 hast thou not a mare? *یوقمی بر قصراغك yoqmu bir qisraghi*
 has he not a donkey? *یوقمی بر اشکی yoqmu bir eshegi.*
 have we not a horse? *یوقمی بر اتمز yoqmu bir atimiz.*
 have you not a sheep? *یوقمی بر قوبوكر yoqmu bir qoyunu*
 have they not a cow? *یوقمی بر انكلری yoqmu bir inekler*

Past.

had I not a goat? *یوقمیدی بر كچیم yoqmu-idi bir kechir*
 hadst thou not a fowl? *یوقمیدی بر طاوغك yoqmu-idi b*
tawughun.
 had he not an egg? *یوقمیدی بر بمورطهسی yoqmu-idi b*
yimurtasi.
 had we not a power? *یوقمیدی بر فوتمز yoqmu-idi bir qu*
vetimiz.
 had you not a zeal? *یوقمیدی بر غیرتكر yoqmu-idi bir gha*
retiniz.
 had they not a gratitude? *یوقمیدی بر شكران نعمتلى yoqm*
idi bir shukrani nimetleri.

Dubitative.

had I not had a friend, *یوغمیمش دوستم yoghmunush dostu*
 hadst thou not had a reward, *یوغمیمش بر مكافاتك yog*
mumush bir mukyafatin.
 had he not had some money, *یوغمیمش پارہسی yophmumu*
parasi.

had we not had fine weather, یوغمیش کوزل هوامز *yogh-mumush gyuzel hawamiz*.

had you not had a carpet, یوغمیش خالیکز *yogh-mumush khaliniz*.

had they not had a boat, یوغمیش بر قایقلری *yogh-mumush bir qayiq-lari*.

Future.

shall I not have permission? اذنم اولمیجقمی *iznim olmayajqmi*.

shalt thou not have a brother? بر قرداشک اولمیجقمی *bir qardashin olmayajqmi*.

shall he not have a sister? بر همشیرهسی اولمیجقمی *bir hemshiresi olmayajqmi*.

shall we not have arms? سلاحلریمز اولمیجقمی *silah-larimiz olmayajqmi*.

shall you not have appetite? اشتهاکز اولمیجقمی *ishtihaniz olmayajqmi*.

shall they not have courage? غیبتلری اولمیجقمی *ghayret-leri olmayajqmi*.

Past.

should I not have had powder? باروتم اولمازمیدی *barutum olmaz-mi-idi*.

shouldst thou not have had powder? باروتک اولمازمیدی *barutun olmaz-mi-idi*.

should he not have had powder? باروتی اولمازمیدی *barutu olmaz-mi-idi*.

should we not have had powder? باروتمز اولمازمیدی *barutumuz olmaz-mi-idi*.

Imperative.

art thou not to have a horse? آنک اولماسونمی *atin olmasunmi*.

is he not to have a horse? *اتى اولسونمى* *ati olmasunmi.*
 are we not to have a horse? *اتىمىز اولسونمى* *atimiz olmasunmi.*
 are you not to have a horse? *اتىنيز اولسونمى* *atiniz olmasunmi.*
 are they not to have a horse? *اتلارى اولسونمى* *atlari olmasunmi.*

Gerund.

was it while I had not a horse? *اتىم يوغىكەنمى* *atim yoghikenmi.*

CHAPTER XLVII.

THE VERB «TO BE» CONJUGATED WITH ADJECTIVES.

Present.

I am - glad, *ماحظوظىم* *mahzuzum.*
 thou art - lazy, *تنبلسىن* *tenbelsin.*
 he is - generous, *جومرد دير* *jumerd dir.*
 we are - happy, *مىشورورىز* *mesruriz.*
 you are - clever, *هنگرلوسىنيز* *hunerlusiniz.*
 they are - busy, *مىشغوللار* *meshghuller.*

The Turks also say in the same sense:

I am - pleased, *حظ ايدىم* *hazz iderim.*
 thou art - pleased, *حظ ايدىرسىن* *hazz idersin.*
 he is - pleased, *حظ ايدىر* *hazz ider.*
 we are - pleased, *حظ ايدىرىز* *hazz ideriz.*
 you are - pleased, *حظ ايدىرسىنيز* *hazz idersiniz.*
 they are - pleased, *حظ ايدىرلەر* *hazz iderler.*

Past.

I was - ready, *حاضر ايدىم* *hazir idim.*
 thou wast - ready, *حاضر ايدىك* *hazir idin.*
 he was - ready, *حاضر ايدى* *hazir idi.*

we were - ready, حاضر ایدک *hāzir idik.*

you were - ready, حاضر ایدیکیز *hazir idiniz.*

they were - ready, حاضر ایدیلر *hazir idiler.*

Future.

I will be - ready, حاضر اوله حغم *hazir olajaghim.*

thou wilt be - learned, عالم اوله جقسین *‘alim olajaqsın.*

he will be - rich, زنگین اوله جق *zengin olajaq.*

we will be - rich, زنگین اوله جغیز *zengin olajaghiz.*

you will be - brave, جسور اوله جعسکز *jesur olajaqsınız.*

they will be - tired, بورغون اوله جعلر *yorghun olajaqlar.*

Aorist.

I should be - busy, مشغول اولورم *meshghul olurum.*

thou shouldst be - vexed, ظارغون اولورسن *darghin olursun.*

he should be - useful, فائدیلو اولور *fa’ideli olur.*

we should be - absent, غایب اولوروز *ghayib oluruz.*

you should be - learned, عالم اولورسکز *‘alim olursunuz.*

they should be - ignorant, جاهل اولورلر *jahil olurlar.*

Past.

I should have been - absent, غائب اولوردم *gha’ib olurdum.*

thou shouldst have been - absent, غائب اولوردک *gha’ib olurdun.*

he should have been - absent, غائب اولوردی *gha’ib olurdu.*

we should have been - absent, غائب اولوردی *gha’ib olurdug.*

you should have been - absent, غائب اولوردیکیز *gha’ib olurdunuz.*

they should have been - absent, غائب اولوردیلر *gha’ib olurdular.*

Imperative.

be thou - honest, اهل عرض اول *ehl-i-irz ol.*

let him be - polite, ادبلی اولسون *edebli olsun.*

let us be - just, طوغرو اوللم *doghru olalım.*

be you - reasonable, عاقل اولکز *‘aql olunuz.*

let them be - faithful, true, اولسونلر *sadiq olsunlar.*

Optative,

that I may be - strong, قوتلو اولدیم *quvvetli olayım*.
 that thou mayst be - innocent, قباحتمسز اولمسن *qabāhatsiz olasin*.
 that he, she, may be - mute, اولسون - اوله *dilsiz ola-olsun*.
 that we may be - young, گنج اولالم *genj olalım*.
 that you may be - blind, کور اولهسکز *kyur olasiniz*.
 that they may be - courageons, جسور اولهآر *jesur olalar*.

Past.

if I had been - wise, عاقل اولمشم اولیدم *aqıl olmush olaydım*.
 if thou hadst been - famous, مشهور اولمشد اولیدک *meshur olmush olaydın*, etc.

CHAPTER XLVIII.

THE VERB «TO BE» CONJUGATED BOTH NEGATIVELY AND INTERROGATIVELY WITH ADJECTIVES.

I am not deaf, صاغر دکلم *saghir diyilim*.
 art thou diligent? چالشقان میسن *chalishqan misin*.
 is not your house large? اوکز بیوک دکلمی *eviniz büyük diyilmi*.
 we are not happy, کیفلو دکلز *keyfli diyiliz*.
 are you not grieved? مکدر دکلمیسکز *mukedder diyilmisiniz*.
 they are not rich, زنگین دکلدزآر *zengin diyildirler*.
 was I not excused? معذور دکلمبدم *mazur diyilmidim*.
 wast thou not a spendthrift? مسرف دکلمیدک *musrif diyilmidin*.
 was he not defective, سفت دکلمیدی *saqat diyilmidi*.
 we were not ready, حاضر دکل ایدک *hazir diyil idik*.
 were you not studious? چالشقان دکل می ایدیکز *chalishqan diyil mi idiniz*.

were they not discreet? *haddini bilnlerden dklmldiler*
bilenlerden diyilmi idiler.

was I not content? *khoshnud olmadummi.*
 wast thou not ashamed? *mahjub olmadinmi.*
 he was not ill, *khasta olmadi.*

we were not wet, *islanmadiq.*

you were not astonished, *tavajjub ittiniz.*
 were they not worthy, deserving? *mustahiqq diyilermi idi.*

shall I not be excused? *ma'zur olmayajaqmi im.*

shalt thou not be rich? *zengin olmayajaqmisin.*

shall not the house be full? *ev dolu olmayajaqmi.*

we shall not be so learned, *olqadar alim olmayajaghiz.*

shall you not be content? *rāzi olmayajaqmisiniz.*

shall not their friends come? *dostlari gelmeyejeklermi.*

shall I not be contented? *razi olmazmi-im.*
 wilt thou not be angry? *darghin olmazmisin.*

will not the tent be wide? *chadir genish olmazmi.*

should we be strong? *quvvetli olurmiiz.*

would you have been quick? *chabik olurmi idiniz.*

would they not have been too heavy? *pek aghir olmazlarmi-idi.*

CHAPTER XLIX.

ELEMENTARY PHRASES AND EASY DIALOGUES.

§ 1. Salutation سلام *selām*.

Good morning Sir, صباحك خير اوله اقدم صباحينك khayr ola efendim.
morning your good may it be Sir.

صبح شريفلك خير اوله اقدم صباح شريفلىنك khayr ola efendim.
morning noble your good may it be Sir.

صبح دولتك خير اوله - اولسون اقدم صباح دولتىنك khayr ola - olsun efendim.
morning honour your good may, let, it be Sir.

How are you to-day? بو گون مزاجك نصلدر bu gyun mizājınız nasıldır.

this day your health how is (it).

How do you do? مزاج شريفك نصلدر mizāji sherifiniz nasl dir.
the health noble your how is.

How are you? (in a friendly way) نصل سن nasl sin.

how art (thou)?

I hope you are well, مزاجك ايدير ان شا الله مزاجىنك iyidir.
if wills (it) God health your good is.

- We have well met! خوش بولدق *khosh bulduq.*
 agreeable we found.
- Are you quite well? ایو خوشیمسن *iyi khoshmisin.*
 good well are you.
- How is your friend? دوستکر نصل در *dostunuz nasl dir.*
 friend your how is.
- He is ill, در خسته *khasta dir.*
 ill is.
- How is your father? پدرکر نصل در *pederiniz nasl dir.*
 father your how is.
- He is not well, در او دکل در *iyi diyil dir.*
 well not is.
- How is your mother? والده کر نصل در *valideniz nasl dir.*
 mother your how is.
- May God preserve her, الله صافلسون *allah saqlasun.*
 God preserve her.

§ 2. Age یاش *yash*, and Hour ساعت *sāat*.

How old are you? قان یاشندن سنک *qan yaşından senin*

- I am twenty years old, يم ياشنده يم *yirmi yashinda im.*
 twenty age in I am.
- You are still young, سزدها کنجسکن *siz daha genjsiniz.*
 you yet young are you.
- How old is your father? پدرک فاج ياشنده *pederiniz qach yashinda dir.*
 father your how much age in is.
- He is very old, چوق ياشلو *choq yeshli dir.*
 very much aged is.
- What o'clock is it? فاج در ساعت *qach dir.*
 hour how much in is.
- What is the exact time? کچک ساعت فاج در *gerchek saat qachda dir.*
 true, real hour how much in is.
- It is one o'clock, در ساعت *sāat bir dir.*
 hour one in is.
- It is past one o'clock, در زیاده ساعت *saat birden ziyade dir.*
 hour one from more is.
- It is half past one, در بیچوق تر ساعت *saat bir buchuq dir.*
 hour one half is.
- It is a quarter to three, وار چیرک اوچه ساعت *saat ucha cheyrek var.*
 hour three to quarter there is.

- It is a quarter past four, حارسك كچدى ساعت سۋات دۇردۇ چەرەك گەچدى.
hour the four quarter past.
- It is ten minutes past five, كەچىر كەچىر سۋات بەشى ۈن داقيقا گەچىيور.
hour 5 10 minutes past.
- It is not yet noon, ۈنلە داھا ۈنلە daha olmadi.
noon yet has not become.
- It is midday, ۈنلە ۈنلە uyle dir.
midday is.
- It is nearly three o'clock, ۈنلە نەلاشيور ۈنلە yaqlashiyor.
three to approaches.
- It is midnight, كەچىر نارسىبدر گەچىر geyja yarisidir.
night half its is.
- The clock is going to strike, حالار سۋات شىندى, shindi, chalar.
hour now will strike.
- The clock is striking, حاسىر سۋات شىنلە ishte saat chaliyor.
behold hour striking.
- It is very late, ۈنلە پەك پەك پەك pelt geç, geç dir.
very late is.
- It is not late. كە ۈنلە كە. كە nei noch dısil

Good night, کیناچک خیر اوله *geyjeniz khayr ola.*
 night your good may it be.

§ 3. The weather.

We shall have a fine day کونمز گوزل اوله جف *gyunumuz gyuzel olajaq.*
 day our fine will be.

Fine weather, گوزل هوا *gyuzel hawa.*
 fine weather.

Bad weather, فنا هوا *fena hawa.*
 bad weather.

Rough weather, سرت هوا *sert hawa.*
 strong, severe weather.

Hazy weather, پوشلو هوا *pushlu hawa.*
 thick weather.

Foggy weather, دومانلو هوا *dumanli hawa.*
 foggy weather.

An overcast sky, بلوتلو گوك *bulutlu gyuk.*
 overcast sky.

It is cloudy, در بلوتلو *bulutlu dir.*
 cloudy is.

The weather is mild, هوا ملایم *hawa mulayim*.

weather mild.

It is very warm, هوا پاك سيب چالدار *hawa pek siyaqdir*.

weather very warm is.

There will be a storm, فېرتونه اوناقف *firtina olaiaq*.

storm will be.

It is raining weather, هوا در بغورلو بير هوا *hawa dir*.

rainy a weather it is.

It rains, بغور ياغور *yagmur yaghiyor*.

rain it is raining.

It thunders, كوك گيرليور *gyuk gyurliyor*.

sky is thundering.

It lightens, شمشك چاغور *shimshek chaqiyor*.

the lightning is flashing.

The wind has changed, وزگار دكشدى *ruzgyar deyishdi*.

the wind is changed.

The weather is clearing, هوا اچيلمغه باشلادی *hawa achilmagha bashladi*.

weather to clear has begun.

The wind is very high, دزگار پک یوکسکەلدى, *ruegar pek yukseklidi.*
the wind much has risen.

It blows from the N. E., پوزراڭ اسېږ, *poyraz esiyo.*
N. E. is blowing.

It is very dusty, تۆز پک جوڭدۇر, *toz pek choqdur.*
dust very much is.

It is cold, هوا صوغۇدۇر, *hawa soghurdur.*
weather cold is.

It snows, قار ياغىڭىز, *qar yaqhiyor.*
snow is raining.

It freezes, دۈڭىڭىز, *doniyor.*
it is freezing.

The water is frozen, سۇ دۈڭىڭىز, *su dondu.*
water is frozen.

It hails, دۈڭىز ياغىڭىز, *dolu yaqhiyor.*
hail is raining.

It thaws, يۈزىڭىز ئېرىگەن, *buzlar eriyo.*
ice is melting.

It is very muddy, چوقۇر چامۇ, *chamur pek choqdur.*
the mud very much is.

It is dark, *qaranlıqdır.*
darkness is.

It is difficult walking, *soqaqda yurumesi gıyuchdur.*
street in one's walking difficult is.

The dew falls, *chiğ, chi yağıyor.*
the dew is raining.

It is moonlight, *ayın aydınliğıdır.*
of the moon light its is.

§ 4. Questions *sual su'âl.*

Can I enquire? *sora bilirmi-im.*
ask do I know.

Will you permit me? *bana rukhsat verirmisiniz.*
me to permission will you give.

With your permission, *rukhsatiniz ile.*
permission your with.

Have the goodness, *kerem eyle.*
goodness do.

- I have a request to make to you, وار سزہ بر رجام *siza bir rijam* var.
to you a my request there is.
- I have a favour to beg of you, وار سزہ بر عنايتم *siza bir inayetim* var.
to you a my assistance or favour there is.
- Will you do it for my sake? ايدرميسکز خاطر *khātīrin ichin idermisiniz.*
my sake for will you do.
- You will have rendered ايتمش اولوسکز *bana bir buyuk hizmet itnish olursiniz.*
me a great service, to me a great service have done you will be.
- May God reward you, وئرسون الله مكافئتكى *allah mukayafatini versin.*
God thy reward may give.
- I am giving you much trouble, وئيررم سزہ چوق *siza choq zahmet veriyorum.*
to you much trouble giving I am.
- You take too much trouble, ايديرمسکز حوق *choq zahmet idiyorsiniz.*
too much trouble you are doing.
- I am much indebted to you, وار سزہ پك بوجلانس *siza pek borjlu-im.*
to you much indebted I am.
- You have done me a great service, بكا بر بيوك *bana bir buyuk hizmet yaptiniz.*
to me a great service did you.
- I thank you, ايدرم تشكر *teshekkyyur iderim.*
thank I do.

§ 5. News *havadis*.

What is the news? *ne havadis var.*
what news there is.

* Is there news to-day? *bu gun khabar varmi.*
this day news is there.

I have not heard any, *hic bir sey ishitmedim.*
any one thing I have not heard.

Do they still speak of war? *hala جنگ صحبتی varmı.*
still war talk is there.

Have you heard of war? *yenı bir sey varmı, yeniden ne var.*
anything fresh? new a thing is there, from new what is there.

What do they say in the town? *şehırde ne suveylıyorlar.*
in town in what are they saying.

There is good news, *pek güzel khabar var.*
very good news there is.

The news needs confirmation, *bu khabarı tasdiq etmek lâzım.*
this the news to confirm is

- Have you heard from your brother? خبر الدکومی برادر کنون *biraderinizden khaber aldinizmi.*
from your brother news have you received.
- I have not heard for $\frac{1}{2}$ year *aydanberi khaberini almadim.*
from two months since his news I have not received.
- It is three weeks since he wrote, $\frac{1}{2}$ week *uch hafta dir yazmadi.*
three weeks is has not written.
- I expect a letter from $\frac{1}{2}$ hour *sā'atden sa'ata bir mektubina muntazirim.*
from hour to hour a his letter am looking for.
- Have you read the papers? غزتلاری اوڭدکومی *ghazetaları oqudunuzmi.*
the newspapers have you read.
- What do they say? نه سويليڭلر *ne suveyliyorlar.*
what do they say.
- Where are you going? نرهه کيدیورسکتر *nereye gidiyorsiniz.*
to where are you going.
- Do you wish to come with me? نرهه تشریف ایدنورسکتر *nereye teshrif idiyorsiniz.*
to where conferring honor are you making.
- I will gladly, استرم *isterim.* پک ایو *pek iyi.*
I wish. very good.

Whither will you go, نۆپىيە استىرسىز كىتىمكە *nereye istersiniz gitmeye.*
to where do you wish to go.

Is Mr.... at home? فلاڭ افندى *flân efendi evündemi.*
so and so Mr. in his house.

He is not at home, اوده دكل *evde deyil.*
in the house (he) is not.

Can you tell me where he is? سويليىيە بيلورميسىز نەردە *nerede oldughunu bize*
suweyleye bilarmisiniz. where his being to us
saying do you know (can you say).

I think he is gone to see his sister, ايدرم ايفاس كىتيدى *hemshiresini*
his sister
gyurmege gitdi qiyas ilderim.

to see gone supposition I make.

Come near, I have something to say to you, وار شى *yanima gel size bazı suweyleyejim* *shey var.* يانمە كل سىزە بعضى
to my side come some I will have to say a thing there is.

Are you speaking to me? *banami suweyliyorsiniz.*

to me are you speaking.

Do you understand what I say? *dediyimi annayormisiniz.*

my saying do you understand.

Why do you not answer me? *bana nichin jewab vermiyorsiniz.*

to me why answer do you not give.

Do you not speak Turkish? *turkja suweylenezmisiniz.*

the Turkish language do you not speak.

A little sir, *pek az efendim, bir az tekellum iderim.*

very little sir, a little speech I do.

I understand a little, but I cannot speak, *az anliyorum lakin suweyleyemeyorum.*

a little I understand

annayorum lakin suweyleyemeyorum.

but cannot speak.

§ 6. Visit, زیارت ziyāret.

There is a knock at the door, قاپو چالینیور *qapı chalınıyor*.

Go and see who it is, گیت باق کیمدیر *git baq kimdir*.

Go and open the door, گیت قاپینی اچ *git qapiyi ach*.
 هاید قاپینی اچک *haydi qapiyi achik*

It is Mr. so and so, فلان افندیور *flan efendidir*.

I am very glad to see you, شریفکزدن چوق خوشلندیم *teshrifnizden choq khoshlandim*.

I have not seen you for a long time, توقدن برو سزی کورمدیم *choqdan beri sizi gyurmedim*.

Pray be seated,

Take a seat,

Do, pray sit down,

{ رجا ایدرم اوتورک *rijā ederim oturun*.

{ عنایت ایدک اوتورک *ināyet edin oturun*

Give a chair to Mr., صاندالیبه کتورک *efendiya bi sandaliyye gyeturun*.

It is a real pleasure to see you, مزی کوردیکمدن پک خوشلندیم *sizi gyurdiyimden pek khoshlandim*.

I hope you are well, ان شا الله مزاجکز ایودر *in shā allā mizājınız iyidir*.

Excellent; the pleasure I have in seeing you does me good
 بلا اعک افندیم سزی کورمک بندکزه موجب
 مخطوظیتندر *pek aslū efendim sizi gyurmek bendenize mujibi mahzuziyyetdir*.

Contentment is a great physician, خشنودیت طبیب عظیمدر *khoshnudiyet tabibi azimdir*.

Will you stay and dine with us, بزم ایله طعام ایدرمیسکز *bizimle ta'am idermisiniz*,
 طعامی برابر ایدلم *ta'ami beraber idelim*.

. بزم ایله طعامه قالرمیسکز *bizimle ta'ama qalirmisiniz*.

I am busy, I cannot stay, I must go, ایشم وار کیده جکم کیده یم *ishim var gideyeyim, gideyim.*

You are in great haste, پکءاجله ایدیرسکز *pek'ajele idiyorsunuz.*

Surely you can stay { بر از دها اوتورک *bir az daha oturun.*
a little longer, { بر از دها اکلنک *bir az daha eylenin.*

I will stay longer another time, اوتوروم باشقه وقت حوق *bashqa vaqit choq otururum.*

I hope to see you again, کوررم ان شا الله سری یفینده *in shā allah sizi yaqinda gyururum.*

§ 7. Breakfast, قهوه‌التی *qahwalti.*

Have you breakfasted? ایندکزمی قهوه‌التی *qahve alti, qahwalti etdinizmi.*

Not yet, دها اتمدم خیر *khayr daha etmedim*

You will breakfast with us, ایده جکسکز بزمله قهوه‌التی *bi-zimle qahve alti, qahwalti edejeksiniz.*

Breakfast is ready, حاضر قهوه‌انمی *qahve alti, qahwalti hāzir.*

What will you take? نه بمل اسنرسکز *ne yemek istersiniz.*

Do you not take something with the coffee? قهوه ايله بشقه *qahve ile bashqa bir shey yeyejekmisiniz.*

I will take a little meat, بر پارچه ات ییه جکم *bir parcha et yeyejeyim*

May I offer you a slice of veal? سزه بر پارچه دانا اتمی *size bir parcha dana eti vereyimmi.*

You have eaten nothing, بر شی یمدبکز *bir shey yemediniz.*

Take a little more, بر پارچه دخی بیک *bir parcha daha yeyin.*

Thank you, I have had plenty, بو قدر ای والله بنده کزه *ey vallah bendenize bu qadar elverir.*

Will you take a roll? فرانجیله استر میسکز *franjila istermisiniz.*

Is the coffee strong enough? قهوه قوتلی می *qahve quvvelli mi.*

It is excellent, *پك اعلا pek aṭlā.*

Is it sweet enough? *شكرى يتشورمى shekeri yetishirmi.*

Make yourself at home, *ندى خانه كرده اولديغىز كى طوتك kendi khamenizde oldughunuz gibi tutun.*

§ 8. Before Dinner, *اول طعامدن tasamdan evvel.*

What time do we dine to-day? *كون ساعت قاچده طعام bu gyun saat qachda tasam edejeyi.*

We are to dine at four o'clock, *ساعت درتده طعام ايده جدىز saat deurtde, tasam edejeyiz.*

Shall we have any body to dine to-day? *و كون كمسه موز bn gyun kimsemiz varmi tasamdi*

Yes. I expect some one, *اوت برىنى بكمليورم evet birin bekleyorum.*

What did you order for dinner? *يىمك نه اصرلدكز yeme ne ismarladiniz.*

Have you ordered the dinner? *تا:ان ضعامى اصرلدكز مى ismarladinizmi.*

What have we for dinner? *نمز وار yemekde nemiz va*
Did you send for any fish? *لق صانون المغه آدم كوندركز مى baliq satin almagha adam gyunderdinizmi.*

No fish came to-day, *بو كون هيج بالق دلمدى bu gyu luch baliq gelmedi.*

§ 9. Dinner, *اخشام يىمكى akhsham, aqsham, yemeyi.*

The dinner is ready, *سفرة حاضردير sofra hazirdir.*

Come to dinner, *بيورك يىمكه buyurun yemeye.*

Will you take some soup? *بر از جوربه استرمىسكرز chorba istermisiniz.*

No thank you, I will trouble you for some beef, *بر افندم بر khayr efendim bir siyhir eti ināyet edin.*

What part do you prefer? طرفنى سورسكىز *hanghi ta-
rafini seversiniz.*

Will you have it well done, or under-done? پك پشمشنى *pek pishmishini*
mi istersiniz az pishmishini mi.

Well done, if you please, پشمش طرفندن عنايت ايدك *pish-
mish tarfindan inayet idin.*

Have I given you what you like? سزك مزاجكزه كوره وپردمى *sizin mizajiniza gyure verdimmi.*

Is this such as you like? بو پارچه مزاجكزه مى در *bu
parcha mizajinizja mi dir.*

It is excellent, پك اعلا در *pek ala dir.*

I will have some of this leg (of mutton), شو بوئدن بر از برم *shu butdan bir az yerim.*

Shall I send you some of this pudding? شمدى سزه شو بوئدن *shimdi, shindi, size beurek-
den bir az gyundereyimmi.*

Thank you very much, پك تشكر ايدرم *pek teshekkur ederim.*

§ 10. At table, سفرده ايكن *sofrada iken.*

What shall I help you to? نه وېرېم سزه *ne vereyim size.*

What will you have? نه استرسكىز *ne istersiniz.*

Will you take a little of this roast beef? قزارتمېيى سورميسكىز *qizartmayi severmisiniz.*

I am not very fond of fat, پك ياغلودن حظ ايتمم خوشلنم *pek yaghlidan hazz etmem, khoslanmam.*

Give me some of the lean, if you please, قب اندن وېرك *qaba etden verin rijā ederim.*

Did you like the roast beef? كبابى بكنديكزىمى *kebābi be-
yendinizmi.*

It is excellent, پك اعلا *pek ala.*

It is delicious, پك لذيز *pek leziz.*

I am very glad you like it, مزاجكزجه اولديغندن حظ ايتدم *mizajinizja oldughundan hazz etdim.*

Here are broccoli { اشته قره لکنه *ishte gara lahana.*
and spinach, { اشته اسپناک *ishte ispanak.*

Take some of this grilled fowl, it is very good, بو طاوق *bu tawuq qawur-*
masindan yeyiniz, pek iyi dir.

Will you have peas or cauliflower? نكود می استرسکز قرنابت می *nohud mu istersiniz qarnabit mi.*

The pigeons are not well done, کورجینلر بر ابو پشممش *gyugerjinler bir iyi pishmemish.*

Do you eat salad? یرمیسکز صلاته *salata yermisiniz.*

Will you have fresh or stale bread? تازه اکمک می استرسکز *taze ekmek mi istersiniz bayat mi.*

You don't eat anything, Sir, هیچ بر شی یمیرسکز افندم *hich bir shey yemeyorsunuz, efendim.*

I have had خیلیجه یدم *khaylija yedim.*

enough, چوق یدم *choq yedin.*
ال ویر ارتق *el verir artiq.*

Bring in the fruit, یمش کتورک *yemish getirin.*

Here is very good fruit, پک کوزلی - پک اعلاسی *ishte yemishin pek gyuzeli-pek a'lası.*

I prefer peaches and plums to any other, هپسندن زیاده *hepsinden ziyade sheftali*
ile erik severim.

A ripe apricot is an excellent fruit also, قیسینک پک اولمشی *qaysinin pek olmushu alu yemish-dir.*

Many people prefer figs, but I find them tasteless, چوق ادم *choq*
adam injir terjih eder bana gyure tatsiz
gelir.

No doubt you like grapes, please take this bunch, شُبْهَسِز
 shubhesiz اوزومی سورسکز الکزندق شو صالقمی
 uzumu seversiniz alinizdiq shu salqimi.

I will take a little cheese, بَر اَز پَیْزْدَن اَلْوَرْم
 bir az peynir-
 den alirim.

Will you take a glass of wine? بَر قَدْح شَرَاب اِیْچَه جَکْمِیْسَکَز
 bir qadeh sharāb, sharap, ichejekmisiniz.

I am much obliged, I do not drink (wine), پَک مَمْنُونَم لَکِن
 pek memnunum lakin ichmem.

§ 11. Tea, چای اِیْچَمک اَوَزْرَه chay ichmek uzre, uzere.

Have you carried in the tea things? چای لَوَازِمَاتِنِی کَتَوْرْدَکْمِی
 chay lewazimatini geterdinmi.

Every thing is on the table, هِپِیْسِی سَفْرَه اَوَزْرِنْدَه
 hepsi
 sofra uzerindedir.

Is the water boiling? سُو قَیْنَايُورْمِی su qaynayormu.

Tea is quite ready, چای حَاضِر chay hazır.

They are waiting for you, سَزی بَکْلِیُورْلَر sizi bekliyorler.

I am coming, کَلیُورَم geliyorum.

I follow you, اَرَقَه کَزْدَن کَلیُورَم arqanizdan geliyorum.

We have not cups enough, چای فَلَاجَانِی اِدَارَه اِیْتِمِیُور
 chay
 filjani idure etmeyor.

We want two more cups, بَیْزَه اِیْکِی فَلَاجَان دَها کَتَوْر
 bize iki
 filjan daha getir.

Bring another spoon and a saucer, بَر قَاشَق اِیْلَه بَر زَرْف
 bir qashiq ile bir zarf daha getir.

You have not brought the sugar-tongs, شَکَر مَاشَه سِنِی کَتَوْرْمَدَکَز
 sheker mashasini getirmediniz.

Put water in the tea-pot, چای اَبْرِیْغَنَه سُو قُیُیْکَز
 chay ibri-
 ghina su qoyunuz.

Do you take sugar? شَکَر اِستَرمِیْسَکَز sheker istermisiniz.

Do you take cream? قَایْمَق اِستَرمِیْسَکَز qaymaq istermisiniz.

Do you take milk? سوت سوداسترمیسکر *sut, sud istermisiniz.*

I will thank you for a little more milk, بکا بر از دها سوت *bana bir az daha sut, sud,*

ināyet etseniz.

The tea is very strong, چای پک قوتلو *chay pek quvvetli.*

I can give you more, سزه دها ویره بلورم *size daha vere bilirim.*

What will you take? دها نه استرسکر *daha ne istersiniz.*

Here are cakes of different sorts, اشته قوراییمنک بر فاح *ishte qurabiycnin bir qach nevi.*

ishte qurabiycnin bir qach nevi.

Take some of this also, بوندنده بیورک *bundanda buyurun.*

Take some of this cake, it is very good, بو بورکدن بر از *bu beurekden bir az alin pek*

iyi dir.

Have you sugar enough in your tea? چایکک شکر یینشورمی *chayinizin shekeri yetishirmi.*

chayinizin shekeri yetishirmi.

It is excellent پک اعلک در *pek ulu dir.*

Will you take another cup? دها استرمیسکر *bir filjan daha istermisiniz.*

filjan daha istermisiniz.

No thank you, افو ایدرسکر استنم *afv edersiniz istemem.*

Take away, فالدر ارتف شونی *qaldir artiq shunu.*

§ 12. Correspondence, مکاتبه *mukyatebe.*

I must write by to-day's mail, بو کونکی پوسته ابله مکتوب *bu gyunku posta ile*

mehtub gyundermekliyin ijab eder.

Have you any writing paper? مکتوبلک کاغذک وارمی *mek-*

tubluk kyaghidiniz varmi.

Will you give me a sheet of paper? بنده کزه بر بیپراق کاغذ *bendenize bir yapray kyaghid*

ināyet ediniz.

Give me some ink and a pen, بر از مرکبله بر فلم عنایت *bir az murekkeble bir qalem ināyet buyurun.*

bir az murekkeble bir qalem ināyet buyurun.

There are no pens, قلم یوقدر *qalem yoqdur.* *

There are some in the pen case, وار در دویڭك ایچینده *di-vidin ichinde var dir.*

Go to my study, you will find all you want, یازو اوطهده *yazi odama girin*
کیرک استندکلریکی بولورسکز *istediklerinizi bulursunuz.*

Lend me your knife, بیلورمیسکز بر از ویره *qalem-trashinizi bir az vere bilirmisiniz.*

What for? { نیچون *ne ichin, nichin.*
یاپیغه *ne yapmagha.*

I want it to cut a pen, یونتئمق ایچون *qalemi yont-maq ichin.*

I have a knife but it does not cut well, اما *amma* قلمتراشم وار *kesmez.*
bir qalemtrāshim var

It should be sharpened, بیلنمسی لازم کلدی *bilenmesi lazim geldi.*

Shall I mend your pen for you? استرمیسکز *qaleminizi yontayim istermisiniz.*

Do you like it hard or soft? استرمیسکز *gevshekmi sertmi istermisiniz.*

I do not like it too hard, پک سرت استمم *pek sert istemem.*

Here it is, try it, باقکز اشته الک *ishte alin baginiz.*

It is too fine, پک انچه در *pek inje dir.*

Try it again, بر دها باقکز *bir daha baginiz.*

It is very good, پک اعلا در *pek ayla dir.*

I am very much obliged to you, پک ممنون اولدم *pek memnun oldum.*

You will find it easier to write in your style with a reed cut in the Turkish way, سزک عادتکزه کوره *sizin 'adetinize geure qamish qalem ile yaz-maqlıqda daha suhulet var dir.*

Yes, had it been to write Turkish with, a Turkish pen

* would have been best, but as it is for English, is a quill better, اوت تركجه يازمق اوليدى
ترك قلمى اولادر اما انگلجه اولدغي ايچون
turk qalemi evladir amma inglizje oldughu ichun
tuy qalemi daha iyidir.

For my part I generally use quills to write both languages
بن ايسه ايکيسنده توي قلميله بازارم
ise ikisindedede tuy qalemi ile yazarim.

If you wish your letter to go to-day, you have no time
to lose, اكر مکتوبکزی بو کونکی پوسته ايله
کوندرمک استرسکز عجله ایتمک لازمدر
mektubinizi bu gyunku posta ile gyundermek
isterseniz ajele etmek lazimdir.

It is already very late, گه بيله فالدی
gech bile qaldi.

I shall not be long, پک اوزاتم
pek uzatmam.

While I am finishing this, be so kind as to fold the others,
کرم ايله بن شو مکتوبی بتورنجهیه قدر سز
kerem cyle ben shu mektubu
bitirinje ye qadar siz obirlerini baghlayin.

Have you signed it? امضا ایتدکرمی
imzâ etdinizmi.

I think I have, but I do not know if I put the date,
طن ایدرم امضاسی قویدم اما تاریخنی قویدم
zann ederim imzâsini qoydum
amma târihini qoydummi qoymadimmi bilmem.

What day of the month is it? ایک فاجیدر
bu gyun
ayin qachidir.

To-day is the 7th, ایک یدیسیدر
bu gyun ayin yedisidir.

Where is my man? خدمتکارم نره
hizmetkyârim nerede.

Here he comes, اشته کلیور
ishte geliyor.

Take these letters to the post at once, تیز بو مکتوبلری
tez bu mektublari postaya getur.

§ 13. The Hour, ساعت *sā'at*.

Do you know what o'clock it is? ساعت قاجده در بیلیرمیسکنز *sā'at qachda dir bilirmisiniz*.

I don't know exactly, حقیقتنی بیللم *haqiqatini bilmem*

Look at your watch, ساعتکزه باقکنز *sā'atiniza baqiniz*.

I forgot to wind it, قورمغه اونتم *qurmagha unutdum*.

It does not go, ایشلمیور *ishlemeyor*.

What o'clock is it by yours? ساعت قاجه کلمشدر سزکنکی *sā'at qacha gelmişdir sizinki nasildir*.

Does yours go well? سزکنکی ایو ایشلیورمی *sizinki ūyi ishleyormi*.

Mine does not go well, ایو ایشلمیور *benimki ūyi ishlemeyor*.

It is too fast, ایلرو کیدیور *ileri gidiyor*.

It is too slow, کیرو قالیور *geri qalıyor*.

It loses a quarter of an hour every day, کونده بر چیرک *gyunde bir char-yek (cheyrek) geri qalıyor*.

The main-spring is broken, زنبیرکی قیلدی *zemberegi qirildi*.

I like the figures on the face of the watch to be in Turkish, رقملرینی ترکجه استرم *raqamlarini turkje isterim*.

I am going to send it to the watchmaker, ساعتجییه *sā'atjiya geunderejeyim*.

You will do well, ایو ایدرسکنز *ūyi edersiniz*.

· § 14. Morning, صباح *sabah vwaqti, waqti*.

You are up already! وای قالدکنمی *vwaŷ, wāy qalqđinizmi*.

I generally rise early, اکتری ارکن قالم *ekseri erken qalqarim*.

How have you slept? بو کیجه نصل اویدکنز *bu geyje nasl uyudunuz*.

I slept without waking, اوياقماسزین اویدوم *hich uyumaqsizin uyudum.*

I went to bed } کیردم *pek gech yatagha girdim.*
very late, } کیک یاتدم *pek gech yatdim.*

I could not sleep, خیر اویوبه مدم *khayr uyuyamadim.*

I never closed my eyes all night, کوزیمی قیامدم
butun geyje gyuzumu qapamadim.

§ 15. A Walk, سیر *seyr.*

See what fine weather it is! اشتہ بر کوزک هوا *ishte bir gyuzel hawa.*

Very fine, پک اعلا *pek ala.*

Shall we go for a walk? شویله بر دولاشمغه استعداد کز وارمی
shunle bir dolashmagha istiadadiniz varmi.

Willingly, باش اوستنه *bash ustune.*

Which way shall you go? نه طرفه کیده جکسکز
gidejeksiniz.

Let us go out of the town, دبشاری چقلم *shehirden dishari chiqalim.*

Let us go and enjoy the country air, عکرانک ذوقی کورلم
sahranin zevqini geurelim.

I am afraid the roads may be very dusty, نورقارمکه یوللر پک
qorqarimki yollar pek tozlu olmasun

The rain has laid the dust, یغمر تیزی باصدردی
tozu basdirdi.

If we enter this wood we shall be sheltered from the sun
شوقرویه کیررسک کونشدن محافظه اولنورز
quruya girersek gyuneshten muhafaza olunuruz

Will you cross this field? it is the nearest way home, و
ارلانک اورتاسندن کچمک استرمیسکز اوک پک
bu tarlanin ortasindan gechmei
istermisiniz evin pek gisa yoludur.

You walk too fast, پەك سۈرەتلى يۈرۈپسەن *pek sür'atli yuruyorsiniz.*

I cannot keep up with you, سىزىڭ بىلەن بىرلىك كېتەلمەيمەن *sizin ile beraber gidemeyorum.*

Do not go so fast, it is not late, دەپمۇ كېچىك ئەمەس *daha geç deyil 'ajele etme.*

We shall return in time, ئەرگەن ئۆتۈپ كېلىمەن *erken 'avdet etmish oluruz.*

Are you not tired? يۈرگۈن دېگەن *yorghun diyilmisiniz.*

No, the walk has done me good, خەير. كۆمەك بەردار *khayr, gezmek bana yaradı.*

§ 16. Evening, ئاقشام *aqsham vwaqti, waqti.*

It begins to get late, ئورتاق قارار-
ماغا باشلايدۇ *ortaliq qarar-
magha bashladi.*

Has Mr. so and so not come home yet? *filān kimesne daha 'avdet etmedimi.*

I think he will not be late, زەنن ئېسىم كېچى قالماس *zann ederim geç qalmaz.*

I hear a knock, قاپى چالغۇچ *qapi chalingor ishi-
diyorum.*

Probably it is he, غەلبە ئۇ *ghaliba o dur.*

Just so, it is he, ئۇ ئۆزى *ta kendisi.*

Good evening, ئاقشام شەرىفىر *aqsham sherifler
khayr olsun.*

I hope I have not kept you waiting, ئۇ شۇ ئاللاھ سىزى بىلەن *in shā allāh sizi bekletmedim.*

Not at all, it is only ten o'clock, خەير دەپمۇ سۈرەت ئەمەس *khayr daha 'sū'at onda.*

I have arrived just in time, تامام ۋاقىت كەلدىم *tamam vwaqtinde, waqtinde geldim.*

It is a beautiful evening, پەك گۈزەل *geyje pek gyuzel.*
Are you tired? يۈرگۈنمەيسەن *yorghunmisisiniz.*

Not at all, خیر *khayr*.

Won't you rest a little? از استراحت ایتمزمیسکنز *bir az istirahat etmezmisiniz*.

No thank you, I shall go to bed, اللہ امانت اولک کیدوب *allaha emānet olun gidip yatajaghim*.

It is not more than ten yet, دکل زیاده اوندن *sā'at ondan ziyade diyil*.

I wish you good night, خیر اوله *geyjeniz khayr ola*

§ 17. Bed time, یاتماق وقتی *yatmaq vwaqti waqti*.

I wish to go to bed directly; make my bed, ایتاغمی چاپک *yataghimi chapuk, chapik yaq yatajaghim*.

I am going at once, کیدیورم چاپک *chapuk, chapik gidiyorum*

Light the fire in my room, for it is very cold, وطعمک

اتشنى چاپک یاق هوا پک صوغون *odami ateshini chapuk chapik yaq hava pek soghug*

Everything is ready, you can go when you like, مان

جقمق استرسکز هپبسی حاضر *ne zaman chltq maq istersiniz hepsi hazır*.

Shall I help you to undress? بنی صویمغه یاردم ایدیممی *sizi soymagha yardım edeyimmi*.

Has anybody called? کیمسه کلوب بنی ارادیمی *kimse geli beni aradimi*.

A gentleman came whom I did not know, he did not leave his name, لمدیگم بیر آدم کلدی ادینی سوردم *bilmedigim bir adam geldi adini sordum suweylemedi*.

He said that he would call again to-morrow, ایلریم دیدی *me, yarin gelirim dedi*.

Are there any letters for me? بر مکتوب المدمکی *hich bir mektub almadinmi*.

Bring them that I may read them before I go to bed,
 هاید کیت کتور یاتمازدن اول اوقییم *haydi*
git getir yatmazdan evvel oquyayim.

What time would you like to be called? سزی قاجده او یاندیریم *sizi qachta uyandırayim.*

Seven o'clock at latest, هیج اولمزسه ساعت یدیده *hich ol-*
mazsa sâat yedide.

You may depend upon my punctuality, بنم دوامی بیلموسکز *benim devāmimi bilirsiniz ben*
 اهمال ایتیم *ihmâl etmem.*

If you wish to rise, seven o'clock has just struck, اگر قالمستی *eyer qalqmasini.*
 استرسکز ساعت یدیه کلدی *isterseniz sâat yediye geldi.*

Open the curtain and blinds that I may see clearly, پرده ل *perdeler*
 ایله کپنکلی آجکه ایدینلغی کوریم *ile kepenkleri aç ki aydınlığı gıureyim.*

Do you wish me to light the fire before you get up? *qalq-*
 قالمازدن اول آتشیکی یاقیم استرمیسکز *mazdan evvel ateshinizi yaqayim ıstermisiniz.*

Give me a piece of soap and a towel, بر از صابون برده *bir az sabun birde havlu,*
 حولو حولی ویر *havli ver.*

The soap is on the table by your side, and the towel is
 صابون سزک پانکرده *on the back of the chair,*
 اولان سفرونک اوستنده وحولو حولی صندالیه نك *اولان سفرونك اوستنده وحولو حولی صندالیه نك*
 اوزرنده در *sâbun sizin yanınızda olan sofranın us-*
 tunde ve havlu, havli, sandaliyyenin uzerinde dir.

It linen is very badly washed, اشته بو چاماشور فنا بیقانمش *ishte bu chamashir fena yıqanmış.*
 I hay

the hairdresser to come and cut my hair, بربره سوبله *berbere suweyle gelsin*
 It / کلسون صاچلریمی کسسون *sachlarımı kessin.*
 Ar,

These stockings are not fit to wear, there are holes in them,

بو چورابلك كىلجك 'حالى اولمديغندن بشقه
bu chorāblarin giyilejek hali
olmadighindan bashqa delikleri bile var.

Here is another pair quite new, *اشته يکى چوراب ishte*
yeni chorab.

I can dress myself without you, *سنىكسىز كينه بيلورم seninsiz*
giyine bilirim.

Go and tell them to saddle my horse, as I wish to have
 a ride, *هائده هائدى كيت سوبله اتمى hayde haydi*
git suweyle atimi eyerlesinler zira gezmeye
gidejeyim.

§ 18. Spring, *الک بهار ilk bahār.*

I think at last the bad time is over and that we are
 going to enjoy the sweets of spring, *ظنن*
ايدرمکه هوالرك فناغى كچدى شمدنصكره
zann ederimki hawalarin
fenalighi gecdi shindensora ilk bahārin zev-
qini sureriz.

The green leaves are coming out, and soon we shall see
 the trees covered with flowers, *تازه يپراقى*
چمن كورمکه باشلادی واز وفتدنصكره اغاجلركده
taza yapraq chemen gyu-
runmeye bashladi ve az waqitdansora aghaj-
larinda chicheklendigini gyururuz.

Nothing is more enjoyable than to hear the birds celebrate
 by their songs the return of fine weather,
 ايام بهارده قوشلرك اوازىنى اشنمكدن زباده صفالو
eyyam-i bahārda qushlarin awa-
zini ishitmekden ziyade safali bir shey olmaz.

At this season the air is scented by the sweetness of the flowers which cover the fields, بر ایامده هوانک لطافتی جایزله زینت ویرن چیچکلرک رایحه سندن *bu eyyamda hawanin letāfeti chayirlara zinet veren chicheklerin rayhasından neshet eder.*

Already the nightingale has been heard, بلبل اوتیمکه باشلدی *bulbul eutmeye bashladi.*

To my mind this is the most agreeable time of the year, بئجه سنه نك اك ائو وقتیدر *benje senenin en iyi vaqtidir.*

It is also that in which Eastern poets delight, ایام بهار اوپله بر وقتدرکه شرقی شاعرلری هر بر فصلدن مدح ایدرلر *cydami bahar euyle bir vaqitdir ki sharqi shavirleri her bir faslden ziyade medh ederler.*

I dare say you know the charming ode upon the return of spring by the Turkish poet Mesîhi, شهبه سز مسیچینک ایام بهار اوزرنه اولان منظومه لطیفه سنی بیلورسکز *shubhesiz mesihinin eyyami bahar uzerine olan manzume-i latifesini bilirsiniz.*

Yes, it is really a poem full of taste, grace, and sweetness, فی الواقع لطیف و شیرین بر نطقدر *fil-vaqit latif ve shirin bir nutqdur.*

§ 19. In a garden, باغچه ده *baghchada.*

One breathes here a sweet scented air, هوا پک نفیس *burada hawa pek nefis qoquyor.*

The flowers emit a delicious scent, چیچکلردن غایت کوزل *chicheklerden ghāyet gyuzel qoqu geliyor.*

Your fruit trees promise well, *اغاجلریکڭ چوق میوه دیر جکی* *aghajlarınızın *choq meyve verejegi anlashiliyor, anashiliyor.*

Your vegetables want water, *سبزه لریکڭ صو استر* *sebzeleğiniz su ister.*

Come and see my flowers, *گل چیچکلریمی کور* *gel chichek-lerimi gyur.*

Your garden begins to look beautiful, *باغچه کڭ نظارتی* *baghchanızın nazāreti gyuz-ellenmeye bashladi.*

The flowers are coming out freely, *چیچکلر کڭ کثرتی وار* *chicheklerin kesreti var.*

This lawn pleases me much, *بو یشیلک پک بکنیورم* *bu yeshillik pek beyeniyorum.*

The narcissus will soon bloom, *زرین قدح بڭینده چیچکلنر* *zerin-qadeh yaqında chicheklenir.*

Have the tulips flowered? *لاله لر اچلدیمی* *laleler achildimi.*
Yes; we shall see them directly, *اوت شمدی کورر* *evet şimdi gyururuz.*

You have a fine variety of roses, *بر قاج چوق کلکڭ وار* *bir qach choq gyulunuz var.*

I have some of many colours, *بر قاج رنگ کلم وار* *bir qach renk gyulum var.*

Notice the freshness of this rose which has just opened, how lovely it is! *بو یکی آچلمش کلک تازه لکنه باق* *bu yeni achilmish gyulun tazeligina baqın ne gyuzeldir:*

Do not gather it, it lasts so short a time, that it would be a pity, *قوپارمیک یازقدر چاپک صولر* *gopar-mayın yazıqdir chapik solar.*

May I offer you a bouquet, *سزه بر دسته چیچک ویرمک استم* *size bir deste chichek vermek isterim.*

If you like, take some jasmine, tulips, hyacinths, lilies and other* flowers, یاسمین لاله و سنبل و زنبق
 و بشقادرین نه درلو چیچک استرسکز الک yāse-
 min lāle ve sumbul ve zambaq ve bashqalar-
 dan ne turlu chichek istersiniz alin.

They are splendid! كوزل ما شا الله پك mā shā allah pek gyuzel.

What flower is that? بو نه چیچکدر bu ne chichek dir.

It is an American flower, یکی دنیا چیچکی yeni dunya
 chichegi.

I have forgotten its name, اودنم ادینی adini unuttum.

What a number of violets you have, پك چوق benefshenizde, menekshenizde pek choq.

The jasmine has a powerful scent, پك سرت یاسمینلرک qoqusu pek sert.
 yāseminlerin qoqusu pek sert.

You keep your garden beautifully, پك ایو باقیورسکز baghchaniza pek iyi baqiyorsiniz.

Do you like it? بکینورمیسکز beyeniyormisiniz.

One sees here all sorts of trees, flowers and fruit, هر بر
 اغاجدن و چیچکدن و میوه اغاجندن بولنور her
 bir turlu aghajdan ve chichekden ve meyve agha-
 jından bulunur..

§ 20. Summer, یاز yaz.

Have you not felt it very warm the last few days? بر
 قاج کوندنبرو سیباجاق اولدیغنی طویمورمیسکز
 bir qach gyundenberi sijaq oldughunu duyma-
 yormusunuz.

It is so, but it does not matter, the hay will be better,
 کرچه هوا سیباجاق لاکن اوتلر حقند ایلور
 gerche hawa sijaq lakin otlar haqqında iyi dir.

Yes, but I fear it will end with a storm which may break up the weather entirely, اوت اوبيله اما صوكنده
 evet euyle bir firtina hawayi bozmasin
 amma sonunda bir firtina hawayi bozmasin
 deyu qorqarim.

What makes me fear a storm is, that the wind has been south for some days, روزگار بر قاج كوندن برو
 ruz-ber qach gyunden beri lodos esdiginden sonu
 firtinadir qorqarim.

On the contrary, I think it is from the west, ظن ايدرم
 zann ederim hawa lodos dıyl ama batidir
 lodos diyil amma batidir

Then the wind has changed since morning, اوبيله ايسه صباحدنبرو
 euyle ise sabahdanberi ruzgyar
 deyishdi.

If so, we shall have rain for some time, اكر بويله ايسه بر
 eyer buyle ise bir qach
 gyun yaghmur olajaq.

I think we shall have a fine harvest this year, بو سنه
 bu sene mahsulumuz choq olur deyu qiyās ederim.

True, but the rye, barley, and above all the wheat, promise much, اوبيله در اما چاودار ارپه وعلى الخصوص
 euyle dir amma chapdar
 arpa ve alelkhusus boghday pek a lā dir.

Thank God! up to the present the weather is good and the trees bend under the weight of the fruit, الله شكر بو
 āne qader hwanik kuzluki ayle agajlarik miyvesi dallirini
 allāha shukyur, shukr, bu ana qadar hawunin gyuzelligi ile aghajlarin
 meyvesi dallarini qirma derejesinde dir.

We have already plenty of cherries, and I think we also shall have plums, peaches, pears and apples,
 بوآنه قدر كراڤك كثرڤ نهائيت درجهيه قدم بصدى
 بوگا قياسيآ اريك شقتالو ارمود والمانك وفرتى اولور
 bu ana qadār kirazin kesreti nihāyet
 derejeye qadem basdı buna qiyāsen erik sheftali
 armud ve elmanin vefreti olur zann ederim.

Vegetables and fruit are more nutritious than any stews,
 ميوه ايله سبزوآت مقولدىسى ياخنيلرك جميعندن
 meyve ile sebzevāt maqulasi yakhnilarin
 jemiinden iyi dir.

The different kinds of salad obtainable in summer are very refreshing,
 موسم صيفده بولنان صلاتهك انواعى
 mevsimi sayfda bulunan
 salatanin envāi vujudi insāne serinlik verir.

For walking I prefer summer to winter, سىرو تماشا خصوصده
 seyr-u temāshā
 khususunda yaz mevsimi fasli shitadan iyi dir.

In the summer season every one leaves town for the country, ياز
 موسمده هر كس شهرى ترك ايدوب كويه كيدر
 yaz mevsiminde her kes shehri terk idip kyuye
 gider.

In my opinion the best thing in the summer is to bathe
 قياسيماجه ياز وقتنك لطافتى
 qiyasimja yaz vwaqtinin
 letāfeti aqar sularda yuzmek dir.

This kind of bath is more conducive to health than those
 بو نوع حماملرده بيقانمق
 اوده اولان حماملردن زياده وجوده جتر منفعتى وار
 bu nev-i hammamlarda yiqanmaq evde olan
 hammamlardan ziyāde vujude jerri menfaati
 var dir.

I therefore never omit in the summer to go and swim in the river, اكا بناء ياز كوناينده يوزمكدە اصلا قصور ابتمم *ana binaen yaz gyunlerinde yuzmekde asla gusur etmem.*

Still, I prefer sea bathing, بن ايسه دكر حمامى ترجيح ايدرم *ben isa deniz hammamini terjih ederim.*

§ 21. Autumn, صوك بهار *son bahār.*

Did you hear what a storm there was last night? دون كچه *dun geyje olan fir-tinayi ishitdinizmi.*

It is the gale of the autumn equinox, it is generally felt about the end of September, صوك بهارده اعتدال ليلى ونهارك روزكار بدر بوده اكثر يا ايلولك اخرنده *son bahārda istidālī leyl-u-nehārin ruzgyaridir buda ekseriya eylulin akhirinda vūqı' olur.*

I pity those who are at sea about this time, بو ايامده دكرده *bu eyyamde denizde olanlara ajirim.*

I am glad the wind has fallen, as I wish to go into the country, روزگار دكد كنه خوشنودم زيرا كويه كيده جكم *ruzgyār dindigine hoşnudum zira kyuye gi-dejeyim.*

Doubtless to go hunting, as it is now the season, شهبهسز *shub-hesiz kyuye gitmekliginiz av mevsimi oldughundandır.*

Besides, it is neither too hot nor too cold, بوندنبشقە صوك بهارده هوانه پك اسبجاق نه پك صوغوقدر *bundanbashqa son bahārda hawa ne pek sıjac ne pek soghuqdir.*

What a magnificent view! what cheerful places! نه کوزل نه نظارتدر نه مفرح یرلر
ne gyuzel nazāretdir
ne muferrih yerler.

The wine of these parts must be excellent, بو یرک شرابی
 bu yerin sharābi pek iyi
 olmalidir.

Every one sets to work at this season, men and women,
 rich and poor, بو مومسده قاری وارکک فقرا و زنکین
 bu mevsimde qari ve erkek
 fuqara ve zengin, butun ishte dirler.

§ 22. Winter, قیش qish.

Winter is setting in very severely, قیش شدتله باشلادی
qish shiddetle bashladi.

Half a foot of snow fell last night, کچین کیجه یارم قدم
 gechen geyje yarim qadem
 qadar qar yaghdi.

It is said that the salts contained in snow fertilize the
 earth, قازدن حاصل اولان توز ماکصولاته فایده سی
 qardan hasil olan tuz mahsulata
 faydasi choq deyorler.

The ice begins to bear, بوز اوستندن کچلمکه باشلاندی
 buz ustunden gechilmeye bashladi.

I am going to-day to see skating on the ice, بو کون بوز
 bu gyun
 buz uzerinde qaydiqlarini gyeurmeye gidi-
 yorum.

That will be a fresh amusement for you, and one you cannot
 enjoy in Constantinople, سزک ایچون یکی بر
 sizin ichin yeni
 bir shey zira istanbolda yoqdur bu.

No, but the harbour has been seen partly frozen, کرچه

یوق اما لیمانک اطرافى بعضى کره بتون بتون
 طونار *gerche yoq amma limanin etrāfi bazı*
kerre butun butun donar.

The historian Wasif Efendi mentions that in 1753 (the water) between Defterdar Iskeles and Sudluje was frozen; and this happened again in the years 1838 and 1860, واصف افندى تاريخه كره ۱۷۵۳ سنه ميلاديه سنه دفتردار اسكله سيله سوليجه ميالى مناجم اولدى ونه ۱۸۳۸ و ۱۸۶۰ سنه سنه wasif efendi tārīkhine gyure bin yedi yuz elli uch senei milā-diyyesinde defterdar iskelesile sudluje miyani munjemid oldu ve gene bin sekiz yuz otuz sekiz ve bin sekiz yuz altmish sene sinde vugu' buldu.

For those who love study this is the most pleasant season, علمه هوسكار اولانلر اك مساعدلى وفندر
haveskyār olanlara en müsāvedeli vwaqitdir.

No doubt, the bad weather compels us to be sedentary, شبهه يوق هوانك فنا اولمسي بزي اوده اوتورمغه
 ايدر *shubhe yoq hawanin fena olmasi bizi evde oturmagha mejbür eder.*

On summer days one is tempted to walk, ايام صيفده سيره
 دله هوسكار دله *eyyāmi sayfde seyrān gyuhe gitmeye haveškyār dirlar.*

Every one is then in the country, هر كس كوبره طاغلور
her kes kyuylere daghilar.

I always find that a dry and sharp winter suits me better than any time of the year, بكا قالسه قورو
 وشدتلو فيشده سنهك هر بر وقتندن زياده بكا
 فيده لودر *bana qalsa quru ve shiddetli qishda senenin her bir vwaqtindan ziyāde bana faydelidir.*

§ 23. At a bookseller's, کتابچیده *kitābjida*.

Let us go to the library for a few moments, کتابچییه *kitābjıye girelim bir az*.

You have not yet sent me my books, کوندرمدنکتر *kitāblarımı daha gyeundermediniz*.

I assure you it is not my fault, they are still at the bookbinders, قصور بنده دکل مجلددن *qusur bende diyil mujellidden daha gelmedi*.

I have now a Turkish and English dictionary, but I still want one English and Turkish, ترکجه انکلیزجه *turkje inglizje lughatim var amma bir dane inglizje turkje lughata muhtājim*.

I can get you one: the second edition has just come out. Here it is Sir, ویره بیلورم سزه چونکه ابکنجی *vere bilirim size chunku ikinji basmasi muakkhkharin*
بسمه سی مواخرا ظهور ایتمشدر اشته افندم *ishte efendim*.

I wish to have a Turkish grammar and handbook for dialogues, ترک حرفیله طریق تکلم دبدکلری کتابه *turk sarfile tariki-tekellum dedikleri kitaba muhtājim*.

Here they are, Sir. Will you have these two books bound for me, اشته افندم بو ابکی کتابی بکا جلدلدر *ishte efendim bu iki kitabi bana jildlediniz*.

I want a solid binding without being ornamental, بر قوی *bir qavi*
جلد استرم اما پک تکلفلی اولمسون *jild isterim amma pek tekelluflu olmasun*.

Tell me, have you received any new works? یکی کتاب *yeni kitab aldinizmi*.

A case has just arrived at the custom house for me, which
 may probably contain some, کمرکه بر صندوق گلدی احتمالکه ایچینده اوله
gyumruge bir sandiq geldi ihtimalki ichinde ola.

Do not forget to keep for me a specimen of such as will
 interest me, اونوتمه بکا دایر فایده لو کتابلر وارایسه الیفوبک
*unutma bana dāyr faydeli ki-
 tablar varsa aligoyun.*

I will not forget, باش اوستنه *bash ustune.*

Very well, Sir, ابو افندم پک *pek iyi efendim.*

Here Sir, is a catalogue of such books as you wish for,
 اشته افندم استدبکتر کتابلرک دفتربر
ishte efendim istediginiz kitablarin defteridir.

What is the price of these books, بو کتابلرک بهاسی نقدز در
bu kitablarin bahasi neqadar dir.

The prices are those which will be found in the catalogue.

I sell at a stated price and do not overcharge,
 بهالری قایمه ده مبین اولدوغی کبی اولوب
 بنده کزده هر شئیک ثمنی معیندر بازارلشمغه کلمز
*bahalary qaymede mubeyyen oldughu gibi olup
 bendenizde her shey'in semeni muayyendir pa-
 zarlashmagha gelmez.*

This is very expensive, بو خوف پهلودر *bu choq pahalidir.*

§ 24. At a jeweller's, جواهرجیده *jevāhirjide.*

Show me first some rings set with fine stones, بکا بر قاج
 ماجرهر یوزک کوسترک *bana bir qach mujevher
 yuzuk gyeusterin.*

Here, Sir, is a diamond which has much brilliancy, اشته
 افندم بر صاف الماس *ishte efendim bir sāf elmās.*

You cannot find one of finer water, بوندن صوبی تمیز الماس
 بولنماز *bundan suyu temiz elmās bulunmaz.*

I think the setting is solid? دونماسی آیو ظن ایدرم *donanmasi iyi zann ederim.*

A good workman set it, بونی یاپان اوستا آیو در *bunu yapan usta iyi dir.*

I like this ring much but it is too large for me, بو یوزک *bu yuzuk iyi amma bana buyuk.*

I can reduce it without spoiling the setting, دونماسینه *donanmasina doqunmaqsizin halqasini kuchuldurum.*

Do you happen to have a brilliant ring which is rather cheaper? بهاسی اهن اولهرق چوق پارلق بر *bahāsi ehven olaraq choq parlaq bir yuzuginiz varmidir.*

Here is one weighing 1½ carats which shines beautifully, *ishte afndm br bçyoc فراط بر برلانتهدر efendim bir buchug qirāt bir pirlantadir.*

If it were one of the first water it would be worth 3000 piastres, صویی کوزل اولیدی تقریبًا اوجبیک *suyu gyuzel olaydi taqriban uchbin ghurush eder idi.*

This is just what you want, سزه لازم اولان بودر *tamām size lāzim olan budur.*

Perhaps, but it is too expensive, بهالودر *mumkindir amma bu pek bahālidir.*

I will give you 1500 piastres, سزه بیک بشیوز غروش ویره جکم *size bin besh-yuz ghurush verejegim.*

I shall also want a gold chain for my watch, mine is out of fashion, ساعتیه بر التون زنجیر استرم زیرا *sā'atime bir altin zinjir isterim zira benimki shimdiki moda diyil.*

Show me some earrings set with emeralds, *bir az zümrüd kıyupeler gyeusterin.*
 I have not any just now, *bir az zümrüd kıyupeler gyeusterin.*

I have not any just now, *şimdilik bende yoq.*

What do you ask for these rubies, *bu yaquta ne istersiniz.*

Send this box to me to-morrow with the bill for the things
 I have bought; I will pay the porter, *aldıghım şeylerin defteri ile bu kutuyu yarin gyeunderin getiren adama parasını veririm.*

• • § 25. With a doctor, *hekimle.*

How do you feel to-day? *bugün nasıl siniz*
 I am so weak, I can hardly stand upright, *olqadar quv vêtsizlighim varki ayaq uzre durmagha me jâlim yoq.*

I am not at all well, *hiç iyi diyilim.*

I feel very ill, *pek khashayim.*

How long have you been ill? *n zemândenberi khashasiniz.*

How did it begin? *bunu ibtidâsi neden neshet etdi.*

I was seized yesterday with shivering, *dün diy evvelsi gyün bir titremeklik ile beni tutdu.*

Have you felt sick? *yureginiz aghridim*
 Yes at first, but that has passed, and only a bad headache remains, *baş ağrısı kalmış, şimdilik baş ağrısı kalmış.*

*evet ibtidāsında bir az aghridi lakin sora da-
ghildi shimdi bashim pek aghrıyor.*

Where do you feel the pain now? *شمدیلک نره کز اغریور*
shimdilik nereniz aghrıyor.

How did you pass the night? *بوکیجه نصل ایدکز bu geyje
nasl idiniz.*

I could not sleep, *اوییه مدم uyuyamadım.*

I had fever all night, *ایچنده ایدم bu-
tun geyje harāret ichinde idim.*

I feel pain all over, *بترم وجودم اغریور butun vujudim aghrıyor.*

Let me see your tongue, *دلکزه باقدیم dilinize baqayım.*

Your tongue is rather foul, *دلکز بر از پاسلو در diliniz bir
az pasli dir.*

You must take some medicine, *ایچمکملککز ایجاب
ایدر bir sherbet ichmekliginiz rjab eder.*

Put out your arm, I wish to feel your pulse, *اوزادک qolunuzu uzadin nabzinize baqayım.*

Your pulse is rather quick, *نابزکز چوق اوریور nabziniz choq
vwurıyor.*

Do you think my illness dangerous? *خستندلکم تهلهکلومی
کھستالغیم ظنن ایدرسکز khastaligim tehlikelimi zann
edersiniz.*

No, but you must be careful or it will become so, *دکل
دیغل اما تهلهکلو اولمسون دیو دقت ایتملوسکز digil
amma tehlikeli olmasin diyu diqqat etmelisinis.*

What must I do? *نه یاپدیم ne yapayım.*

To-day you will maintain a strict dietary, *بو کون پرهیز
ایتملوسکز bu gyun perhiz etmelisiniz.*

You will take three spoonfuls a day, *اوج قاشق یرسکز
gyunde uch qashiq yersiniz.*

I am tired of medicines, *اوصاندیم ilāzdan usandım.*

I am weary of being in bed! یاتمدن بکا اوصان کلدی
yatmadan bana usan geldi.

Courage, this is nothing, ایلہ بو بر شی دکل
ghayret eyle, bu bir shey digil.

In two or three days you will be quite well, I hope, یکی
 اوج کوندنصکرة شفا بولورسکز ان شا الله
iki uci gyunden-songra shifā bulursunuz in sha allāh

§ 26. To buy a horse, ات صائمن آلف ایچون
at satin almaq ichin.

Do you understand horses? سز اتلر اکلمیسکز
siz atlar ang larmisiniz, annarmisiniz.

A little, بر از *bir az.*

Then kindly come with me to the horse market, I want
 buy a horse, ایدک ات بازارنه برابر کیدلم
kerem edin at pazārına berab gidelim bir at alayim.

What kind of horse do you wish to buy? غی نوع ات
 هانگی نев آلمسینی استرسکز
hanghi nev at almasini istirsiniz.

I want a riding horse and a pack-horse, بیر
 بینهچک اتله بیر ساییسخانه استرم
bir binejek atila bir sāyishkha isterim.

Well, we will try to select well, رک کیدلم بر ایوسنی
 بویورون سچمده سعی ایدرز
buyurun gidelim bir sini sechmeye sayy ederiz.

Sir, have you horses for sale? ہم صاتیلیق آتکلرکز وارمی
efendim satiliq atlariniz varmi.

Yes, Sir, I have various breeds, افندم جنس جنس
 ایتلر واردر
evet efendim jins jins atlarim var

I want first a common horse امرده بیاغی بر ات استرم
 ایتلر
evvel emrde bayaghi bir at isterim.

I do not want a high priced one, *qi-melli haywān istemem.*

One of these will suit me well, *bunlardan bir tanesi ishime elverir.*

I am going to show you one which will please you, *size bir haywān koustereyimke xshnūd olursunuz.*

Where is he? *nerede dir.*

He is in this stable, *bu akhirda dir.*

His bearing is bad, I do not like him, *fena duruyor, durushu fenadir, istemem.*

This is an entire horse; that is a gelding, *bu atdir euteki bargirdir, begirdir.*

Now let us look at a thorough-bred Arab horse, *shimdi jins bir arab atina baqalim.*

Here is a beauty! *ishte bir pek aīlasi.*

How much do you want for this horse? *ne istersiniz bu ata.*

I want 6000 piastres, *alti bin ghurush isterim.*

That is very dear, *pek pahālidir.*

No sir, it is a real Arab, *khayr efendim bu haywān gerche kden arabdir.*

He looks thin and worn, *yor-ghunluq ve zavfliq alāmeti var.*

Look at his tail and mane, *quyrughuna qafasina baqin.*

He is grey, and this colour does not suit me, *qir oldughundan hazz etmem.*

Here is a black mare which perhaps you would prefer,

اشته نسزه بر سیاه قسراق بلکی حظ ایدرسکز
ishte size bir siyah qisraq belki hazz edersiniz.

I will buy her with her foal, تای ایلہ صاتون الورم
tayi ile satin alirim.

How old is this colt? تای قاج یاشنده
 Three months, ایلقدر اوج *uch aylıqdir.*

I will guarantee the horse sound, قصورسز بر آت اولدیغنه
 قسورسز اولورم *qusursiz bir at oldughuna kefl olurum.*

I will give you 700 piastres for him, یدی یوز غروش وار
 نسزه *yedi yuz ghurushum var size.*

I cannot let you have him at that price, بو بهایه ویره‌مم
 نسزه *bu pahāya veremem size.*

You shall have him for the same figure as the mare,
 قسراغین پاهاسنده ویرم *qisraghin pahāsinde veririm.*

Well, send him to my house, I will pay the amount, دیدیککز
 کبی اولسون اوہ کوندک باره‌سنی ویره‌مم
dediginiz gibi olsun eve gyeunderin parasini vereyim.

You have, sir, made an excellent purchase, بازارلغکز پک
 کوزل *pazarlighiniz pek gyuzel.*

§ 27. In a Café, قهوه ابچنده *qahwe ichinde.*

What will you take, gentlemen? افندیلر نه استرسکز
efendiler ne istersiniz.

Will you have ices, lemonade or coffee? طوکدرمه‌می قهوه‌می
 یوخسه لیموناته‌می استرسکز
dondurmami qahwemi yokhsa limonatami istersiniz.

When it is very warm I drink water, nothing quenches
 سبجاقی هواده حرارت سوندرمک *my thirst so well,*

اكثر يا صو ايچرم *sijaq hawade hararet*
sundermek ichin ekseriyya su icherim.

This beer is very good, بو ارپه صوبى پك ايدور *bu arpa*
suyu pek iyidir.

It is bad and hot, هم فنا هم سيباجادر *hem fena hem sijaqdir.*
 It does not foam, كيورميور *keupurmeyor.*

Do not drink too fast; if you are hot it might do you
 harm, اكر حرارتكز وار ايسه پك چاپيك ابچميك *aker harāretiniz var ise pek chapik.*
ichmeyin zira zararlidir.

Give me a cup of coffee, بكا بر فناجان قهوه وبركر *hana*
bir filjān qahwe veriniz.

I like coffee at any time, جميع زمانده بناجه قهوه اودور *jemi zemande benje qahwe iyidir.*

Will you have some liqueur? عنبه مى استرسكر *amberiyyemi*
istersiniz.

Before going out, will you light a cigarette, چيفمزدن اول *chifmizdan evvel*
sigharanizi yaqarmisiniz.

Why cannot we smoke here? نيچون بورده ايچميوروز *nichin*
burada ichmeyoruz.

We must regard the customs of every country, هر بر مملكتك عادتنه رعايت لازمدور *her bir memle-*
ketin adetine ri'āyet lāzimdir.

During my stay in Constantinople I got to like a pipe, چبوغاك لذتنى استانده اولديغم ائناده آلدوم *chibughun lezzetini asitanede oldughum esnāde*
aldim.

I still smoke it occasionally when I get tobacco from your
 country, بورده سرك مملكتكز توتننى بولديجا *burada sizin memleketinizin*
tutununu bulduqja bazı bazı icherim.

I do not like English tobacco, *ingiliz tutununu beynmem.* بکنم انکلیز توتنی

I have still a little from Latakie, may I offer you some? *bir az jebeliyyem qaldi size bir az vereyim.* بر از جبلیعم قالدی سزه بر از ویرهیم

Do you sometimes smoke a nargillah? *bazı vwaqit nargile ichermisiniz.* بعض وقت نارکیله ایچرمیسینیز

§ 28. Travelling, سیاحت *siyāhet.*

Travelling in a stage coach and by rail, *demir yolu ve araba ile siyahet etmeye dā'ir.* تیمور یولی و عربہ ابله سیاحت ایتمکه دائر

I start tomorrow for Smyrna, if you will come with me, we will travel together and share expenses, *yarin izmira gidejegimdir benimle gitmesini isteriseniz yol masrafını ortaqlashiriz.* یارین ازمره کیده جکمدر بنمله کیتمسنی استر یارین izmira ایتسه کر یول مصرفنی اورتاقلشورز

Most gladly; I could not find a better opportunity nor above all a travelling companion who suits me better, *bash ustune bundan iyi firsat ve alel-khusus sizden munāsib bir arqadash bulamam.* باش اوستنه بوندن ایو فرصت وعلی الخصوص سزدن مناسب بر ارقداش بوله مم

For my part, I do not like to travel alone, *bendenizje yaliniz siyāhet elmegi pek sevmem.* بنده کرجه یانکر سباحه ایتمکی پک سومم

Do not forget, Sir, that we start at day-break to-morrow, *efendim yarin seher vwaqti, waqti, yola chiqajaghimizi unutmayiniz.* افندیم یارین سحر وقت یوله جیقا جغمری اونوتیکز

We will go as far as.... by rail and do the rest of the journey by carriage, فلان يره قدر تيمور يوليله كيدوب اوتديه قالان يوله عادتا عربه ايله چيقاجغز *filān yere qadar demir yolu ile gidip euteye qalan yola ādeta araba ile chiqajaghiz.*

There is no time to lose, let us take our places quickly, and have the luggage weighed and registered, وقت غائب ايتما مليز هايده اونوره جق بريمزي طوتالم وبوكلرمزي طارتديروب دفتره قيد ايتديرلم *vwaqit, waqit ghā'ib etmemeliyiz hayde oturajaq yerimizi tutalim ve yuklerimizi tardirip deftere qayd etdirelim.*

Shall we go first or second class? برنجي يره مي كيدجكز *birinji yerde mi gide-jegiz yogsa ikinjide mi.*

I think we shall find the first class carriages most comfortable, ظن ايدرمكه برنجي برده راحت اولوروز *zan ederimki birinji yerde rahat oluruz.*

As you please, Sir, افندم نصل ذوقكزه كيدرسه *efendim nasl zevqiniza giderse.*

This railroad is very well constructed, and the waiting rooms at the terminus are splendid, بو تيمور يولى عالالعال بايلمش وبناسنك ايچنده كي ديوانخانلر دخی پك نفيسدر *bu demir yolu al-ul-al yapilmish ve binasinin ichindeki di-vankhāneler daha pek nefisdir.*

We are travelling by express; it must be admitted that the application of steam to railroads and navigation is a great and admirable thing, شمدى واپور زياده شدتله كيديور واقعا واپور ك تيمور يوللرند و ملاحتده استعمالى عقله حيرت واپور بر بيوك شيدر *shimdi vapor ziyāde shid-*

detile gidiyor vâqia vaporun demir yollarında ve-melûhatde istismâli 'aqla hayret verir bir büyük şeydir.

See what a beautiful country we are passing through with incredible rapidity, عجلدن خارج سرعت
ایله کچدیگمز شو کوزل مملکتله باقکز دق
'aqildan khârij sur'at ile gechedigimiz shu
gyuzel memleketlere baqiniz diq.

The railroad does not border on our destination, we will now take a carriage which will convey us there, تیمور یولی اصل وار، حق یریمزه قدر
کتمدیگندن شمدی عادتا بر عرب طوتالمکه
demir yolu asil varajaq اورایدک کوتورسون
yerimize qadar gitmediginden shimdi 'âdeta
bir 'araba tutalimki bizi orayadak gyutursun.

The horses are put to, let us get up: they only wait for us to start, آتلر عربیه قوشلمشدر هایدی بنده زبرا
atlar 'arabaya qoshulmushdur یانکز بزی بکلیورلر
haydi binelim zira yaliniz bizi bekleyorler.

After leaving the train an ordinary carriage seems slow, and even tedious in its progress, تیمور یولندن
ایرلدقدنصکره عادی عربیه یوریمده اغر وصقندیلی
demir yolundan ayrıldıqdansongra 'âdi
'araba yurumede aghır ve siqintili geliyor.

Conductor, are our trunks securely fastened on? عربیه جی
arabaji sandiqlarimiz صندقلریمز ایو باغلندیمی
iyi baghländimi.

Yes sir, the chains are quite tight, اوت افندم زنجیرلر پک
evet efendim zincirler pek muhkemdir.

Is there nothing to fear from robbers in this neighbourhood? بو سمتلرده خرسز قورقوسی وارمیدر
bu semtlerde khirsiz qorqusu varmidir.

This route is the safest, being day and night travelled over by public conveyances; it goes also through a plain where there is no wood, بو یول عربہ لک کیجہ کوندز کچدیکی یردر پک امیندر بوندن ماعدا بر ماحلدن کچہ جکز کہ اورماندن bu yol arabalarin geyje gyunduz gechedigi yerdir pek emindir bundan mada bir mahallden gechejegizki ormandan muberra duz ovadir.

Let us try to go rather faster, to arrive in good time, bir بر از تیزجہ کتمکہ غیرت ایدہلکہ ارکن وارہلم az tezje gitmege ghayret edelimki erken varalım.

We have taken nothing since the morning, it will be better to wait and dine, as it will be quite night before we reach our destination, صباحدنبری صبیح بر شی یمدک شمدیدن اخشام طعامی ایتسک ایو اولور زیرا واردیغمزده کیجہ قارانلغنه sabāhdanberi hich bir shey yemedik shimdiden aqsham ta'āmin etsek iyi olur, zira vardighimizda geyje qaranlighina rast gelejegizdir.

Open the door and let down the step; we will get down and stop at this inn, عربہ نك قیوسنی آجکز وایاقی باصہ جغتای ایندبرکز زیرا شو لوقاتتایہ اینوب arabanın qapisini achiniz ve ayaq basajaghini endiriniz zira shu loqantaya enib eylenejegizdir.

Pray walk in, gentlemen, بیورکز ایچری افندیلر efendiler icheri buyurunuz.

Can you give us some dinner? بزه اخشام طعامی تدارک bize aqsham ta'āmi tedārik ede bilirmisiniz.

Give us only two or three dishes, a bottle of wine and dessert, *bize faqat iki uch qap yemek ile bir putqal sharab ve bir az yemish verin.*

Will you have nothing more, *ziyāde bir şey istermisiniz.*

Tell us what we owe? *suweyleyiniz size neqadar verejimiz var dir.*

You will not forget the waiter, *khidmetjiyi hizmetjiyi unutmayiniz.*

§ 29. Sentences in every-day use, for the learner to commit to memory and translate into English.

Requests and acknowledgements, *istemek ve teshekyur etmek uzre.*

رخصتکز ایله.

الڤن شریفکزله.

بندکزه رخصت بیوررمیسکز.

الڤن بکا ویررمیسکز.

کرم ایدرمیسکز.

کرم بیوررمیسکز.

سزه بر تمنام وار.

سزڤن نیاز ایدکجم.

سزه بر رجام وار.

بو عنایتی سزڤن التماس مقتدرمییم.

بکا همت ایدرمیسکز.

بندہ کڑہ کرم بیوررمیسکڑ.

ہکا پر بیوک عنایت ایدہ بیلورسکڑ.

درجہ سز ممنونم. سزہ پک ممنونم. زیادہ سیلہ شکر ایدرم.

سزہ پک بیورجلویم.

اللہ امانت اولک.

سزہ پک ممنون اولورم.

سزہ چوق زحمت ویرپورم. چوق زحمت ایدیورسکڑ.

سزہ بوقدر زحمت ویرمکلکم موجب تأسفمدر.

On confirmation and denial.

tasdiq ve-inkyāra dā'ir. تصدیق وانکارہ دائر.

تاحقیق اولسون کہ سزہ کفیل اولورم.

سزہ تآ کید ایدرم بونی سزہلدیہ بیلورم.

سویلدیکمہ اینانک. سزہ یمین ایدرمکہ.

اوت دییورم. خیر دیمہیورم.

ادعا ایدرمکہ. انی تاخمین ایدرم. اوت ظن ایدرم. اوت

صانورم.

فرض ایدرمکہ اوت. خیر ظن ایتنام. فرض ایدرم کہ یوق.

ملاحظہ ایدہ بیلورسکڑ. سز ملاحظہ ایدر سکڑ.

صانرمیسکڑ. ظن ایدرمیسکڑ.

صانورم. ظن ایدرم. صاننام. ظن ایتنام.

بیللمیسکڑ. معلومکڑ اولملو. سزہ سویلمک ایودر.

بعض ملاحظہ وارکہ. قیاس ایدرم.

اینانمغه فکرم وار. اوت تخمین ایدرم.
 نه دیمک استرسکز. مرامکز ندر.
 نه دیمک استرسکز بلمم. نه دیورسکز بلمم.
 صاکیاخمیدر. کرچکمییدر.
 بلی بو کرچکدر. محققدر. صاکیکدر. بو واقعدر.
 سونلیدیکز دن صاکیاخمیسکز.
 ظن ایدرمیسکز.
 زیاده سیله انی اینانرم.
 اینانورمیسکز.
 انی اینانورم, اینانرم.
 هیچ اینانمم. اعتماد اینتم.
 ظن ایدرمکه اوت.
 ظن ایدرمکه خیر.
 شبههم یوقدر.
 حقیقتی ایو بیلورمیسکز.
 بونی ایو بیلورم. بونی صاکیکا بیلورم.
 بوندن زیاده کرچک اولماز.
 متکفل اولورم.
 اینانمم. کوجله اینانورم.
 یکا اینانه بیلورسکز.
 بو کرچک اولمهز.

بو بر مثلدر.

سزه سوزمی ویرم که. عرضم حقی ایچون. عرضه مبنی وعد
صکیاکم ایچون.

Expressions of surprise, تعجیبه *te'ajjubiiyye*.

نه. ندر.

اویله می. کرچکمی.

فی الحقیقه. حقیقتنا. بلی. خیر.

اوله بیلورمی. ممکنمی. ممکن اولورمی.

منصل اوله بیلور. بو منصل اوله بیلور.

بو ممکن دکل. بو امکانسزدر. بو اوله من. ممکن دکل.

بوندن اوترو حیرتده ایم. بوکا غایت تعجب ایتدم. بنی شاشردیورسکتر.

بو بنی پک تعجبه براقیور. اندن چوق تعجب ایدرم.

بوندن شاشیورم. بوندن تعجب ایدیورم. بو عجایب شیدر.

بو پک غریب شی.

اکلاشلمز بر شیدر. بو ایشد، امش شیدر. بو بر عجایب شی.

بو پک عجایب بر مصلحتندر...

Expressions on probability, احتمالیه *ihtimāliyye*.

بو احتمالدر. بو کرچک اولسنک احتمالی واردر.

احتمالسز دکلدر. زیاده سیله احتمالدر.

ممکنسز بر تی یوق. پک ممکندر. بو اوله بیلور.

بوکا تعجب ایتتم. بو بنی حیرتده قوماز. بو عجایب دکلدر.

تعجب ایدہ جک بر شی یوق. سزدن تعجب ایتیم.
 سز بنی حیرتده قوماسکز، بوندن متاکیر اولمام. بوندن تعجب.
 ایتیمیه جکم.

بو بنی حیرتده براقیمیه جق. بوندن حیران اولمام. بو بیاغی
 بر شیدر.

بوکا سوز یوق. بو اکلشور. بو بللودر.

Expressions of regret and grief, *kedere dā'ir*, کدره دائر.

کوجمه کیتدی. مکدر اولدم. پک مکدر اولدم. حددن زیاده
 مکدرم.

غایت کدرم وار. بر وجهله منسل اوله میورم. بو بنی اشوری
 مأیوس و ماکزون ایدیرور.

تسل اولمام. پک مأیوسم. بن بو شیک مأیوسیم.
 نه یازق. نفدر یازق. پک یازق. پک فناشی. غایت حزن
 ویرپاجی شی.

پک مروتسز بر شیدر. نامقبول بر شیدر. پک مؤثر شی بو زور
 شیدر.

پوچتین شیدر. بوظالم شیدر. دتره تدریور. اجنه جق شی.
 بوبک بیوک مصیبتدر. غایت مدھش بر کیفیت.

Expressions of blame and reproach, *ta'zir ve taqbiha dā'ir*,
 تعزیر و تقبیحه دائر.

اوف. پوف. های نه فنا. اوتانزمیسن. محجوب اولمقلغکز
 ایجاب ایدوب اوتانملیدیکر.

بنی محجوب ایدیورسن. نه عیب شیدر. نه عیب شی.
عیبدر. عیب.

بو پک فنادر. نقدر مذمم شی. بو پک یرامازدر. غایم منفور
ومستکره شیدر.

نوجهله بویه یراماز اولورسکز. بوئی نصل یاپدیکز. پک فنا ادمسن.
بوئی نیچون یاپدک. بوپک. فنا اولقدرد. پک یراماز اولمی.
بو سزه کوره پک فنادر. ذمه لایقسکز. ذمه لایقس.
بونده چوق قباحتك وار. بوکا نصل جسارت ایدیورسن. صبرمی
توکدیورسن.

ارتق صبرم قالمدی. صبره تکلم یوق. سندن خشنود دکلم.
خشنود اولمام.

خشنود اولیه جغم. پک کوجنه جکم. اوصلو طور. راحت طور.
بتور. ارتق الویر. بتور دییورم. بتوریکز دییورم.

راحت طوره مایسکز. سزه خبر ویریورم. سزه افاده ایدیورم.
بن بوئی استم. بن بوئی تحمل ایده میه جکم. بوکا راضی اولمام.
انی استم. مطلق استم. بوندن غیریسنه ایو دقت ایدک.
بردها بو خصوصه یاکلمه. ادبسلک ایتمه. صوص. صوص
اول. صوص اولک.

اوقدر جواب لازم دکل. ردجواب ایتمه. کوزلمک اوکندن قاچ.
اوکمدن چکل.

دفع اول. کوزمه کورنمه.

Expressions of displeasure, *qizqanliq uzre*, اوزره قزغانلىق.

پك طارغينم. كيغم بيرنده دكل. كمال درجهده حدت مزاجم وار.
اكلشلمز بير قزغانغم وار. تصور اولنماز بير حدت مزاجم وار.
طارلدم. قزدم.

جانم صقلدى. غايتله طارلدم. جانم پك صقلدى. حددن
زياده طارغينم.

شدتله غايت طارغينم. قودردم. قودرمشم. حدتدن كندومى
ضبط ايدمهيورم.

Expressions of joy, delight, gladness, *shazliq babinde*, شاذلىق بابنده.

خشنودم. حظ ايدرم. محظوظم. ممنونم. مسرورم. پك سونيورم.
پك مسرورم. پك ممنونم. اندن پك خشنودم. درجهسز مسرورم.
بوندن كمال ممنونيت بسكا حاصل اولدى. پك حظ ايتدم.
پك ممنون اولدم.

سزه تبريك ايدرم. ذاتكزه تبريك ايدرم. تبريكى قبل ايدرميسكز.

On consultations, *damishmaya dā'ir*, طانشمهيه دائر.

نه ياپمق. نه ياپملى. نه تدبير ايتملى. ايتملييز. نه قرار
وبره جكز.

نه ياپه جغز. نهايتنده تدبيرمز نه در. شمدى نه تدبيرمز قالدى
باقه لم.

بر شيه قرار وپرملييز. چارسى بيلميورم. نه ايدم جكمى بيلم.

بزه بر پك بيوك مشكل. بر بيوك مشكله دوشدك. بوپك
مشكلدر.

رأيم بودرکه. ظن ایتمز میسکز. اگر یرکزده اوله ایدم.
سزك یرکزده اولسیدم. سزه نصیحت ایدرم. بنم رأیم بوکه.
اگر بکا صورارسکز. خاطرمه بر شی کلدی. بر شی دوشنیورم.
فکره بر شی کلدی. براق بی یپایم. بر شی یاپهلم. تبدیل
نیت ایندم.

بشقه کونه بقهلم. بشقه منوال اوزره طوتهلم. بوبابده افکارکز ندر.
نه دیرسکز. بنم افکارم سزکی کبیدر. سزك کبی ملاحظه ایدرم.
کوزل ملاحظه بیورمشسکز. بو پك کوزل ملاحظه در.
اشته پك یرنده بر مطالعده در. بنم رأیم سزکی کبیدر. بونی
یاپهلم.

اک ایوسی بودر. بوندن ایوسی یوقدر. دها ایو سورم.
دها ایو دکلمیدر. دها ایوسی دکلسی. یاپه جغمز شیلرک اک
اهونی بودر.

بوندن بشقه یاپه جغمز یوقدر.

CHAPTER I.

CONVERSATION.

On the origin of the Ottoman Empire, language, and literature.

The Ottomans are of Turco-man or Tartar extraction. They came from Turkestan their original country, which is situated in the North of Asia, and settled in Anatolia about 1231 A. D. or 629 Hegira.

مبدأ عثمانیانك لسانلیله علم و فنونلی بیانلندیر
mebdeyi 'osmāniyanin lisanlar-ıla ʔulum-u-fununları beyānındadır.

sohbət.

عثمانلارک اصلئ ترک یاخورد تئاردر
ʔosmānıların aslı türk yakhud tatardır asyānin jānībı şimālî-sinde kyaın qadim uleyyāmda vatanı aslıları olan türkistan denilen vilayetden gelip tārīkhî ʔisevinin ۱۲۳۱ senesi yani tārīkhî islāmının ۶۲۹ senesi anadolı jānībınde vatan tutdular.

One year before the decline of the Seljuks, that is in the year 1299 A. D. 699 Hegira, Osman, son of Erthogrul, first took the title of Ottoman Sultan.

آل سلجوقیانك انقراضندن بیر سنه مقدم تاریخ عیسوینك ۱۲۹۹ سنهسی یعنی تاریخ اسلامینك ۶۹۹ سنهسی عثمان بن ارطغرول ابتدا پادشاهلق عنوانی ايله تاخته چلرس ایلمشلدیر.
ol eyyūmdandeveri ʔosmānlı shah-eylemishlerdir.

ol eyyūmdandeveri ʔosmānlı shah-

What is the religion of the Ottomans?

عثمانلار نه دینه اعتدایدرلر.

Ottomans?

ler.

The Ottomans are of the Muhammadan religion and of the Orthodox rite of the Imam Abu Hanife.

دینلری دین محمدی مذهبلی مذهب امام ابو حنیفه در.

Of what is the Osmanli language composed?

عثمانلو لسانی نهدن عبارتدر.

The Turkish language is primarily formed from the dialect of Turkestan to which are added some Arabic and Persian words and some from Polish, Hungarian, Greek, Italian and French.

شمدیکی حالده سویلن ترک لسانی اصل ترک لسانندن عربیدن فارسیدن له مجار روم اتالیان فرانسز لسانلرنک کلمات متنوعه سندن عبارتدر.

‘osmānli lisāni ne den ibāretdir.

shindiki halde suweylenen turk lisāni asl turk lisānından arabiden fārisiden leh, Majar Rum, Italian, Fransiz, lisānlarının kelimāti mu-tenevvi asından ibāretdir.

LITERATURE.

Can you give me a slight idea of the state of literature and science amongst the Ottomans?

علم الاداب یعنی معرفت ادبیات عثمانلورنک علم ادب ایله علم و فنلرنلرنک احوالنده بندکه بعض معلومات جزئیة ویر بیلورمیسکر.

‘ilm-ul-adab ya’ni marifeti edeb biyyāt ‘osmānilerinin ‘ilmi adab ile ‘ulum-u-fununlarının ahvālinden bendenize baei ma’lūmātī juz’iyye vere bilirmisiniz.

Long before the conquest of

فتح

fethi Qostaniniyyeden muqad-

Constantinople the Ottomans possessed authors in various styles.

Since that period they have had historians, astronomers, mathematicians, geographers, poets and moralists in large numbers.

Is there a complete history of the Ottoman Empire?

One does exist, formed by a series of annals compiled in succession by different authors, which united give a complete history of the Ottoman Empire from its foundation to the year 1775 A. D.

Hegira 1189.

Are these annals printed?

Yes the greater

Is there any

عثمانلارک انجاس مختلفه مؤلفلى وار ايدى .

اول وقتدان بو آنه کلتاجيه قدر مهندس رصاد مورخ شعرا جغرافيرين وادابه داير رساله تصنيف ايتيش بر چوق مصفلو عثمانلو بيند .

مکمل بر عثمانلو تاريخى بولنورمى .

سلسله مؤلفک تصنيف ايلدکلى تاريخلرک مجموعتلدن ال عثمانلک ابتداسلندن تاريخ عيسو يئک ۱۷۷۵ سننسى يعنى تاريخ هجرتک ۱۱۸۹ سننسنه قدر تکميل اولمش بر تاريخلرى وار در .

ذکر اولنان تاريخلرک بصمى بولنورمى .

اوت اکثريا بولنور .

اوروپا لسانلارنده بو ذکر اولنان تاريخ کتابلرک ترجمه بولمى .

dem 'osmānilarin ejnāsi mukhtelife mu'ellifleri var idi.

ol waqitden bu ane gelinjeye qadar muhendis rassād muerrikh shu'ara joğhرافیun veadabe dāyir risāle tasnif etmiş bir choq musannifler 'osmānli beyninde zuhur elmishdır.

mukemmel bir 'osmānli tārīkhī bulunurmi.

silsileyi mu'ellifin tasnif eyledikleri tārīkhlerin mejmu'ından ali 'osmānin ibtidāsından tārīkhī 'isevinin lwo senesi, yāni tārīkhī hijretin ۱۱۸۹ senesine qadar tekmil olmış bir tārīkhleri var dir.

zikir olunan tārīkhlerin basması bulunurmi.

evet ekseriyga bulunur.

avropa lisānlarında bu zikir olunan tārīkh kitābının terjumesi

ies, a celebrated orientalist
M. de Hammer made a lengthy
translation into German.

Independent of the Quoran
which serves as a basis for legis-
lation amongst all Moslem na-
tions, have the Ottomans any
special code of law?

Yes, this code is the «Mul-
taqa», first written in Arabic
about 1549 A. D. 956 Hegira by
Ibrahim Halebi: it was translated
into Turkish by Mehemed Mev-
qusati.

This work is still at the pre-
sent day the true and univer-
sally received code throughout
the Ottoman Empire.

How long has the art of
printing been known in Turkey?

دوب نىسە سىزچىدە نىسى مەشھۇر
اولان خامر نام مۆتىك لسان الغنىلە
جسىم تر ترجمەسى واردر.

بالجبلە سىل اسلامىەنك قانۇن
نامەسى اولان قران شىرىفنىڭ شىق-
تىلىنىڭ ئىختىساسى دىكر بر شىرىعت
كتابى وارمىدەر.

واردر بو كىتابك لىسى مەنقىدەكلە
مىسى وتارىخ عىسۋىنىك ۱۵۴۹ سىنىسى
يعنى تارىخ ھىجرىتك ۹۵۱ سىنىسىدە
ابراھىم ھلبى نىام مىصنىك تائىفى
اولىب مىكە كىمە مۆتىقاتى دىكلە
مىشھۇر ذات لسان تركى بىە ترجمە
ايتىشدر.

كىتاب مذكور حالا دىكى بالجلە
مىلك عثمانىيە جارى اولان قانۇن
نامە حقىقىدر.

فىن مىشكىسە طباعە مىالك
فىن عثمانىيەدە نە وقتىندىن بىپىدا اولدى.

تەبىئىيەتتىكى بىر قىسىم
مەشھۇر ۇلا Hammer نام مۇئەل-
لىمى لىسانى ئالمانىيادا جەسىم بىر تر-
جمەسى باردىر.

بىل-جۇملە مىلەلى ئىستانىيەنىڭ
قانۇن نامەسى ۇلان قۇرئانى شەرىف-
دەن باشقا ئوسمانلىلارغا مەككەدە
دىگر بىر شەرىيات كىتابى بارمىدەر.

واردىر بۇ كىتابىن ئىسمى مۇلتاقا
دەمەكلە مۇسەممما ۋە تارىكىكى ئىسە-
ۋىنىن ۱۵۴۹ سەنىسى يەنى تارىكىكى ھىج-
رىتىن ۹۵۱ سەنىسىدە ئىبراھىمى ھالەبى
نام مۇسەممەدىن تەلىفى ۇلۇپ سۇرا
مەھەممەدى مەنقىساتى دەمەكلە
مەشھۇر زات لىسانى تۇركىيە تر-
جمە ئىتمىشدر.

كىتابى مەزكۇر ھالا دىدا بىل-
جۇملە مەملىكى ئوسمانىيەدە جارى
ۇلان قانۇن نامەى ھاقىقىدەر.

فەننى مۇستەسەنەنى تەبىئەت مە-
ملىكى ئوسمانىيەدە نە ۋاقىتدەن-
بەرى پەيدا ۇلدى.

country, was said to be by the sea, and on the north by Russia, Transylvania and Hungary.

What are the great rivers of the Ottoman Empire in Europe?

There are two rivers, one is the Danube which rises in Germany, passes through Turkey in Europe, and is afterwards divided into six branches emptying themselves into the Black Sea. The other is the Maritza which rises in Roumelia and empties itself into the Ægean.

How is Turkey in Europe divided?

Into two parts, North and South. The North comprises six provinces, which are Moldavia, Wallachia, Bosnia, Servia, Bulgaria and Roumelia. The chief towns of these provinces are of

دور، واما سواى آنکه بى درياست، و در شمال آن روسيه، و در شمال و شمال غرب آن رومانيا و مجارستان است.

ممالک عثمانیه اروپاى آنهار کيوسى ندر.

ایکيدر بى طونه نهري که المانيا مالکند، نبع و مالک عثمانیه اروپاى بعد القطع التى قول المشرق بحر سياهه منصب اولور و اولورى مريچ صوبى که روم ايلنده منبى اولور بحر سفيده جزيران ايدر.

ممالک عثمانیه اروپاى آنهار نوجيله تقسيم اولور.

ایکى قسمة منقسم اولور بى شمالى و بى جنوبى جانب شمالى التى ايلاتى محيطدر بغداد و افلاق و بوسنة و صرب و بولغاريا و نفس روم ايليدر. ايلات بغداد که کريسيى بيلش قصبه سيدر که بغداد

and the Suez Canal, on the east by the Persian gulf and the gulf of Oman, on the south by the straits of Bab-el-Mandeb and the Indian Ocean.

* It covers an area of about 525 leagues in length and 470 in width.

The Arabs are all of a swarthy hue and profess the Moslem religion. They yield obedience to their Imam and to the Emirs and Sheikhs of their nation. Some of these last are subsidiary to the Sublime Porte, others are free and independent.

The greater part of Arabia is situated under the torrid zone and is subject to intense heat. The plains of sand, the mountains and arid deserts of which the interior of the country is composed,

کورفی و بحر مکیط و جنوباً ینہ
بحر مکیط و باب الہند یوقازی
ایلہ مکتط و مکتدود بر متصل بر
بیوک جزیرہ.

مسافۃ طولی تقریباً ۵۲۵ و مسافۃ عرض ۴۷۰ ساعتہ مبتددر.

قوم عرب جمعاً اسم الرن و دین اسلامدہ اولوب امام و امرا و شیوخ پایسندہ بر قناح حا کملرہ تبعیت ایدر انجف ذکر اولنان حا کملرہ بعضیسی دولت علیہ عثمانیہ بیہ تابع و بعضیاری دخی سربست و مستقلدر.

عربستانک اعظم قطعہ سی منطقۃ حارۃ تکئندہ اولمق تقریبیلہ
هواسندہ شدت کوما اولدیغندن
بشقه داخاندہ کثرت ریکستان
وترو بیابان و کوهستان و قلت الهار
واب روان و ندرت امطار و باران اولق

shargan basra kyurfezi ve-bahri muhit ve-jenuben gene bahri muhit ve-bab ul-mendeb boghazi ile muhatti ve-mahdud berre muttasil bir buyuk jezire dir.

mesafei tuli taqriben 525 saate sarzi 470. saate mumteddir.

qawmi arab jemiten esmer ul-levn ve-dini islamde olup iman verunera ve-shuyukh payesinde bir qach hakimlera tebeyyet eder anjaq zikr olunan hakimlerin bazisi devleti qaliyyei osmaniyye tabii ve-bazileri dakhi serbest ve-mustaqilldir.

arabistanin atzam qitasi mintaqai harre tahinda olmaq taqribile havasinda shiddeti germa oldugundan bashqa dakhilinde kesreti rigistan ve-berr u-beyaban venedreti emlar u-buran olmaq hase-

combined with the few streams and the scarcity of rain to water it, render this country a territory almost entirely sterile and uncultivated.

Still the sea coast is covered with fruit and cultivated fields, and is rich in cattle such as sheep and camels.

The natural products of Arabia are the most exquisite and varied perfumes, spices, drugs such as pepper, myrrh, musk, the balsam of Mecca, gum Arabic and many kinds of precious stones; but in the first rank of all these products we must place coffee, the superior quality of which makes it a very choice article of commerce.

حسیله اراضی اکثریا شور و غیر منبتدر.

bile arāzisi ekseriyye shure ve-ghairi munbitdir.

مع مافیہ سواحل دریاه اثمار و مرکبات و انعام و اشتر مثلو حیوانات بیکتی واردر.

ma' māfih sevāhili deriyāde es-mur ve-me'rūat u-aghnam ve-ushtur misilli hayvānāt bereketi vardir.

اصل محصولاتی روایح طیبہ متنوعه و بخور و بخر و مہر و عنبر و صبر و بلسان و صمغ عربی و اجناس جواهر مثلو اشیان و علی الاموص روایح اکثر اولان جنس اعلائی فہودن عبارتدر.

asl mahsulātı revāyihı tayyibei metenevri'a ve-bukhur ve-biber ve-murr u-camber ve-sabr ve-belsān ve-samghı arabı ve-ejnası jevāhir misilli ashyāden ve-alel khusus revajı ekser olan jinsi alai qahve-den ibaretdir.

در سور سور

com-

CHAPTER LI.

TURKISH PROVERBS *امثال* *durubi emsâl.*

1. The tongue has no bone, yet it breaks bones, *دلك كمكى dilin kemigi yoqdur amma kemigi qirar.*
2. Blind is he who falls twice into the same ditch *كهر kyur oldurki dushdugi quyuya bir daha dusher.*
3. The hero becomes known in the field, *يكت ايكييت yigit, igit, meydanda belli olur.*
4. Though friends be a thousand it is few, though the foe be one, it is many, *دوست بيك ايسه dost bin ise azdir dushman bir ise chogdur.*
5. A little stone will wound the head, *كچوك, كوچك تاش kuchuk tash bashi yarur.*
6. Dog devours not dog, *كوپك كوپكى يمز kyupek kyupeyi yemez.*
7. Two captains sink the ship, *باتررلر ايكي رآيس بر كمى iki re'is bir gemi batirirlar.*
8. What wish the blind? Two eyes, *كورك استندوكى نه در kyurun istedigi ne dir? iki gyuz.*
9. Whence you thought not starts the fox, *ظن اتمدوكك zann etmediyin yerden tilki chiqar.*
10. He who is (born) to be hanged will not be drowned, *اصلاجق صيه بوغولماز asilajag suya boghulmaz.*
11. Stretch out your feet according to your quilt, *بورغانكه yurghanina gyure ayaghini uzat.*

12. Who wants the rose must seek it among thorns, کلی استین دکنلرند استمک کرک *gyulu isteyen dikenlerde istemek gerek.*
13. Kiss the hand you cannot cut off اویپ کسمدییک الی *kesemediyin eli up.*
14. A wise enemy is better than a foolish friend عقللو دشمن عقلسز دوستدن ایودر *'aqilli dushman 'aqilsiz dostdan iyidir.*
15. The small must follow the great, کوچک بیوکه تابع اولملو *kyuchuk buyuge tabii olmalı.*
16. For one wise man we find two foolish, ایکسی دلی ییه *iki deliya bir uslu gomushlar.*
17. He who ran from rain met with the hail, یغموردن، یاغموردن قاجن طولویه اوغرادى *yaghmurdan qachan doluya oghradi.*
18. Who goes quickly, tires quickly, قیز کیدن تیز یورلور *tez ghiden tez yorulur.*
19. Woman's advice is good for wómen قارینک نصیحتی *qarinin nasihati qarilara gecher.*
20. They drive from the city him who speaks the truth, doghru طوغری، طوغرو سویلینی شهردن فولرلر *suweyleyeni shehirden qovarlar.*
21. Evil follows him who works it, یارامزه کندو بلاسی یتر *yaramaza kendi belasi yeter.*
22. The horse dies, his saddle remains.
Man dies, his name remains.
آت اولور سمری قالور *at eulur semeri qalir.*
انسان اولور آدی قالور *insan eulur adi qadir.*
23. Who falls by his own fault does not weep, کندیدن *kendiden dushen aghlamaz*
24. Who seeks a faultless friend will remain friendless,

- aypsiz dost آیین دوست قالور
arayan dostsiz qalir.
25. Man is the mirror of man, انسان انسانک اینهسی در
insan insānin aynasi dir.
26. From the thorn grows the rose and from the rose
the thorn, دیکندن کل بتر کلدن دیکن di-
kenden gyul biter gyulden diken.
27. I have no strength, says the lazy, تنبل قونم یوقدر
tenbel quvvetim yoqdur deyor.
28. Where there is no cat, will the mice raise their heads,
کدی بولنمدوغی ییرده صدچانلر باش قالدر
kedi bulunmadighi yerde sichanlar bash qal-
dirir.
29. The mouth becomes not sweet by saying «honey»,
بال بال دیمکله اغز طنلو اولماز
bal bal deme-
kile aghiz tatli olmaz.
30. Do not look a gift horse in the mouth, بخشیش آتک
bakhshish atin dishine baqilmaz.
31. Think of what you will say, thon speak, دیه جککی فکر
ایله (صکره) سویله diyejegini fkr eyle songra,
sora, suweyle.
32. He would sell the crow calling it a nightingale قارغیدی
qarghayi bulbul deye satar.
33. The sick man is not asked if he wants a bed, خستیه
khashtaya dushek sorulmaz.
34. It is hard to serve a young lord, کنج بکه خدمت
genj beye khizmet gyuchdir.
35. Truth is bitter, حق سوز آجی اولور haqq suz aji olur.
36. Eat and drink with your friend, but do no business
with him, دوست ایله یه ایچ الش ویریش اتمه
dost ile ye ich alish verish etme.

37. Out of sight, out of mind, کوزدن اوزاق اولان کوکلدن
 گوزدن اوزاق *gyuzden uzaq olan gyunuldan
 dakhi uzaq.*
38. Man deceives man but once, آدم آدمی بر کره الدادر
adam adami bir kerre aldadir.
39. There is no fat soup from a lean fowl, ارق طاوقدن
 سبیز ترید اولماز *ariq tavuqdan semiz terid
 olmaz.*
40. Who asks of the stingy digs a pit in the sea, طمعکاردن
 شیمی دیلیین دکرده جقور اچار *tama'kyārdan
 sheyi dileyen denizde choqur achar.*
41. It needs nails to scratch, قاشمنغه طرناق طرناق استر
qashinmagha tirnaq ister.
42. Though we have no wealth let us have honour, مالیز
 بوغیسه عرضمز اولسون *malimiz yoghusa ırzımız
 olsun.*
43. From forethought comes safety اولور احتیاطدن سلامت
ihtiyātdan selāmet olur.
44. The man who falls once will fall no more, بر دفعه
 دوشمن آدم بر دخی دوشمز *bir defa dusheh
 adam bir daha dushmez.*
45. You cannot deceive a fox, تلکی دیلکی الداتلماز
tilki aldatilmaz.
46. He who gives to the rich takes water to the sea,
 زنگینه مال ویرن دکره صو کنور *zengine māl
 veren deniza su getirir.*
47. He who would live at peace, must be deaf, blind and
 راحت استین آدم صاغر کور دلسز اوللو *rahat isteyen adam saghir, kyur, dilsiz ol-
 mali.*
48. Don't make mysteries of trifles, کدی بوقنی اورتز کبی

سړینی کډی boqunu eurter gibi sirrini
saqliyor.

49. He who turns towards two Kiblas has no faith, اېکى
iki qiblaya tapanda
din olmaz.
50. What you give, you will take with you, هر نه ويرسن
her ne verirsen elin
ile o gelir seninle.
51. Take the hand of the fallen, and God will take thee
دوشمشلرك النى طوت ربى الكدن
dushmushlerin elini tut rabbi elinden
seni tutar.
52. What God has written on the brow will come to
pass, باشه يازلمش كلهجك
allāhdan
basha yazilmish gelejek.
53. Every one ignores his own faults, هر كس كندو عيبنى
her kes kendi aybini bilmez.
54. Be not friendly with the wicked, but take example
يارامزله ايله يار اولمه ايلردن
yaramazlar ile yar olma iyilerden
‘ibret. al.
55. He who gives to the poor, gives to the Lord, فقرالره
fugaralara veren allāha verir.
56. He who guides us aright and advises us is our best
friend, بزي ايو يوله كتورن واوگوت ويرن
bizi iyi yola getiren ve-
ugut veren o en buyuk dostumuzdur.
57. Do not seek or desire impossibilities, ممكن سز اولان
mumkin siz olan shey-
leri arama ve arzulama.
58. Death is the comfort of the poor, فقيرلرک تسلى سى اولدور
faqirlarin tesellisi ulumdur.

59. As we live, so we die, *ياشارساق اويله اولورز*
nasl ki yasharsaq uyle uluruz.
60. Who undertakes too much accomplishes little, *چوغه*
تأليف اولان از بريسنه يتشور *chogha te'lif*
olan az birisine yetishir.
61. The tongue kills more than the sword, *دل قليجدن*
جوق اولدور *dil qilijdan choq uldurur.*
62. Sit cross legged but speak uprightly, *اکرى اوتور*
دوغرو طوغرى سويله *egri otur doghru*
suweyle.
63. If you come with empty hands you are told «the master
 is asleep», but if you bring a gift they say.
 «Sir, pray walk in», *تهى دست فيويه وارسن*
افندى اويونور ديرلر الكده بخشيش وار ايسه
tehi dest qapiya varsan efendi
uyuyor derler elinde bakhshish var isa efendim
buyur derler.
64. Patience is the key of happiness, *صبر ايلمك شاذلق*
اناختاريدر *sabr eylemek shāzliq anakhtaridir.*
65. To-day's egg is better than to-morrow's fowl, (a bird
 in the hand is worth two in the bush, *بو*
كونكى يمرطه يارينكى طاوقدن بكدور *bu gyunki*
yimurta yarinki tawuqdan yeydir.
66. After sorrow comes joy, *عسردن صكره يسر واردر*
sora yusr vardir.
67. He who fears God does not fear man, *تكردن قورقن*
تنگريدان قورقان ادامدن قورقماس
tangridan qorqan adamdan qorq-
maz.
68. To err is mine, to forgive is thine, *خطا بندن عطا سندن*
khata benden ata senden. *
69. One egg to one's self is better than a fowl that is

- shared, اورتەلق طاوقدن يالکز ييمورطه ايسودر
ortalıq tawuqdan yaliniz yimurta iyidir.
70. Loss is the sister of gain, ضرر فائدەنك همشیرهسى در
zarar fa'idenin hemshiresi dir.
71. Would you shut the stable door, after the horse is stolen? ات اوغرلندقدنصكرمى اخورك فيوسنى
at oghurlandıqdansorami akhırin qapı-sini qaparsın.
72. He who knows much is often mistaken, چوق بلن
choq bilen choq yangilir.
73. Who weeps for every one, ends by losing his eyes, هر كس ايچون اغليان كوزسز قالور
her kes ichin ichun aghlayan gyuzsiz qalır.
74. A fisher must accustom himself to troubled waters, بالف اولاييجى كوتى صوده كرك
balıq avlayıji kyutu suda gerek.
75. Lovers are blind, عاشق اولان كوردر
āshiq olan kyurdur.
76. The neighbour's fowl appears a goose. قوكشمو طاوغى
qomshu, tawughu qomshuya qaz gyurunur.
77. He who has not suffered sorrow does not understand the value of joy, جفايى چكمين آدم صفانك
jefayi chekmeyen adam safanın qadrini bilmez.
78. Who is a liar? He who repeats what he hears. يالانجى
yalanji kimdir ishıtdigini suweyleyendir.
79. There is no one faultless and no sin but may be repented of, قول خطاسز اولماز
qul khatasız olmaz. خطا توبەسز اولماز. khata tevbesiz, tubesiz olmaz.

80. Who laughs much will weep much.

چوق كولين *choq gyulen*
چوق اغلار. *choq aghlar.*

81. The head may be given, the secret never, باش وېرمك
اولور سر وېرمك اولماز *bash vermek olur sirr*
vermek olmaz.

82. Who goes too often to his friend will see a sour face,
دوسته چوق وارن اكشى صورت كورر *dosta*
choq varan ekshi suret gyurur.

83. A thousand tears cannot pay one debt, بىك تاسه بر
بورج اودهمز *bin t̄asa bir borj eudemiz.*

84. Listen a thousand times, speak once, بىك ايشمت بر
سويله *bin ishit, bir suweyle.*

85. The wolf changes his fur, but he does not change his
قورت تويى دكشدرمز خوينى دكشدرمز *qurt tuyunu degishdirir khuyunu degishdirmez.*

86. The uncaught thief is more honest than the Bey,
توتولميان اوغرى بكدن طوغرى *tutulmayan oghru*
beyden doghru.

87. Say not all things; the earth has ears, هر سوز سويلمه
كه يرک قولاغى وار *her suz suweyleme ki yerin*
qulaghi var.

88. They said to the raven «who are beauties?», he said,
قوزغونه كوزل كيملر ديمشلمز بنم «my chicks»,
ياورولرم ديمش *quzghuna gyuzel kimdir demishler*
benim yawrularim demish.

89. Speak sweetly to the sweet, تاتلييه تاتلو سويله *tatliya*
tatli suweyle.

90. The iron is struck while it is hot, ديمر تيمور تاونده دوكلور
demir, timur, tawunda duyulur.

91. You cannot sell the fish in the sea, دپناده كى بالق
ساتلماز *deryādaki baliq satilmaz.*

92. He who rises in anger, sits down in sorrow, غضب
 ايله قالقان زيان ايله اوتورر, *ghazab ila*
qalqan ziyān ila oturur.
93. A live fox is better than a dead lion, باتان ارسلاندن,
 درى کرن تلکى, دلکى يکدر *yatan arslandan,*
aslandan diri gezen tilki yegdir.
94. From heart to heart there is a path, يورکدن يورکه
 بول وار *yurekden yurege yol var.*
95. There is nothing better than this; «I know not, I saw
 not», اندن ايوسى يوقدر نه بلورم نه کوردم
andan iyisi yoqdur ne bilirim ne gyurdum.
96. Become not a debtor for gifts; they will demand them
 at the wedding or fête, هديه بورجلو اولما يا
 دوننده استرلر يا بيرامده *hediyeye borjlu olma*
ya dugunde isterler ya beyramda.
97. The camel kneels down in the place of the camel,
 دوه دوه يرينه چوکر *deve deve yerine chuker.*
98. Be friendly with all, but be beholden to none, جهانده
 يار اولما *jihanda yar ol bar olma.*
99. Every accident is a lesson (for the future), هر زيان بر
 فن, فند *her ziyān öir fen, fend.*
100. Dogs laugh at a sleeping wolf, قورت اويقوده کويکک,
 مسخرهسى اولور *qurt uyquda kyupegin mas-*
kharasi olur.
101. Bagdad is not far to the lover (meaning love sur-
 mounts all obstacles), عاشقه بغداد اوزاق دکل
āshiqā Baghdad uzaq digil.
102. Some laugh, others weep. کيمينه هاى هاى کيمينه
 وای وای *kimina hāy hay kimina vwāy vwāy.*
103. The heedless head helps the foe, غافل باش دشمنه
 يارشور *ghāfil bash dushmana yarashir.*

104. Every tree has its shadow, هر اغاجك كولكوسى وار *her aghajin gyulgusu var.*

105. Everything has an end, هر شيك صوكى وار *her sheyin sonu var.*

CHAPTER LII.

DIPLOMATIC, NAVAL AND MILITARY TERMS.

امور باكریه	<i>umur-u Bahriyye,</i>	} naval, sea-affairs, sea-service.
باكرى	<i>Bahri,</i>	
دونمايه متعلق	<i>donanmaya-mutavalliq,</i>	} admiralty.
دونما	<i>donanma,</i>	
باكریه قپوسى	<i>bahriyye-qapisi,</i>	} admiral.
ديوانخانه	<i>diwankhane,</i>	
باكریه پاشاسى	<i>bahriyye-pashasi,</i>	} admiral.
اميرال	<i>amiral,</i>	
فيطان پاشا	<i>qapudan-pasha,</i>	} Lord High admiral.
قيودان دريا	<i>qapudani-derya,</i>	
باكریه فريقي	<i>bahriyye-feriqi,</i>	} vice-admiral of the fleet.
پترونه پاشا	<i>patruna-pāshā,</i>	
ارياله پاشا	<i>iriyala-pasha,</i>	} rear-admiral.
ريالا پاشا	<i>riyala-pashā,</i>	
ليمن رايسى پاشا	<i>liman-re'isi pāsha,</i>	} admiral superintendent.
سناجق كيميسى	<i>sanjaq-gemisi,</i>	
پاشا كيميسى	<i>pasha-gemisi,</i>	} flagship, admiral's ship.
قيودانه	<i>qapudane,</i>	
سوارى	<i>suwārī,</i>	} captain.
قيودان	<i>qapudān,</i>	
رئيس	<i>re'is,</i>	} captain (generally for merchant ships).

ملازم قپودان	<i>mulazim qapudan,</i>	} commander.
ایکینجی	<i>ikinji,</i>	
یوزباشی	<i>yuzbashi,</i>	lieutenant.
کمیجی	<i>gemiji,</i>	} sailor.
کشتیان	<i>keshtiban,</i>	
بحرہ تفنگچیسی	<i>bahriyya-tufenkjisi,</i>	} marine soldier.
بوش بوتقال	<i>bosh-putqal,</i>	
جنگ کمیسی	<i>jenk-gemisi,</i>	man-of-war.
کمی	<i>gemi,</i>	} ship.
تکنہ	<i>tekne,</i>	
سفینہ	<i>sefine,</i>	
کشتی	<i>keshti,</i>	
پارہ	<i>para,</i>	
قطعہ	<i>qita</i>	
یلکن کمیسی	<i>yelken-gemisi,</i>	sailing ship.
واپور	<i>vapor,</i>	} steamer, steamboat.
حرخ کمیسی	<i>charkh-gemisi,</i>	
واپور جرخ	<i>vapor-charkhi,</i>	} steam-engine.
واپور عربہسی	<i>vapor-arabasi,</i>	
تاجار کمیسی	<i>tujjūr-gemisi,</i>	merchant ship.
جرخ کمیسی	<i>charkh-gemisi,</i>	paddle-steamer.
وبدلی کمیسی	<i>vidali-gemisi,</i>	screw-steamer.
عسکر کمیسی	<i>asker-gemisi,</i>	a troop-ship.
بکک کمیسی	<i>beylik-gemisi,</i>	a government ship.
اوج درکلی	<i>uch-direkli,</i>	three-masted (ship).
فرقنیں	<i>firqatin,</i>	} frigate.
فرقتہ	<i>firqata,</i>	
فرانہ	<i>furqata,</i>	
فرقتہ	<i>furqata,</i>	
فرقتون	<i>firqatun,</i>	
فرقتون	<i>firqatun,</i>	
قروروت	<i>qorvet,</i>	corvette.

- ابريق *ibriq*, brig, brigantine.
 غولت *gholet*, | schooner.
 اسقونه *usquna*,
 قورسان *qursan*, privateer, pirate.
 درك *direk*, mast.
 غابيه چيوغى *ghabiya-chibughu*, top mast.
 بابافنگو چيوغى *babafingo-chibughu*, top gallant mast.
 پرووه ديركى *pruwa-diregi*, mizen mast.
 مايستره ديركى *mayistra-diregi*, main mast,
 غراندى ديركى *ghrandi-diregi*,
 مچانه ديركى *qontra-majane-diregi*, astern mast.
 فايق *qayiq*, a boat or a ship (barque) with sharp
 prow and stern, formerly used by the Turks
 in their naval warfare.
 اسپلاته *ispilata*, (Italian) barque, pontoon, bridge
 of boats.
 تومباز *tombaz*, barque, pontoon.
 قاديرغه *qadirgha*, galley.
 قرلانغچ سفينه سى *qirlanghij sefinesi*, a sailing coaster.
 سرن *seren*, yard.
 يلكن *yelken*, a sail.
 يلكن اچماق *yelken-achmaq*, to set sail.
 يلكن باغلاماق *yelken-baghlamaq*, to furl sails.
 يلكنلو *yelkenli*, under sail, sailing.
 ترينكته يلكنى *tirinkete yelkeni*, fore-mast sail.
 مايستره *mayistra*,
 مايستره يلكنى *mayistra, yelkeni*, } main-sail.
 مايستره سرنى *mayistra-sereni*, the main-yard.
 اورته ديركى *orta-diregi*, fore-mast.
 اورته يلكنى *orta-yelkeni*, fore-sail.
 اوكرغه *ongurgha (omurgha)*, keel.
sentina, hold, of a ship.

- قیچ *qich*, stern, poop of a ship.
 کمینک اوکی *geminin-eunu* prow, stem of a ship.
 انبار *anbar*, the hold of a ship, a gundeck in a man-of-war.
 پلامار *palamar*, a hawser.
 تیمور دمیر *timur demir*,
 لنگر *lenger*, } anchor.
 تیمور دمیر براقماق *timur demir braqmaq*,
 نیمور دمیر اتمق » *atmaq*, } let go the anchor.
 لنگر انداز اولماق *lenger-endaz olmaq*, }
 تیمور دمیر قالدیرماق *timur demir qaldirmaq*, } heave up the an-
 لنگر قالدیرماق *lenger qaldirmaq*, } chor.
 اورغانلری الاتی *geminin palamar* جملة پلامار یله *ila jumle orghanlari-alati*, *tagim*, ship's gear.
 سانجاق *sanjaq*,
 بیراق *bayraq*, } flag.
 باندرا *bandara*, }
 علم *‘alem*, } standard.
 لوا *liwa*, }
 سانجاق همایون *sanjaqi-humayun*, Imperial standard.
 سانجاق اچماق *sanjaq achmaq*, to unfurl the standard.
 سانجاق دیکمک *sanjaq dikmek*, to plant the standard.
 سانجاق دیرگی *sanjaq-diregi*,
 سانجاق کوندری *sanjaq-gyunderi*, } flagstaff.
 صندال *sandal*, a large boat.
 قایق *qayiq*,
 فلوکه *filiga*,
 فلیکه *filiga*, } ship's boat, cutter, yawl.
 فلکه *filiga*, }
 قایق *gayiq*, captain's gig.
 دومن *dumen*, rudder.

دومن یککسی	<i>dumenyekesi,</i>	} helm.
یکه	<i>yeke,</i>	
کیرک	<i>kyurek,</i>	oar.
قانچه	<i>qanja,</i>	grapnel.
بوسوله	<i>busula,</i>	} (mariner's) compass.
بوسوله	<i>busla, pusla,</i>	
پوصله	<i>busla, pusla,</i>	
خریطه	<i>kharita,</i>	} chart.
خارتی	<i>kharti,</i>	
خارطی		
خرطى		
جزر و مد	<i>jezr-u-medd,</i>	tide ebb and flow.
دکز	<i>deniz,</i>	} sea,
دریا	<i>derya,</i>	
طائفه	<i>dalgha,</i>	موج <i>mevj,</i> wave.
لیمان	<i>liman,</i>	port, harbour.

DIPLOMATIC TERMS.

تحریرات	<i>tahrirat,</i>	despatches, official letters: as a Turkish singular, a despatch.
تذکره	<i>tezkere,</i>	a note, billet, missive.
تقریر	<i>taqrir,</i>	an official report, a diplomatic note.
تلخیص	<i>telkhis,</i>	the customary report laid by the grand vizier before the sultan daily on current affairs.
مضبوطه	<i>mazbata,</i>	a protocol, a procès-verbal, a report.
تعلیمات	<i>ta'limat,</i>	instructions.
اخبار	<i>ikhbar,</i>	notification.
خبر رسمی	<i>khabe-i resmi,</i>	official information, notification.

خبر غیر رسم	<i>khaber-i ghayr-i resmi,</i>	{ confidential, unofficial notification.
خبر ماکرمانی	<i>khaber-i mahremani,</i>	
ایلچی	<i>elchi,</i>	ambassador.
سفارت	<i>sefaret,</i>	an embassy, legation.
سفیر	<i>sefir,</i>	envoy.
مصلحتگذار	<i>maslahatgyuzar,</i>	a chargé d'affaires, an agent.
سر کاتبی	<i>sirr-kyatibi,</i>	{ a private secretary.
کاتب الاسرار	<i>kyatib ul-esrar,</i>	
کاتب الحروف	<i>kyatib ul-huruf,</i>	{ the writer of the printed letter.
راقم الحروف	<i>raqim ul-huruf,</i>	
شرط	<i>shart,</i>	{ a diplomatic convention, condition.
مقاوله	<i>mugavele,</i>	
مقاوله سندی	<i>mugavele senedi,</i>	a written agreement.
عهد نامه	<i>ahd-name,</i>	a written treaty (of peace).
ولیء عهد	<i>veli-i-ahd,</i>	heir presumptive, crown prince.
عهد اوزره	<i>ahd-uzre,</i>	uzere, according to agreement.
اتفاق معاهده سی	<i>ittifaq mu'ahedesi,</i>	treaty of alliance.
تجارت عهد نامہ سی	<i>tijūret ahd namesi,</i>	treaty of commerce.
متارکہ	<i>mutareke,</i>	armistice.
برات	<i>berat,</i>	a warrant, diploma, letters-patent.
مادہ	<i>madde,</i>	an article, a paragraph (of a treaty).
شروط	<i>shurut,</i>	conditions, provisos.
مساعده	<i>musāade,</i>	assistance given as a favour, concession.
مساعدهء سنیہ	<i>musāade-i-seniyye,</i>	Imperial (Ottoman) assistance.
فراغت	<i>feraghat,</i>	the giving up, concession.
تضمین	<i>tazmin,</i>	indemnity, a making reparation for injury.
ادعا	<i>iddia,</i>	a pretension, claim.
مباحثہ	<i>mubahese,</i>	a treating, discussing (a question).
اساس	<i>esas,</i>	basis, fundamental principle.

قاعده *qāʿide*, a rule (in diplomatic conduct).
 اول قاعده اوزره *ol qāʿide uzere, uzre*, upon that rule of conduct,

قرار *qarar*,
 نتیجه *netije*, } conclusion.
 نتیجه کلام *netije-i-kelam*, } in short, in fine, the re-
 نتیجه سی *netijesi*, } sult of the discourse.

Army, اردو, اوردو *ordu*.

اردو *ordu*,
 عسکر *asker*,
 لشکر *leshker*, } an army.
 طوائف عسکریه *tertib-i tawayif-i askeriyye*, organi-
 zation of the army.

دارشوری عسکر *dar-i shura-i askeri*, the war office.
 تنقیحات عسکریه *tenqihat-i askeriyye*, reduction of the army.
 عسکر بجه *askerije*, in a military style.

معسكر *muasker*,
 اردو, اوردو *ordu*,
 عسکر گاه *asker gāh*,
 اردو گاه *ordu gāh*, } a camp of an army.
 سرعسکر پاشا *ser-asker Pasha*, the minister of war, a
 military commander-in-chief.

سرعسکر قپوسی *ser-asker qapusi*, the ministry of war,
 war office.

سرعسکر لک *ser-askerlik*, the office and dignity of the
 secretary of state for war.

عسکر یازماق *asker yazmaq*, to recruit soldiers.
 بوقلامق, یوقلامق عسکر *asker yoqlamaq*, to inspect the army
 in passing it in review.

عساكر منصوره *esakir-i-mansura*, the (God)-aided (i.e. Ot-
 toman) army.

قپوجی باشی *qāpuji-bashi*, chamberlain.

شیخ الاسلام *sheykhu-l-islām*, the chief doctor-of-law in Turkey (his office being at once equal to those of the Lord Chancellor and Archbishop of Canterbury in England).

شیخ الحرم *sheykhu-l-Harem*, the Prince, or Governor of Mecca or Medina.

سرعسکر *ser-asker*,

مشیر *mushir*,

پاشا *pasha*,

سردار *serdar*,

سرکرده *serkerde*,

فریق *feriq*, lieutenant-general.

میرلوا *miri-liwa*, major-general, brigadier.

مشیر *mushir*, is a title for secretary of state, general of an army, governor-general of a province and commander-in-chief of the army of that province.

والی *wali*, a governor-general of a province (*vilāyet*); this title used to be given to the Pashas of Egypt, of Tunis, of Tripoli, and of Algiers.

The highest civil grade is that of Vezir وزیر; the holders of this have the title of Pasha.

رتبه بالا *rutbe-i-bala*, the second civil grade; the holders have the title Bey.

میر مجلس *miri-mejlis*, president of the council.

میر الامرا *mir-ul-umerā*,

میر امرا *mir-i-umerā*,

میر میران *mir-i-mirān*,

میر آخور *mir-i-akhor*,

امراخور *emrakhor*,

} governor of a district.

} master of the horse.

- میر الی *mir-alay*, colonel.
- قائم مقام الی *qa'im-maqam, qaymaqam*, lieutenant-colonel.
- الی امینی *alay-emini*, a military officer of the new regular army, ranking next to the lieutenant-colonel, who has charge of the stores and accounts of the regiment; both title and rank are now abolished and merged into the commissariat.
- الی بکی *alay beyi*, colonel of a cavalry regiment.
- الی طوبی *alay topu*, field-artillery.
- چرخه طوبی *charkha-topu*, field-piece.
- بیوک ضابط *bujuk-zabit*, field-officer.
- بیوک تعلیم کونی *biyuk-ta'lim-gyunu*, field-day.
- خاصه عسکری *khassa-askeri*, } the Guards.
- عساکر خاصه *asakiri-khassa*, }
- الی مالی *alay-malay*, one over the other, all together, as when a crowd rushes.
- الی باغلامق *alay-baghlamaq*, } the regiment to encamp
- الی قورمق *alay-qurmaq*, } and pitch its tents.
- صلح باغلامق *sulh-baghlamaq*, to make peace, conclude a peace.
- بیکباشی *binbashi*, major.
- صاغ قول اغاسی *sagh qol aghasi*, brigade-major.
- طابور مارور *tabur-mazhor*, drum-major.
- یوز باشی *yuz-bashi*, captain.
- ملازم *mulazim*, lieutenant.
- بیراقدار *bayraqdar*, a standard-bearer.
- الی امینی *alay-emini*, adjutant.
- خزینہ دار *khaznadar*, a treasurer, paymaster.
- خزینہ عامره *khazina-i amira*, the imperial treasury.
- خزینہ اغاسی *khazine aghasi*, treasurer, also a colonel of Janissaries.

- خزینہ دار اغاسی *khaznadar aghasi*, treasurer of the Harem.
 خزینہ دار باشی *khaznadar bashi*, first treasurer of the imperial palace.
 خزینہ کتخداسی *khazna ketkhdasi*, } second treasurer.
 خزینہ کاخیاسی *khazna kakhyasi*, }
 خزینہ اوطہسی *khazna odasi*, treasury of the imperial palace.
 ھیکم *heykim*, } doctor.
 طبیب *tabib*, }
 جراح *jerrah*, surgeon.
 قول اغاسی *gol aghasi*, second lieutenant.
 چاوش باش *bash chawush*, sergeant-major.
 چاوش *chawush*, a sergeant.
 چاوش باشی *chawush-bashi*, chief baron of the court of chancery.
 اونباشی *onbashi*, corporal.
 عسکر *asker*, } a soldier.
 نفر *nefer*, }
 ردیف عسکری *redif-askeri*, a reserve-man.
 عسکر عاجمیسسی *asker-ajemisi*, a recruit.
 عسکر طوپلامق *yengi-asker-toplamaq*, to recruit.
 فرقة *firgat*, a division.
 الای *alay*, regiment.
 طابور *tabur*, battalion.
 بلوک *buluk*, a company.
 لواء *liwa*, brigade.
 طاقم *taqim*, a squad.
 پیاده عسکری *piyāde-askeri*, } infantry.
 عسکرک پیادهسی *askerin piyādesi*, }
 بالطنہ جی، بالطنہ جی *baltaji*, a pioneer.
 کدخداسی *baltajilar-ketkhdasi*, the officer of pioneers.

قول *qol*, } a column, of troops.
 طابور *tabur*, }
 اورتا *orta*, middle of the army; it also meant a
 regiment of Janissaries.

صاغ قول *sagh qol*, right wing.
 صول قول *sol qol*, left wing.

Cavalry.

سواری عسکری *suwari-askeri*, } cavalry.
 اتلو عسکر *atli-asker*, }
 اتلو باشی *atli-bashi*, a cavalry officer.
 اتلو تufenkji *atli tufenkji*, a dragoon.
 بلوک *buluk*, a horse-squadron, a troop.

Lancers.

مزراقلو *mizraqli*, lancers.
 مزراقجی *mizraqji*, a lancer.

Dragoons.

قلاجلو اتلو عسکر *qilijli-atli-asker*, dragoons.
 قلاجلو اتلو عسکری *qilijli-alti askeri*, a dragoon.

Cuirassiers.

جبہلو عسکری *jebeli askeri*, cuirassiers.
 جبہلو نفر *jebeli nefer*, a cuirassier.

Artillery.

طوپلر *toplar*, } artillery.
 عسکری طوپجی *topju-askeri*, }
 بطاریہ *batariya*, a battery.

- طوپاجی نفر *topju-nefer*, artilleryman.
 چرخ طوبی *charkh-topu*, field-gun, piece.
 ابوس *obus*,
 ادبوز طوبی *obuz-topu*, { howitzer.
 طوب سلاملی *top-selamlıji*, a salute of guns.
 پاتردیسی طوب *top-patirdisi*, cannonade.
 شنلی طوب *top-shenliyi*, salvo of cannons.
 قونداغی طوب *top-qondaghi*, carriage of a cannon.
 فالیه سی طوب *top-faliasi*, the touch-hole of a cannon.
 عربہ سی طوب *top-arabasi*, carriage of a cannon (in field-artillery).
 طوب طاقمی *top-taqimi*, all materials or mounting of a cannon.
 طوب منزلی *top-menzili*, the range of a cannon.
 کورلدیسی طوب *top gyurultisi*, a cannonade.
 کله سی طوب *top gyulesi*, a cannon ball.
 میخلنمش طوب *mikhlanmish top*, spiked cannon.
 قوغوشی طوب *top qoghushi*, platform of a cannon.
 طیبہ طوبی *tabia-topu*, a siege-gun.
 الای طوبی *alay-topu*, a field-gun.
 هاون *haven, hawan*, a mortar for firing shells.
 طوباجی عسکری *topju askeri*, artillery-man.
 خمبرہ جی *qombaraji*, bombardier.

Engineers.

- استیکھام طاہوری *istihkyam taburu*, engineers.
 لغھمچی *laghimji*, sapper.
 پیادہ نفر *piyade nefer*, infantry soldier.
 اتلو *atli*, cavalrymen.
 صف *saff*,
 صرہ *sira*, } rank.

نفرات	<i>neferat</i> , rank and file.	
قشلا	<i>qishla</i> ,	} barracks.
قشلاغ	<i>qishlagh</i> ,	
قره قوڭ	<i>qaraqol</i> ,	} a guard of soldiers or policemen.
قراغول	<i>qaraghol</i> ,	
قراول	<i>qaraol</i> ,	
قراول	<i>qarawul</i> ,	
قراغل	<i>qaraghul</i> ,	
قوللق	<i>qulluq</i> , a guard house.	
اوردونك قره قولى	<i>ordunun qaraqhulu</i> , <i>qara-</i> <i>golu</i> , avant-garde of an army.	
مستحفظين عسكرى	<i>mustahfizin-askeri</i> ,	} garrison.
اوطراق عسكرى	<i>oturaq-askeri</i> ,	
موجود اولان عسكر	<i>qal'ada mevjud olan</i>	
	<i>asker</i> ,	
عسكر قومق	<i>asker qomaq</i> ,	} to be in garrison.
عسكر اوطورمق	<i>asker oturmaq</i> ,	
سلاح	<i>silâh</i> , arms.	
طوپ	<i>top</i> , cannon.	
تفنك	<i>tufenk</i> , <i>tufek</i> , musket.	
سونكى	<i>sungu</i> , bayonet.	
قرايينه	<i>qarabina</i> , carbine.	
قلج	<i>qilij</i> , sword.	
طبانجه	<i>tabanja</i> ,	} pistol.
پشطو	<i>pishtow</i> ,	
خنجر	<i>khanjer</i> , <i>khanchar</i> , dagger.	
جبخانه	<i>jeb-khane</i> , powder magazine.	
باروت	<i>barut</i> , gunpowder.	
كله	<i>gyulle</i> , a cannon ball.	
صالقم	<i>salqim</i> , grape-shot.	
قمبره قومباره خميره	<i>qombara</i> , shell.	
قورشون	<i>qurshun</i> , bullet.	

قورشون ياراسى *qurshun-yarasi*, gunshot wound.

صاچمه *sachma*, small shot.

چادر *chadir*,
خرگاه *khargyah*, } tent.

نوبتجى *nubetji*, } sentry, sentinel, footman, military

نوبجى *nubeji*, } musician.

نوبت بکلمک *nubet beklemek*, to mount guard.

هواده کياجه لمسى *askerin havada geyjelemesi*, bivouac.

استحکامات *istihkyamat*, fortifications.

استحکام ویرمک *orduya istihkyam vermek*, to fortify the camp.

استحکام ویرمک *istihkyam vermek*, } to fortify.

متانت ویرمک *metanet vermek*, }

قلعه پلنقه *qal'a, qayle, palangha*, fortress, fort.

طابيه *tabiya*, } redoubt.

پلنقه پالانقه پلانقه *palangha*, }

قلعه دیواری *qal'a diwari*, } rampart.

قلعه بدنى *qal'a bedeni*, }

چناق قلعهسى *chanaq qalasi*, the forts at the Dardanelles.

خندق *hendeq*, ditch.

محاصره *muhāsara*, siege.

محاصره بریه *muhāsara-i berriyye*, land siege.

محاصره بحریه *muhāsara-i bahriyye*, } blockade.

ابلقه *abloqa*,

لغم *laghim*, mine.

لغملق *laghimlamaq*, to mine.

یوروش *yuruyush*, } assault.

هجوم *hujum*,

هجوم ایتک *hujum etmek*, } to assault.

یوروش ایتک *yuruyush etmek*,

هجومه دایانمق *hujuma dayanmaq*, to resist an attack.

هجوملو *hujumli*, impetuous.

غلبه	<i>ghalebe,</i>	} victory..
نصرت	<i>nusret,</i>	
ظفر	<i>zafer,</i>	
نصرت انتساب	<i>nusret intisab,</i>	victorious.
بوزغون	<i>bozghun,</i>	} defeat.
بوزغونلق	<i>bozghunluq,</i>	
امداد	<i>imdad,</i>	assistance, succouring.
امداد ایتmek	<i>imdad etmek,</i>	to give assistance.
سانجق	<i>sanjaq,</i>	} a flag, banner, standard.
لواء	<i>liwa,</i>	
		a brigade of 10,000 soldiers.
بند	<i>bend,</i>	a dam, mole.
مترس	<i>meteris,</i>	trenches, breast-works.
شیش	<i>shish,</i>	small sword.
شیش ايله اومق	<i>shish ile vurmaq,</i>	to give a blow with a sword.
کمان	<i>keman,</i> کمانه <i>kemane,</i>	a bow.
اوق	<i>oq,</i>	an arrow.
طوپوز	<i>topuz,</i>	a club, a mace of arms.
قالقان	<i>qalqan,</i>	a shield, buckler, a target.
حمائل	<i>hamail,</i>	the silk cord, or belt by which the sword is slung from the shoulder.
ایر	<i>eyer,</i>	a riding-saddle.
سمر	<i>semer,</i>	a pack-saddle.
کم	<i>gem,</i>	} a bridle.
باشلق	<i>bashliq,</i>	
دزکین	<i>dizgin,</i>	the reins, a rein.
طولو دزکین	<i>dolu-dizgin,</i>	at full gallop.
قامچی	<i>qamchi,</i>	} whip.
قرباج	<i>qirbach,</i>	
تازیانه	<i>tazyane,</i>	
موزیقه	<i>muzika,</i>	military band.
طاول	<i>dawul,</i>	a big drum.

ترانپتہ	<i>tranpeta</i> , a small drum.	
بورو	<i>boru</i> ,	} trumpet.
سورنا	<i>surna, zurna</i> ,	
بوروزن	<i>boru-zen (-zan)</i> ,	} a bugle.
بوری	<i>boru</i> ,	

CHAPTER LIII.

ON MILITARY DRILL.

Drill, تعلیم *ta'lim*.

This drill is used alike in the Turkish and Egyptian armies, with this difference that the word طابورہ *tabura*, in Egypt is pronounced *tobra* ¹).

یرندہ صفا	<i>yerinde sefa</i> , stand at ease.	
طاقم زہار	<i>taqim zinhar</i> , squad, attention.	
صاغہ باق	<i>sagha baq</i> , eyes right.	
حذاپہ	<i>hizaye</i> , dress.	
ایلرپیہ باق	<i>ileriya baq</i> , eyes front.	
صاغہ دون	<i>sagha dun</i> , right-turn.	
صولہ دون	<i>sola dun</i> , left-turn.	
صاغدن گروپہ دون	<i>saghdan geriya dun</i> , right-about-turn.	
یارم صاغہ	<i>yarim sagha</i> ,	} half-right, or left-turn,
یارم صولہ دون	<i>yarim sola dun</i> ,	
چاریک صاغہ دون	<i>char-yek, cheyrek sagha dun</i> , quarter right-turn.	
اوج چاریک صاغدن گروپہ دون	<i>uch char-yek, cheyrek sagh-</i>	

1) See Arabic drill-book by my friend Suleyman Bey Nassif; war-office, Egypt.

- dan geriya dun*, three quarters rig'
 about turn.
 دون چارېك صولدن *uch char-yek, cheyrek solda geriya dun*, three quarters left about tur
 طاقم الای *taqim alay*, squad front.
 حاضر اول *hazir ol*, ready.
 قارشو طوران *garshi dawran*, engage.
 اوزات *uzat*, lunge.
 کرويې *geriya*, about.
 الای *alay*, front.
 صاغه اوزات *sagha uzat*, right-lunge.
 ایلرويې اوزات *ileriya uzat*, front-lunge.
 صولې اوزات *sola uzat*, left-lunge.
 سلام ال *selām al*, salute.
 ایلرويې *ileriya*, forward.
 طور *dur*, halt.
 يواش - مارش *yawash marsh*, slow march.
 طاقم طور *taqim dur*, squad halt.
 اوزنجه *uzunja*, step-out.
 قصهجه *qisaja*, step-short.
 برابر ال *beraber al*, mark time.
 يواش برابر ال *yawash beraber al*, slow mark time.
 کرويې *geriya*, step-back.
 يواش مارش طور *yawash marsh dur*, slow-march halt.
 آدمی تبدیل *adimi tebdil* change step.
 سرعتله مارش *sur'atle marsh*, quick-march.
 زیاده سرعتله مارش *ziyade sur'atle marsh*, double march.
 وار سرعتله - مارش *sagha var sur'atle marsh*, righ
 close, quick-march.
 صاغه دون *sagha dun*, right-turn.
 الای دون *alay dun*, front-turn.
 صولې دون *sola dun*, left-turn.

say tek numeralar, number. صلی تک نمره‌لر

بر خطوه ایلرویه (ایچرویه) چفت نمره‌لر بر خطوه کروییه (یا
bir khatwe ileriya (icheriya)
chift numeralar bir khatwa geriya ya
ileriya marsh, odd numbers one pace for-
 ward (or step-back) even numbers one
 pace step-back (or forward) march.

* صاغه حذا *sagha hiza*, right-dress.

ثابت ایکن چاریک (یارم یا اوج چاریک) صاغه طابوره *sabit*
iken char-yek cheyrek (yarim ya uch char-
yek, cheyrek) sagha tobra, at the halt,
 quarter, (half or three quarters) right-form.

چاریک (یارم یا اوج چاریک) صاغه طابوره سرعتله مارش صاغه
char-yek, cheyrek صاغه طابوره
(yarim ya uch char-yek, cheyrek) saghta
tabra sirvatle marsh sagha tabraya sirvatle
marsh, quarter (half or three quarters)
 right-form quick-march.

ایلرویه یا طور صاغه حذا *ileri ya dur sagha hiza*, forward
 or halt, right-dress.

ثابت ایکن چاریک (یارم یا اوج چاریک) صاغه طابوره (یا) صاغه
sabit iken char-yek, cheyrek (yarim)
ya uch char-yek, cheyrek sagha tabra (or)
sagha tabra, at the halt quarter (half or
 three quarters) right-form (or) right-form.

چاریک (یارم یا اوج چاریک) صاغه طابوره یا ایلرویه ثابت صاغه
char-yek, cheyrek (yarim ya uch
char-yek cheyrek) sagha tabra ya ileri
sabit sagha hiza, quarter (half or three
 quarters) right-form, or right-form forward
 or halt right-dress.

مارش یارم صاغه دون یواش مارش *yarim sagha dun yawash marsh*
half-right turn slow-march.

طور الای *dur alay*, halt-front.

سرعتله مارش *suriatle marsh*, quick-march.

یارم صاغه دون *yarim sagha dun*, half-right-turn.

طاقم طور الای دون *taqim dur alay dun*, squad halt-front.

یارم صاغه - دون الای دون *yarim sagha dun-alay dun*, halt
right turn, from-turn.

طاقم طور - الای *taqim dur alay*, squad, halt-front.

صاغه - دون *sagha dun*, right-turn.

الای - دون *alay dun*, front-turn.

صاغ یانه قطار *sagh yana qatar*, right-wheel.

ایکن ایلرویہ - طاہورہ ثابت *sabit iken, ileri-tabra*, at the halt,
front-form.

ایلرویہ باقی *ileri bag*, eyes front.

ایلرویہ طاہورہ *ileri tabra*, front-form.

ایلرویہ *ileri*, forward.

ایکن ایلرویہ - طاہورہ یورر *yurur iken ileri tabra*, on the march
front-form.

کیلرویہ - طاہورہ یا یوررایکن *geriye-tabra, ya*
yurur iken geriya-tabra, rear form, or on
the march rear form.

ایلرویہ - باقی صاغه *sagha tabra ileri-baq*, right-form,
eyes-front.

صف کیرویہ - اچلین صف *saff-saff geriya achlayin*, open-order.
طوغری *doghru*, steady.

صف صاغه - حذا ایکنجی *ikinci-saff sagha-hiza*, rear rank
right-dress.

یقین اول - مارش صف صف *saff saff yaqin ol. marsh*,
close order march.

ایکی خطوه کیرویہ - مارش ایکنجی *ikinci-saff iki khatawa geriya*
marsh, rear rank two paces step back march.

کیرویه اچلیں *saff saff geriya acheleyin*, open-order.

صف صف یقین اول *saff saff yaqim ol*, close-order.

دردر *durder*, form fours.

طاقم الای *taqim alay*, squad-front.

(یا صاغه یا صوله) *durder geriya ya sagha ya sola*, form-fours about (on right or left).

سرعتله - مارش *sagha yaqlasheyin sur'atle-marsh*, on the right close quick march.

اتشن سرعتله - مارش *saghdan kyāmilan acheleyin sur'atle marsh*, from the right open to intervals quick-march.

دون صول یانه - قطار *soldaki qatarlar sagha-dun sol yana qalar*, files on the left, right-turn, left-wheel.

قطارلر بیرینه *qatarlar yerina*, files to the front.

صفلری تبدیل *saffleri tebdil*, change-ranks dismissing a squad *taqimin insirafi*.

صاغه - دون *sagha-dun*, right-turn.

دستور *destur*, dismiss.

صوله - دون *sola-dun*,
دستور *destur*, { left-turn dismiss.

بلوک تک تعلیمی *bulukun talimi*, Company drill.

کیرویه - مارش صفلر صاغه و صوله - دون بلوکچه اول سرعتله - مارش
تک نمبرلر بیر خطوه ایله بیر چفت نمبرلر بیر خطوه
boyja bir saff ol tek
numeralar bir khatwa ileri chift nume-
ralar bir khatwa geriya marsh saffler
sagha ve-sola dun bulukja ol sur'atle
marsh, size in single rank, tallest on

the right, shortest on the left, odd numbers one pace step back, march ranks right and left turn form company quick-march.

سونكى ديك sungyu dik, fix-bayonets.
 صف صف كيرويه saff saff geriya, } open-order,
 اچليک طوغرى مارش achileyin doghru marsh, } steady, march.
 سونكى ايندر sungyu endir, unfix-bayonets.
 حاضر طور hazir dur, shoulder-arms.
 تفتيشه سلاح مائلا teftisha silah ma'ilen, for inspection port-arms.

صف صف saff saff, } close order, march.
 يقيين اول - مارش yaqin ol. marsh, }
 سلاح تفتيشى silah teftishi, examine-arms.
 صاى say, number.

نمره numera, number.
 وسط نمرهسى vvasat numerasi, nos.:.... left of the right half-company.

صنفلرک صول قوللری ... نمره numera... sinflerin sol qollari, nos.:.... left of sections.

بلوک افقى سلاح sagha yarim buluk ofqi silah, right half-company, trail-arms.

يارم بلوک افقى سلاح sol yarim buluk ofqi silah, left half-company, trail-arms.

صنفلری راحت - طور dishardaki sinfleri rahat-dur, outer sections, order-arms.

صنفلری راحت - طور icheridaki sinfleri rahat-dur, inner sections, order-arms.

دردر - الای deurder-alay, form fours-front.

دردر كيرويه الای deurder geriya alay, form fours-about front.

دردر صاغة الای deurder sagha alay, form fours, right, front.

- دردر - صوله' الای *deurder-sola alay*, form-fours, left, front.
 صف صف *saff saff*,
 کبرویه اچلیک *geriya achileyin*, } open-order.
 مارش *marsh*, march.
 طوغری *doghru*, steady.
 حاضر طور *hazir dur*, shoulder-arms.
 عظیم سلام *azim selam*, general salute.
 سلام - طور *selam-dur*, present arms.
 صف یقین - اول *saff saff, yaqin-ol*, close-order.
 طابور (یا قول) ایلرویه *tabur ya qol ileriya*, the line (or column) will advance.
 زیاده سرعتله مارش *sur'atle, (ya) ziyade sur'atle marsh*.
 ایکن صوله طابور *sabit iken sola tabra*, at the halt, into line left form.
 سرعتله - مارش *doghru sur'atle marsh*, steady, quick-march.
 سرعتله - مارش ایلرویه *sola-tabra sur'atle marsh*.
 طابوره *ileriya*, into line left-form quick-march forward.

A company in line forming into column, from the halt.

- کبرویه - دون *golja sagha, saghdan*
geriya dun, column to the right right about turn.
 طابوره سرعتله مارش *sagha tabra sur'atle marsh*,
 right form quick-march.
 حذا *buluk-dur, alay, sola-hiza*, com-
 pany-halt, front, left-dress.
 یا طور (صوله حذا) *ileriya delil sola*
dur (sola hizā), forward, by the left,
 or halt (left-dress).

A company changing front as the base company of a line formation.

saghda ki buluka char-yek, cheyrek ya yarim ya uch charyek, cheyrek, change front, quarter, (half or three quarters), right.

sagha (ya sagha tebdil hiza, (or to the right on the right company.

doghru, steady.

sagha - طابوره یا صاغه - طابوره سرعتله - مارش ایلرویه - باق ثابت ایکس چاریک یارم یا اوج چاریک sabit iken char-yek, cheyrek yarim ya uch cheyrek sagha-tabra ya sagha tobra suriatle marsh ileriya-baq, at the halt quarter (half or three quarters) right-form, or right-form, quick march eyes-front.

Changing ranks *saffleri tebdil*.

saffleri-tebdil, change ranks.

saghdan ya soldan (یا صاغدن وصولدن saghdan ya soldan (ya saghdan ve-soldan qatar-geriya, break off files from the right or left, or right and left.

sagha - دون یا دردر - صاغه صول یانه sagha dun ya deurder sagha sol yana qatar suriatle marsh, right-turn or form fours right-left-wheel quick-march.

bulukja qala ol, form company square. deurder دردر وسطه - وار یقلاشین سرعتله - مارش سونکی دیک vvasata-var yaqlasheyin suriatle-marsh

sungu dik, form fours on the centre close quick-march fix-bayonets.

سواری *suwari*, cavalry.

سواریه قارشو طوران *suwariya qarshi dawran*, prepare for cavalry.

راحت - طور *rahat-dur*, order-arms.

بلوکچه - اول سونکی - ایندر وسطدن ایکشر اول سرعتله - مارش *bulukja-ol sungu endir wasatdan ikisher-ol suriatle-marsh*, form-company, unfix bayonets, from the centre re-form two deep quick-march.

ال صول اموزینه - ال *tufenk sol omuzina-al*, slope-arms.

میدان - الی *meydan-alay* march-past.

دردر - صاغه *deurder sagha*, form fours, right.

سرعتله - مارش *suriatle marsh*, quick-march.

صل یانه - قطار *sol yana-qatar*, left-wheel.

بلوک - طور *buluk-dur*, company-halt.

الی *alay*, front.

حذا صاغه - *sagha hiza*, right-dress.

سلاح اموزینه - ال دلیل صاغه سرعتله - مارش صاغه - باق *silah omuzina-al delil saghda, suriatle-marsh sagha-baq*, shoulder-arms, by the right, quick-march eyes-right.

ال افقی سلاح صول اموزینه - ال *silah sol omuzina-al ofqi silah*, slope-arms, trail-arms.

بلوک - طور صغری - تبدیل صوله - حذا راحت - طور سونکی - ایندر *buluk dur saffleri tebdil sola-hiza rahat-dur sungu-endir*, company-halt change-ranks left-dress order-arms unfix-bayonets.

میدان - الی دلیل - صوله سرعتله - مارش بلوک - طور صغری - تبدیل *march-past by the left quick*

march company halt change ranks right dress.

زیاده سرعتله دلیل صاغده *meydan alay ziyade sur'atle delil saghda*, march past in double time by the right.

زیاده سرعتله - مارش بلوک - طور صغری - تبدیل صوله - حذا *ziyade sur'atle-marsh, buluk dur, saffleri tebdil sola-hiza*, double-march company-halt change ranks left-dress.

قلعه - اول سرعتله - مارش یارم بلوکله طیشارییه *qale-ql sur'atle marsh yarim bulukler dishariya*, form-square quick-march half companies outwards.

قلعه - اول یان صغری طیشارییه سرعتله - مارش *qale-ol yan sinflari dishariya sur'atle-marsh*, form-square flank-sections outwards quick-march.

سواریه قارسو طوران *suwariya qarshi dawran*, prepare for cavalry.
قولچه - اول سونکی ایندر یان - یوزلری صاغدن - گیرویه - دون *qolja-ol sungu-endir yan-yuzleri saghdan geriya-dun*, re-form-column unfix-bayonets side-faces right-about-turn.

صابور - صلی *tabur say*, tell off the battalion.

بیرنجی وایکنجی واونجی صاغ قول صابور *birinji ve ikinci ve uchinji sagh qol tabur*, numbers one to three right half battalion.

دورننجی ویشنجی والتنجی صول قول صابور *deurdinji ve besh-inji ve altinji sol qol tabur*, numbers four to six left half battalion.

صف صاف کیرییه اچلیک، اتیشلین *saff saff geriya acheleyin*, open-order.

صف صاف یاقین - اول *saff saff yaqin ol*, close-order.

طابور ایلرویه طابور - طور صابور - کیرییه طوغری صاغدن کیرییه

دون سرعتله مارش طاہور - طور الای سونکی
tabur ileriya tabur-dur tabur-geriya
doghru soghdan geriya dun sur'atle marsh
tabur dur olay sungu dik, the line will
 advance-battalion halt, the line will re-
 tire steady right about-turn quick-march,
 battalion halt front fix bayonets.

هجومه حاضر - اول *hujuma hazir-ol*, prepare to charge.
 هجوم طاہور - طور حابطلر بیرینه *hujum tabur-dur zabitler yerina*
 charge, battalion halt, officers take post.
 بلوکچه صاغدن دردر - ایلرویه دردر صاغه صول یانه قطار
bulukja saghdan deurder-ileriya deurder sa-
gha sol yana qatar, advance in fours from
 the right of companies form fours right
 left wheel.

...ji... جی بلوک کبرویه طاہوره ایلرویه طور - الای صاغه - حذا
buluk geriya tabra ileriya dur-alay sagha-
hiza, no: - rear form forward halt-front
 right-dress.

Line forming into column, from the halt.

صاغه صاغدن کبرویه دون *qolja sagha saghdan geriya*
dun, column to the right right about-turn.

بلوکچه صاغه طاہوره سرعتله مارش *bulukja sagha-tabra sur'atle*
marsh, companies right-form quick-march.

بلوکچه صاغه طاہوره ایلرویه *bulukja sagha tabra ileriya*, com-
 panies right-form forward.

صاغه سرعتله مارش *saghd*
ki buluk ileriya baqi deurder sagha sur-
'atle marsh, right company to the front
 remainder form-fours right quick-march.

..... جی بلوک یارم صوله - دون الای - دون دلیل صولده
 اؤک بلوک دلیل صولده *eun buluk delil solda*

ji buluk yarim solda-dun alay-dun solda, leading company by the left no, half left-turn front-turn by the left.

ji . . . جی بلوک ایلرویه باقی دردر - ایچرویه سرعتله - مارش buluk ileriya baqi deurder icheriya sur-atle marsh, no, to the front remainder form-fours inwards quick-march.

sabit iken ثابت ایکن صوله - طابوره طوغری سرعتله - مارش sola-tabra doghru sur-atle-marsh, at the halt into line steady quick-march.

nishanjiler yerina, markers fall in. نشانجیلر - بیرینه

اوک بلوکدن قول باقی صاغدن کیرویه - دون سرعتله - مارش eun bulukden qol baqi saghdan geriya dun sur-atle marsh, column from the front company, remainder right about-turn quick march.

gerıdaki bulukdan کیروده کی بلوکدن قول باقی سرعتله - مارش qol baqi sur-atle marsh, column from the rear company, remainder quick-march.

tabur ileriya delıl solda, battalion forward by the left. *ایلرویه دلیل صولده*

beraber-al, mark time. برابر - ال

deurderlen sagha دردرلن صاغه دردر - صاغه سرعتله - مارش deurder-sagha sur-atle-marsh, move to the right in fours, form fours right, quick-march.

tedrijle-sagha deurder-sagha bulukje sol تدریجله - صاغه دردر - صاغه بلوکجه صول یانه - صف ایلرویه yana-saff ileriya, move to the right in echelon form-fours right companies, left wheel forward.

tedrijle ileriya تدریجله ایلرویه یا کیرویه . . . خطوه صاغدن

ya geriya . . . khatwa saghdan, advance
or retire in echelon at . . paces distance
from the right.

سواریه قارشو - طوران *sungu dik saghdan*
suwariya qarshi-dawran, fix bayonets from
the right prepare for cavalry.

بلوکچه قلعه - اول *bulukje qala, qale-ol*, form company squares.
بلوکه قلعه - اول *iki wasatdagi buluka* on
the two centre companies form square.

CHAPTER LIV.

EXERCISES.

Exercise I.

The man (ادم *adam*) (accus.) to the house, in the house,
from the officer (ضابط *zabit*), Oh woman (قاری *qari*), the
road (accus.), the camp (اردو *ordu*) (accus.), the saddle (ایر
eyer) (accus.), to the horse (آت *at*), in the barracks (قشلا
qishla), of the general (سر عسکر *ser-asker*), in the ship
(گمی *gemi*), to the friend (دوست *dost*), the troops (الای *alay*)
(accus.), from the officers, to the horses, in the guns (تفنگ
tufenk or *tufek*), to the soldiers (عسکر *asker*), the books
(کتاب *kitab*) (accus.) to the pens (قلم *qalem*), from the ink
(مړکب *murekkeb*).

Exercise II.

A (بیر *bir*) big ship. Of the large gun (طوپ *top*). To the
large house. The large horse. The good (ایو *iyi*) man. The
kind (ایو *iyi*) officer. To the just (عادل *adil*) judge (قاضی

gazi), beautiful (گزل *gyuzel*) horses, handsome women (قاری *qari*). In the large room (اوده *oda*). From the useful (فایدہ‌لی *faideli*) books. Of the faithful (صادق *sadiq*) friend. To the good (ایو *iyi*) father. From the kind (تاتلی *tatli*) mother (انا *ana*). From the learned (عالم *alim*) professor (خواجه *khoja*).

Exercise III.

امر ایدیکز یتاغہ کتسون. بکا اذن وپیگز اکا قوشایم. بنم
اغمی بر صیچان اصردی. بنم فسمی انک تویه سنک ایچنه
نویگز. انک کدیسی سمیز دکلدر. انک یتاغی بنم ایچون دکلدر.
کرمید قرمیزدر. بنم کوپکم عارسزدر. بر بیوک اغ ایچنده. بنم
چبوغم کسلدی. بر یغین قلای. دوداغی یاره‌لودر.

Exercise IV.

طاوشان قوشه‌بلور. یله‌سی وارمی ایدی. انک ادی بنمکی
ی دکلدر. انک اوغلی اوده ایدی. کمسه دیده‌مزکه بن دکلم.
بر سمیز قسراق اوستنده کلدی. بن بر قامش اوستنه بر
جیر قودم. امان بنم کوزل صندیغمه کلکز. بن تلکی کبی
شارم. طالغه عمر کبیدر. انک قاریسینک بر قلمی یوقدر.
ش ایتمه. بر از انقیه چکیکز. هپ بنم جامم قیرلدی. بن
دپهدن یوقاری کیدر ایکن بنی چاغریکز.

Exercise V.

بو اتش علولندی. انک بورنی قاندی. بنم کلم بیاض ایدی.
جسور ادمی سورم. بنم کلینم دها کلمدی. بن انک
قیردم. اول بر طونه سوردی. بنم دودوکم قورو در. بنم
یغم کبی یاپمغه چانش. بر قایشی یاروب ایکی ایت.
یا بر اریک اله‌بلورم یابر قزغل. کونش چاریمسی بنی سرسم

ایتدی. کرچک بپنده نشان یوقدر. انک بر مخزن طوتقالی وار در. انک قبیلہ سندن بنم بر کولہم وار. انک فسادى کمال بومامش ایدی. اول بنم بورنمه اوردی. حیلہ کار تلکی یی سومام. بنم صندیغم اوستنده اول بر قامش یاردی.

Exercise VI.

These people (قوم *gavm*) were very busy (مشغول *meshghul*) in the town (شهر *shehr*) yesterday (دوَن *dun*). The men of that country (مملکت *memleket*) were celebrated (مشهور *meshhur*) in war (جنگ *jenk*). This tea (چای *chay*) is cheap (اوجوز *ujuz*) enough, but that wine (شراب *sharab*, *sharap*) is too dear (بہالو *pahali*). Truly this is a wonderful thing! (عجیب *ajib*, *ajayib*). The price (بہا *baha*) of bread was too high yesterday in the market (چارشی *charshi*). How much (نقدار *naqadar*) was it a pound? It was three piastres the ock (قیہ *qiyya oqqa*). At what time (وقت *waqit*) were you home last night (دون کیجہ *dun geyje*). I was in the house by 5 o'clock (ساعت *sa'at*). He went out (طیشاری *dishari chiqmaq*) after 10 o'clock. The man and my father's two mules (قاطر *qatir*) were in the garden (باغچه *baghcha*) this morning (صبح *sabah*). How (نصل *nasl*) is your mother (انا *ana*) to-day? My brother is eight years (سنہ *sene*) old to-day. What is your servant's (اوشاق *ushaq*) name? His name is Ali, the son of Abdullah. How many pens (قلم *qalem*) have you? Three or four only, but they are not good.

Exercise VII.

That bed (یتاق *yataq*) is too long (اوزون *uzun*) for you. It is only seven feet long. There is a beautiful house, with a large garden (باغچه *baghcha*) near (یقین *yaqin*) the river.

It cost 20,000 piastres (غروش *ghurush*). This lesson (درس *ders*) is too hard (کوح *gyuch*) for me. This soldier (نفر *nefer*) has a claim (دغوی *dawwa*) against you. He says you owe (بورجلو *borjlu*) him 50 piastres. I get 100 piastres a month (ای *ay*). Peace be unto you and on you peace! Be not afraid (قورقمق *qorqmaq*). He is thy equal (مساوی *musavi*) in knowledge (علم *ilm*). The ignorant (جاهل *jahil*) are like the blind (کور *kyur*). I am not so strong (قوتلو *quvvetli*) as you. The horse is not so large as the elephant (فیل *fil*). One is as mean (طمعکار *tama'kyar*) as the other is generous (سخاوتلو *sakhavetli*). Which is the road to Stamboul?

Exercise VIII.

The house of the judge (قاضی *qazi, qadi*). One of the Sultan's servants was in the bazaar yesterday (دون *dun*) with my brother (قارنداش *qarndash, qardash*). One of these lamps (قندیل *qandil*) is broken (قیرمق *qirmaq*). The light (زیبا *ziya*) of the rays (شعاع *shu'aa*) of the sun. The sister of my friend's (بالدیز *baldiz*) wife. Joseph's new watch (ساعت *savat*) is mended (اصلاح - et *islah - et*). God's world (دنیا *dunya*) is full (طولو *dolu*) of beauty (گوزللك *gyuzellik*). A piece of rope (ایپ *ip*) was tied (باغلامق *baghlamaq*) to the door-post (دکلی تخته *dikli-takhta*). The weight (طارتی *tarti*) of this bale (دنک *denk*) is 1 cwt (قنطار *qantar*). My father's new horse is strong and very beautiful (گوزل *gyuzel*). The merchant (تجار *tujjar*) in the bazaar had 1350 lbs of tea (چای *chay*) $3\frac{1}{2}$ cwt of sugar (شکر *sheker*) and 480 yards of cloth (cotton) (بز *bez*) for sale. Bad news (حوادث *hawadis*) flies quickly (داغیلماق *daghilmaq*). The servant of the merciful (مرحمتلو *merhametli*). The sun of the faith (ایمان *iman*). He had (وار ایدی *var idi*) three sons and two daughters. The sons were wise (عقللو *aqilli*) and good, the daughters (qiz) sweet and fair.

Exercise IX.

تیمور (iron) پک سرتدر فقط کوزل دکلدر. تیمور اولمسه بزم نه اید، جکزی بلمام (to know) بیاغی (common) آتش ایچنده تیمور اریمز (to melt). تیمورجینک (smith) دکانه باق تیمورجی نه یاپیمور (to do). اوجاقده (forge) ایشلیمور (to work). بر بیوک کوروک (bellows) ایله آتشی کوروکلیمور. سیجانی تیموری ماشه (tongs) ایله طیشاری الور (to take). صکره اورس (anvil) اوستنده چکچ ایله دوکر (to beat). چلک (steel) تیموردن یاپلمور. بچاق (knives) وقلچ (swords) ومقاصی (scissors) چلکدن یاپلمور. قورشون (lead) یموشاق وپک اغر در. تفنک دانهسی (bullets) وصو بوربسی (pipes) قورشوندن یاپلمور. صو خزبنه لری (cisterns) بعض کره قورشون ایله قابلمور (to line) آتش اوزرنده قورشون چابک اریز. قالای (tin) دخی یموشاق وبیاض وپارلاقدر. تنکه (tinplates) قالای قابلو اینجه تیمور تخته در.

Exercise X.

التون رنگی (colour) صاری (yellow) در. چوق کوزل وپارلاقدر (bright). بشقه شیلرک اکثریسندن چوق زیاده اغردر. انسان انی یردن چیقارر (to dig). بن کورکمی (shovel) البو بر از التون چیقاریم می. بوت بودبارده (country) بولنمز (to be found). اوزاق یردن کلور (to come). دربند (deep) بولندیغندن کورکمز ایله چیقاره مزسکز. یوزک (rings) و ساعت ظرفلری (case) التیندن یاپلمور (to make). یالدز (leaf gold) نه در. یالدز پک اینجه دوکلمش (to beat) التون ورقی در.

Exercise XI.

کومش (silver) بیاض وپارلاقدر. التون قدر (as) اغر دکلدر. قاشق (spoon) وجتال (fork) وتپسی (tray) بعض کره کومشدن یاپلمور. کومش نره دن کلور (to come). چوق مملکنده بولنور (to find). بر درهم التون اون بش درهم کومش دکر. باقر قرمزیدر. کوکم (kettles) وتناجره (saucepans) باقردن یاپلمور. پرنچ

صاریدر همان (almost) التون کبی. توج (bronze) قویورنکدر
طوب توجدن یاپلور.

Exercise XII.

Your brother's lesson is easier (داه قولای *daha qolay*) than it was last week. The people (قوم *qavm*) are very ignorant (جاهل *jāhil*) but the inhabitants of Persia are still more (داه *daha*) ignorant. Air is lighter (خفیف *khaffif*) than water and iron is lighter than lead. King Solomon was the wisest (عقللو *aqilli*) of mankind, (بنی آدم *beni-adem*) the richest (زنگین *zengin*) most learned (اک عالم *ak alim*) and greatest of all the kings of his time.

The mountains (طاغ *dagh*) of Europe are high, (یوکسک *yukse*) but those of America are higher, and those of India highest (اک *eng*) of all. The elephant is a useful (ایشه یرار *isha-yarar*) animal, (حیوان *haywan*) the camel (دوه *deve*) is more useful, and the horse the most useful of all. He is gone to the bazaar to buy (صاتون (آلمق *satun almq*) barley (ارپه *arpa*) straw (صمان *saman*) and grass (قورو اوت *quru-ot*). The saddle (ایر *eyer*) and bridle (باشلق *bashliq*) are both very dirty (کیرلی *kirli*) and the horse is not properly (تمیزلکم *temizlemek*) groomed.

Exercise XIII.

He struck (اورمق *wurmaq*) me hard. I wrote (یازمق *yazmaq*) a letter to my mother this morning (صباح *sabah*), but my brother had written to her the day before (دون *dun*). The vizier is a wise (عقللو *aqilli*) and learned (دانشمند *danishmend*) man; he has written and translated (ترجمه - ا *terjume-et*) many books. Did the man strike (اورمق *wurmaq*) the horse with a stick (دینک *deynek*) or a whip? From whom did you hear (اشتمک *ishitmek*) the news (حوادث).

hawadis) of yesterday's engagement (مكاريبه *muharebe*) in the Soudan (سودان *sudan*). I told (سويلمك *suweylemek*) him his words (سوز *suz*) were without meaning (معناسز *mainasiz*). The Italian painted (بويامق *boyamaq*) the doors (قپو *qapi*) and windows (پنجره *penjere*) of his house with much skill (هنر *huner*). I am told (سويلمك *suweylemek*) that the soldiers killed (ولدirmek *uldurmek*) all the men in the town (قصبه *qasaba*) and put the women and children in prison (حبس - ا *habs-et*). The news (خبر *khaber*) is bad enough (پك فنا *pek fena*) if it be true (گرچك *gerchek*). Why has not the servant (خدمتكار *hizmetkyar*) washed (يقامق *yiqamaq*) the floor of my room. He held (تاشيمق *tashimaq*) the child in his arms (قول *qol*) and touched (ال - سورمك *el-surmek*) its head.

Exercise XIV.

The carpenter made (ياپمق *yapmaq*) this wooden (اخشاب *akhshab*) table (ترتبه *trebeze*) and also these cupboards (طولاب *dolab*). Have you made (سويلمك *suweylemek*) the doorkeeper (قپوجي *qapiji*) shut (قپامق *qapamaq*) the doors and windows downstairs (اشاغيدا *ashaghida*). No sir, not yet (هنوز *henuz-heniz*). Then (اويله ايسه *uyle-isa*) do so at once (چابك *chabik*). I am going (گتمك *gitmek*) to the bazaar (چارشو *chارشو*), go on before (دان اول *dan-evvel*) me quickly. Do you know (بيلمك *bilmek*) the shop of Hassan the goldsmith (قوبومجي *qujumju*). I am not sure (ظن - ا *zann-et*), I will enquire (سورمق *sormaq*) where it is to be found (بولمق *bulmaq*). Your ornaments (زيبا *ziba*) sir (افندم *efendim*) are not yet finished (بترمك *bitirmek*). They will be ready (حاضر - او *hazir-ol*) later. The man who was present (حاضر - او *hazir-ol*) has patience (صبر *sabr*). What I said (ديمك *demek*) to you was that the merchant (تجار *tujjar*) to whom we wrote

(صیقئى *yüzmaq*) is dead (ولمك *ulmek*). Hold fast (صیقئى *siqi tutmaq*) to what belongs (مخصوص *makhsus*) to you. The greatest (بيوك *eng-biyuk*) is not always the best (اعلا *ala*). A fish (بالق *baliq*) whose colour (رنك *renk*) is like gold (التون *altin*). That old man (اختيار *ikhtiyar*) is very clever (هنرلو *hunerli*), he can repeat exactly (تام *tamm*) the precepts (قاعد *qāide*) of the Koran. Will you drink (ايچمك *ichmek*) some sherbet and smoke (ايچمك *ichmek*) a cigarette?

Exercise XV.

ياز موسمى Summer.

ياز موسمى حزرانده باشلايوب (to commence) سندنك پك خوش بر موسميدر. اول وقت اتلر (horse) و اينكلر (cow) تاز ييشل اوت ايله بسنلنمك (to feed) ايچون چايره كوندريلور (to send). يازين باغ (orchard) و بستانك (kitchen garden) بركتى (riches) كوريلوب (to see) صلطه (salad) و بقله (broad beans) و فصوليه (french beans) و بزليله (peas) و چليك (strawberries) و كراز (cherries) كبي درلو درلو سپزه (vegetables) و يمش بو نلغى اولور. ياز چيچكلرى (flower) كبي كوزل و ايو قوقار (scent) بشقه موسمه چيچك اولمز. قرنفل (pink) و شيبوى (stock) و چيچكلر شاعى (queen of) اولان كل يازين حاصل اولور (come forth). دها صكره طرلارك (field) اكيني (harvest) كماله ينشوب (to ripen) جناب حقل (God) نعمتى (gift) درانبار ايديلر (to gather in). بغدادى (wheat) و ارپهك (barley) بشاقلرى (ear) دكر طالغوسى (wave) كبي سالانوب (to wave) باغه يمش اغاجلرينك (tree) داللى (boughs) ميوه اغرغيله يره اكور (to bend).

Exercise XVI.

The swallow.

ياز سيجاغنده (warmth) شو راحت بلمز (to be restless) قرلانچلرك اوزون قناد و چتال قويرقلىنى اچوب (to open)

رزقلىرى اولان بوجكلىرى (insect) طوتماق (to catch) ايچىمون
 طولاشه صولاشه (round and round) اوچدقلىرىنى (to fly) سىير
 ايتماق (to watch) ذوقدر. هوانمناك اولناجه (to be damp) بو
 بوجكلىر يوكسك اوچه ميبوب (to fly) قولانغىچ دخسى شكاريلىنى
 طوتماق ايچىمون يير (ground) يوزىنى صيرىرك اوچمىسى (skim along)
 لازم كلور (to be obliged) وبز انى كورناجه (to see) يقينده
 ياغمور ياغه جق (to rain) زرا قولانغىچلر بردن ايرلر (to rise)
 ديزر (to say). صوك بهاركلوب (to arrive) روزكار صوغوق اسمكه
 باشلايناجه (begins to blow) كمسەنك بلمادىكى (to know)
 بر اشارت وپرلوب (to give a signal) فرلانغىچلر سورە سورە
 (in flocks) طويلاندىق (to collect) هواسى سيحاجق بر ديسار
 (country) اخرة وارمق اوزره (to go) دكردن اوتە كچرلر (to pass)
 قيش كچوب ياز ينە كلكدە (to come) قولانغىچ عودت ايدرك
 (to return) انسان مثلوعقلى واركمى (as though it has reason)
 اسكى يواسنى (nest) كلور بولور (to find).

Exercise XVII.

طاوشان The hare.

طاوشان پك قورقاق بر حيوانجقدر (little animal) قيرده
 چاليلار (forest) اراسنده بر درلوبوا ياپوب (to make) اوراد
 صقلانور (to hide). مظلوم (gentle) دزورسز حيوان اولوب (to be)
 اكثر ديارده رنكى صاريجه فير ايسده صوغوق مملكتلرده رنكى
 بياض اولمغله (to be) قارلر اراسنده كزر ايكن (to go) قولاي
 كوريلوب (to see) طوتلمز (to catch). قويروغى (tail) قصه وقبا
 در و اوست دوداغى (lip) توبيلو وبارق اولوب (to be hairy)
 (and parted) انى بر دورى يه اوينادر (to move). ارد اياقلىرى
 (foot) اولك اياقلردن چوق زياده اوزون اولمغله (to be) پك چاپك
 سكردر حتى الك قوپناجه تازيدن (greyhound) چاپك قوشار
 (to run) فقط تازى قوتلو بولنمغله (to be) عاقبت (at last)
 طاوشان يوريلوب (to run) طوتلور (to catch).

Exercise XVIII.

Do you know (bilmek) where the merchants are,

who sell (ساتمق *satmaq*) carpets? (قالی *qali, hali*). They live (ساکن-او *sakin-ol*) in the Khan Halan close by here. I will go (گتمک *gitmek*) there, as I want to buy some. Have you any really good Persian or Smyrna carpets? I do not like (بکنمک *beyenmek*) these colors, they are too glaring (اچق *achiq*). This is a very old (اسکی *eski*) and beautiful Mecca carpet, and I want 10 liras for it. I am a correspondent (مخبر *mukhbir*) of the journal (روزنامه *ruzname*). The house in which I live stands (واقع-او *waqi-ol*) near the river. My father is diligent (جالشقر *chalishqan*) at his work. Whose speech (کلام *kelam*) is long (اوزون *uzun*), his blame (قباحت *qabahat*) is great! Who acts (حرکت-ا *hareket-et*) on impulse (هله *wehle*) repents (پشیمان-او *peshiman-ol*) quickly. If the weather (هوا *hawa*) is bad you must not venture (جسارت-ا *jesaret-et*). If you have courage (بکیتلک *yigitlik*), you will overcome (غالب-او *ghalib-ol*) difficulties. If you understand (اکلامق *annamaq*) proverbs (ضربمثل *zarbi-mesel*), you will be interested.

Exercise XIX.

Let him sit (اوطورمق *oturmaq*) in the garden and listen (دکلمک *dinglemek, dinnemek*) to the birds. Let us go (گتمک *gitmek*) to the market and hear the prices (بها *baha*). I have heard (اشتمک *ishitmek*) that the prince of that country (مملکت *memleket*) is famous (مشهور *meshhur*) for his learning. This horse may be (ممکن *mumkin*) strong, but he does not please (مناسب *munasib*, کورمک *gyurmek*) me. He was very tired (بورغون *yorghun*), nevertheless (معافیہ *ma'a-ma-fih*) he continued (دوام-ا *dewam-et*) to work (ایشلمک *ishlemek*). The people threw (اعتماد-ا *itimad-et*) themselves on their leader (رئیس *re'is*). Not only the king was expected (بکلمک *beklemek*) but also (دخی *dakhi*) the queen and princesses (شهزاده‌لر *shehzade-lar*).

shehzadeler). I went to the town yesterday and saw (كورمك *gyurmek*) a great number (چوق *choq*) of soldiers sitting (اوتورماق *oturmaq*) outside the market-place (چارشي *charshi*). I must stay (قالماق *qalmaq*) at home for I am not at all well (كيغى يوق *keyfi yoq*). Do not waste (غائب - ا *gha'ib-et*) your time, for life (عمر *umr*) is made of it. If he come (گelmek *gelmek*) here, what will you say? It was four o'clock when the sun rose (طوغماق *doghmaq*). Wait (بكلماق *beklemek*) till I can join you at the railway-station. What is the name (نام *nam*) of the man, with whom (برابر *beraber*) you were talking (قونشماق *qonushmaq*) this morning? I am not so learned (عالم *alim*) as you suppose (ظن - ا *zann-et*).

Exercise XX.

Thank you very much (تشكر - ا *teshekkyur-et*) for your obliging (عنایتكار *inayetkyar*) offer. Put a table and chairs in the garden from my room upstairs (يوقاردا *yugarda*). Never mind (ضرر يوق *zarar yoq*), I am going away (كتماق *gitmek*) for a time (از وقت *az waqit*). I was smoking (اوينماق *oynamaq*) whilst they played (توتون ايچمك *tutun ichmek*) at chess. I got this packet (اوافق بوغچه *ufaq-boghcha*) from a messenger (تاتار *tātār*). No one can swim (يوزمك *yuzmek*) against the stream (اقندى). If I heard (اشتتمك *ishitmek*) that you were there, I should doubt (شبهه - ا *shubhe-et*) it. He lived (اوتورماق *oturmaq*) near the bridge opposite (قارشى *qarshi*) to the church. We were writing (يازماق *yazmaq*) to the merchants (تجار *tujjar*). When the letters were brought in (گتورمك *getirmek*). Were I ill (كيغىسىز *keyfsiz*), I would let you know (بلدirmek *bildirmek*). Contrary (مخالف *mukhalif*) to the master's orders (امر *emr*, or تنبيه *tenbih*) the man left (ترك - ا *terk-et*) the house. We shall have returned (گيرو دونمك *geri dunmek*) before you

go out (طیشاری چقمق *dishari chiqmaq*). He will start (چیقمق *chiqmaq*) within the next week (هفته *hafta*). It would have been better (دھا ایو *daha iyi*) had you acted (حرکت-ا *hareket-et*) differently.

Exercise XXI.

یاغمور *yaghmur*, the rain.

بر کون حیزران اینده بر چوجق بر قاج دوستی ایله بر از سیره (on excursion) کتمک اوزره (to go) حاضرلنمش ایکن کؤک یوزی (the sky) بلوط قابلنوب (to be covered with) چوجغک بر مدت انتظار اوزره بکلمسی (to wait) ایجاب ایتندی (to be obliged). عاقبت (at last) باغمور سیل کبی یاغمه باشلا مغله (begin to rain) چوجق طیانہ میوب اغلامغه باشلادی (to cry) و صوموده رق (to sulk) بر کوشیه چکلوب کمسندک الندن تسلی قبول ایتمز ایدی. اخشامه (night) طوغری بلوطر ظاغلمغه باشلایوب کونش چیقادی (to rise) و روی عالم (nature) بشقه طرز کوردی. اول زمان باباسی چوجغی چایره کونروب (to take) هوانک تازه لکی و اوتلرک یشللیکی وقوشلرک اوتمسی (birds to sing) سببله یورکی پر صفا اولدی. چوجق اوطانوب (to feel ashamed) صباحلین واقع اولان کندی حرکتنک نقدر اویغونسز اولدیغنی (to be foolish) بلوب اول زمان یاغمش اولان یاغمور نعمتی سببله بو مرقک وقوعبولش اولدیغنی اعترافه مجبور اولدی (to admit).

Exercise XXII.

قورت ایلہ قورت the Wolf and the Lamb.

بر قورت ایلہ بر قوزی اتفاقا صوسزقلربی (thirst) دفع ایتمک (to quench) ایچون بر چایه (river) کلوب (to come) قورت اوست طرفده وقوزی الت طرفده بولنمغه چایک صوبی قورت جانبندن قوزی یه طوغری اقدی. قوزی متواضعانه (humble) اوضاع ایلہ قورتدن اوزاق (far) چکلدیسهده (to draw back) قورت انی کوردیکی (to see) انده هلاک ایتمکه (to destroy) بر

بِهانه (pretext) ارایه رق اگا طوغری سکردوب (to run) بنم ایچدیکم
(to drink) صویبی نه جساله بولاندیورسن (to disturb) دیدی.
قوزی قورقوب (to frighten) جواب ایتدی که افندم بن سزک
صویکزی نصل بولاندیبله جکم جایک افندیسی (current) سزک
طرفکزدن بکاکلیور واعتماد بیوریکز (to be assured) که سزی
کوجندرمکه (to offend) بنم اصلا مرادم یوقدر. یا (oh!) دیدی
قورت اوراسی بلکه اوپله در ولکن دون (yesterday) کویکیر (dog)
بنی قولار (to pursue) ایکن سنک باباک انلری تحریص
ایتدیکنی (to encourage) کوردم. قوزی دخی عفو بیوریکز
(to pardon) افندم دیدی بنم بیچاره (poor) بایام بوندن بر
آی (mouth) مقدم قصابک پچاغنه (knife) شکار دوشدی. اوپله
ایسه دیدی قورت اناک ایدی قوزی دخی بوکا جولاً خیر
(no) افندم دیدی بنی طوغر (to give birth) ایکن انام وفات
ایتدی.

Exercise XXIII.

wise children. عقللی چوجقلر

بر کوچوک چوجق النده (hand) بر قپاقلی صحن (plate) ایله
بر قومشونک (neighbour) اوینه یمک (food) کوتورمکده (to bring)
ایکن دیگر بر قومشوبونی گوروب (to see) «بوصحنک ایچندنه
وار؟» دیه سؤال ایدنجه (to ask) عقللی چوجق «نه اولدیغنی
بیلمک جائز اولسه اوستی قپائی اولمازدی» دیمش.

هارون الرشید بر کون وزیرینک خانه سنه کیدوب (to go) وزیرک
اوراده بولنان (to find) بر کوچک اوغلنه «بنم اوممی (house)
کوزل یوقسه (or) سزک اوکزمی؟» دیه صورنجه (to ask) ذکی
(intelligent) چوحق «بزم اومز کوزل اولدیغند» شبهه می (doubt)
وارکه شمدی خلیفه حضرتلری (majesty) بوراده بولنیور.
دیمش.

برچوجغه سفرده کندیسنه (himself) ات ویریلان (to give)
یمکلدن بشقه برشی ایستماسنی تنبیه ایتمشلر. فقط (but)
بر کون سفرده بولندیغی صرده نصل ایسه (some how) کندیسنه

ات ویرمکی اونوتمشلم. چوجق ۞ تنبیهی بوزمامق (to infringe) ۞ ده کندیسنه ات ویرلمدیکنی اخطار ایتمک اوزره طورلقدن (salt) بزمقدار طوز آلوب اوکنه (before) قور (to put) «بو طوزی نه یایه جقسین» (to do) دیه سؤال اولندقد» «بکا ات ویره جک اولورسه کتر اوزرینه اکه جکم» (to sprinkle) دیمش.

Exercise XXIV.

I was sitting (دعا اشاغی) *oturmaq* lower down (*daha-ashaghi*) than he was. She was living (او ساکن *sakin-ol*) in the fourth house on the right (صاغ طرفی *sagh-tarafı*). This village (کوی *kyuy*) is not inhabited (سکنه *sekene*). Where were you (اولمق *olmaq*) yesterday when the Pasha called (زیارت-ا *ziyaret-et*). My father had just arrived (کلمک *gelmek*) from Europe and I was talking (لاقردی-ا *laqirdi-et*) to him. I am going out shooting (اوه کتمک *ava gitmek*) and want a gun (تفنک *tufenk, tufek*). It is still quite dark (قارانلق *qaranlıq*). Have everything ready (حاضر *hāzir*) and take my revolver (رولور *revolver*) out of the case (قوتی *qutu*). Tell the boatmen (قایقچیی *qayıqçı*) to shove off (الارغه *alargha*). He wrote (یازمق *yazmaq*) an interesting (اشدجک شیء *ishidilejek-shey*) account of our journey. There is a junction (اتصال *ittisal*) at Ortaquoi for the new line of railway (تیمور یول *demir-yol*). They swept (سپورمک *supurmek*) the kitchen chimney (اوجاق *ojaq*) with a long broom (سپورکه *supurge*).

Exercise XXV.

Once upon a time a man was carrying (تاشیمق *tashimaq*) a faggot (اوطن دمئی *odun-demeti*) wood, and it was very heavy (اغر *aghir*) for him.

So when he was oppressed (صیقمق *siqmaq*) and weary (یورغون *yorghun*) with carrying it, he threw (اتمق *atmaq*)

it from his shoulder, (أوموز *omuz, omz*) and called upon death (أولم *ulum*). So he (Death) presented (أحضر *hazir-et*) himself to him saying, (ديمك *demek*) «Behold (أشئت *ishte*) me, why (نچين *nithin*) have you called me?» So he said, «I called you, so that you might lift (قالدirmek *qaldirmaq*) this faggot of wood on to my shoulder».

This man is a very good teacher (مدرس *muderris* and he teaches (اوكرتمك *uyretmek*) Turkish accurately (دقیق ايله *diqqat-ila*). I went to the meeting (مجلس *mejlis*) but heard very little of what was said. (سويلمك *suweylemek*) Is the cook (اشجی *ashji*) in the kitchen? No, he has gone to the market (چارشی *charshi*) to buy fish (بالیق *balıq*) and fruit (يېمیش *yemish*). What kind of vegetable (سبزووات *sebze-wat zerzewat*) is in season (وقت *waqit*) now? Where is the best otto of rose (عطر باغی *itr-yaghi*) distilled (تقطیر - ا *tagtir-et*)? It is much finer (خالص *khalis*) than it was early (اركن *erken*) this morning (صبح *sabah*).

A very poor (فقرا *fuqara*) man went to a very rich (زنگین *zenghin*) man and said, (ديمك *demek*) «we two are sons of Adam, therefore we are brothers; you are very rich and I am very poor; give me a brother's share.» The rich man, on hearing (اشتمك *ishitmek*) this, gave the poor man one para (بر پاره *bir para*). The poor man said, «Oh, sir! why do you not bestow upon me a brother's share?» He replied. Be content, my good friend; if I give all my poor brothers one para each, I shall not have any remaining (قالق *qalmaq*). Why do you try to cheat (ايله - ا *hile-et* or اداत्मق *aldatmaq*) me; surely honesty (دوغریلق *doghruluq*) is the best policy (شی در *shey dir*)? Do not interfere (قارشى *qarishmaq*) with me in my business (ایش *ish*) or I shall be very angry. (دارغین *darghin*). The two armies (اردو *ordu*) fought from morning (صبح *sabah*)

sabah) until evening (اخشام *aqsham*) there were 67,000 English (انگلیز *ingiliz*) against 35,000 French (فرانسز *fransiz*). The thief (خرسز *khirsiz*) was discovered by the servants (خدمتکار *khidmetkyar hizmetkyar*) in our neighbour's (قوگشی *qomshy*) garden, and taken before the judge. He was committed (قومق *qomaq*) to prison (حبس *habs*).

Exercise XXVI.

Industry and negligence contrasted. اھمالك مقابلہ سی

پایتختندن (capital) از بر مسافده (distance) واقع بر کپیدہ
 زنکین (rich) بر چفتاجی (farmer) ساکن اولہرق زید و عمرو
 نام ایکے اوغلی (son) اولوب زید عمرودن تام (exactly) بر
 یاش بیوک ایدی. ایکنجی (second) اوغلنک طوغدیغی
 (to be born) کون چفتاجی باغنه (orchard) بر بویدہ (size)
 ایکے دانه الما اغاجی (apple-tree) دکوب ایکیسنی دخی
 مساوات اوزره (equal) تیمار ایتمکله (to cultivate) اول درجده
 بویرینه بکزه بک (to resemble) بیودیلر (to grow) که قنغیسنی
 ترجیع ایتمک (to prefer) کورن کمسنه حیران قالور
 اولدی (to puzzle). اغاجلرک ایکیسنی اول زمان چیچک (blossom)
 طولو بولنمغله چوجقلر زیاده سیله (exceedingly) بکندکده
 (admire) بابالری (father) انلره دیدی که بن بو اغاجلری
 (tree) سزه وبردن باقک (to see) ایکیسنی شمدی کمال قوتده در
 (perfect condition) وسز انلری اقدام اوزره تیمار ویاخذ
 تکاسل (negligence) ایله اھمال ایتدیککه (to neglect) کوره
 بوندن بويله دخی یا کتدکجه (gradually) قوتلنور (to thrive)
 ویاخذ قورور (to dry up) تلف اولور. عمرو بو چوجقلرک
 کچوک (younger) بولندیسهده اغاجنک اصلانحه (improvement)
 صرف کل عمت (care) ایدرک اوزرنده بوجک (insect) بولنجه
 (to find) انلرک دغنه چالشوب (to clear away) اغاجی طوس
 طوغری (quite straight) بیوسون (to grow) دیو کوده سنده
 (stem) دستکلر باغلادی (to fasten). وکونشک سیجاغی (warmth)

ایله یاغموړك رطو بتندۍ (moisture) اغاجی بسلنسوم (to nourish)
دیو كوكنك (root) اطرافنی بللیوب (to dig) طپراغنی اچدی
والحاصل (in short) والدۍك كندی چوجغنه مشفقانه (tenderly)
باقدیغی كبی عمرو دخی كندی اغاجك تیمارینه اقدام اوزره
دقت واهتمام ایلدی. وبالعكس عمروك قزداشی زید بوكا کلیا
مغایر (very reverse) بر مسلكه منسلك (conduct) اولغری
یاكسالت (sloth) وعطالت (idleness) ایله ویاخذ انواع مضرت
(harm) وناسزالف (mischief) ایله وقتنی كچروب باشلوجه
بكلمجه سی دخی كلان كچنه طاش اتمقدن (to throw)
عبارت وملهك سرسری (vagabond) چاپیقین (blackguard)
چوجقارینی ارقه داش ایدینوب بونلر ایله متنادی (continually)
غوغا اولمغله ارتق قزداشمك بكا هیج اولمز ابسه (at least)
المارینك یاریسنی ترك ایتمسى (to give up) لازم كلور. باباسی
جواب ایتدی (to answer) كه وقتنی بوش كچنلری (to pass)
time in idleness بسلك ایچون چالشقان (industry) اولانلرك
امكلرینك (labour) ثمره سندن (fruit) بر حصه (portion) ترك
ایتملری بر وجهله حقانینه موافق دكلدر سنك اغاجك سكا
محصولات (crop) وبرمامش ابسه بو سنك اهمالكه بر مجازات
(punishment) لایقه در كه قزداشنك اقدام وچالشقا نلغی
مكافاتی (reward) اولغری نقدر میویه ظفریاب اولدیغی كوردك
سنك اغاجك انككى كبی چیچك طولو ایدی (to fill)
وايكیسی بر طپراغه دكلمشدر انجق (but) سن اغاجك تیماريله
اصلا اهتمام ایتمیوب قزداشك كندی اغاجی اوزرنده كوزه
كورینور بر بوجك (insect) برقامش (to leave) ایكن سن اول
نوع احتیاطی قطعاً عقله كتومیوب (to think) بوجكلی اهمال
ایتمكله اغاجك طومقرینه (bud) وارنجه یمشدر در ایمدی
(now) بر نباتك بيله اهمال اولغری تلف (destroy) اوله جغنه
بنم رضام (consent) تعلق ایدمیه جكندن شو اغاجی سندن
الوب قزداشكه وبررم كه بلكه (perhaps) انك اقدام واهتمامی
واشته سیله اولكى قوتنی (vigour) یكیدن بولور وبوندن بویه
(henceforward) بو اغاجدن حاصل اوله جق یمش قزداشك
مالی (property) اولوب سنك ارتق اكا بر نوع حقك قالمادیغی

(to remain) جزم وتیقن ایتمهك اقتضا ایدر فقط سكا اذن
 (permission) ویردم وار بنم فدائلمغه (nursery) کیت اورانه
 جانكك استدیكى بشقه بر فدان سچده بقالم انی نه دورلر
 تیمار ایده بله جكسن (to cultivate) اتی دخی اهلل ایتدیكك
 صورتده ینسه سندن الوب اقدام واهتمامات فائقه سنه مكافاتنا
 قرداشكه بخش ایدرم. زید درحال (at once) باباسنك اشبو
 كلامی عدل (justice) ونصفته (equity) مقارن ایدوكنی (near to)
 یقیننا درك (to perceive) وتعلل ایدرك (to understand) اسكات
 (silence) والزام اولنمغله (to convince) بلا تاخر فدائلمغه شتاب
 (hasten) وموجود اولان الما اغاجلر ینك اك قوتلوسنی انتخاب
 (select) ایتدكده قرداشی «عمرو» اول اغاجك نیمارنده اتخاذ
 اولنه جق تدابییری درپیش و اجراسنده «زید» معاونت ایدرك
 (to help) «زید» دخی قرداشنك نصائح وتعلیماتنی قبول
 واصغا برله وقتنی یولنجه قوللا نمغه (to employ) مبادرت
 وسرری چاپقینلرك مصاحبتندن جكلوب ایش ایشلمكه (to work)
 بالمنوبیه تصدی ایتدیكندن سال ديكرك صوك بهارنده (autumn)
 اغاجنی میوه طولو كورنجه بو وجهله مصروف اولان مساعیء
 جمیله سنك مكافاتنه سرور (joy) وابتهاج ایلله نائل اولدی
 «زیدك» ایلوارجه واقع اولان اشبو تحول سعیدك (happy) نمره سی
 اوله رق كندیسی بول بول بر میوه محصولی واسطه سیله كسب
 مال (to earn) فراوان (good deal) نفعندن بشقه بر طاقم اخلاق
 ریدء (bad) مصره (pernicious) استیلا سندن قورتللق فائده سنه
 دخی موفق اولدی پدری دخی اشبو تصاصیح مسلکی بایندء
 بر درجه ده خشنود اولدی (to be pleased) كه سنه آیندء
 صوك بهارنده «زید» ایلله «عمرو» بر كچوك باغك محصولنی
 بخش ایدوب (to give) بونك فروختندن (sale) حاصل اولان
 اقچه بی (money) بینلرندء مساوات اوزة تقسیم ایلدیلمر (to share).

